

From;  
<http://ourworld.compuserve.com/homepages/dp5/inner1.htm>

## Mysteries of the Inner Earth

David Pratt

May 2001

*Part 1 of 4*

---

### Contents

Part 1: [The Solid Earth Hypothesis](#)

1. [The standard earth model](#)
  2. [Deep drilling springs surprises](#)
  3. [Mass, density, and seismic velocity](#) (09/05)
  4. [Deep earthquakes](#)
  5. [Geomagnetism](#)
- [References](#)

Part 2: [The Hollow Earth Hypothesis](#)

1. [Early theories](#)
  2. [Modern theories](#)
  3. [Hollow moons](#)
  4. [Feasibility -- I](#) (06/04)
  5. [Feasibility -- II](#) (08/05)
- [References](#)

Part 3: [Polar Puzzles](#)

1. [The open polar sea](#)
  2. [The north pole controversy](#)
  3. [Polar land coverup?](#)
  4. [Flights of fancy](#)
  5. [Auroras and the poles](#)
- [References](#)

Part 4: [Mythology, Paradise, and the Inner World](#)

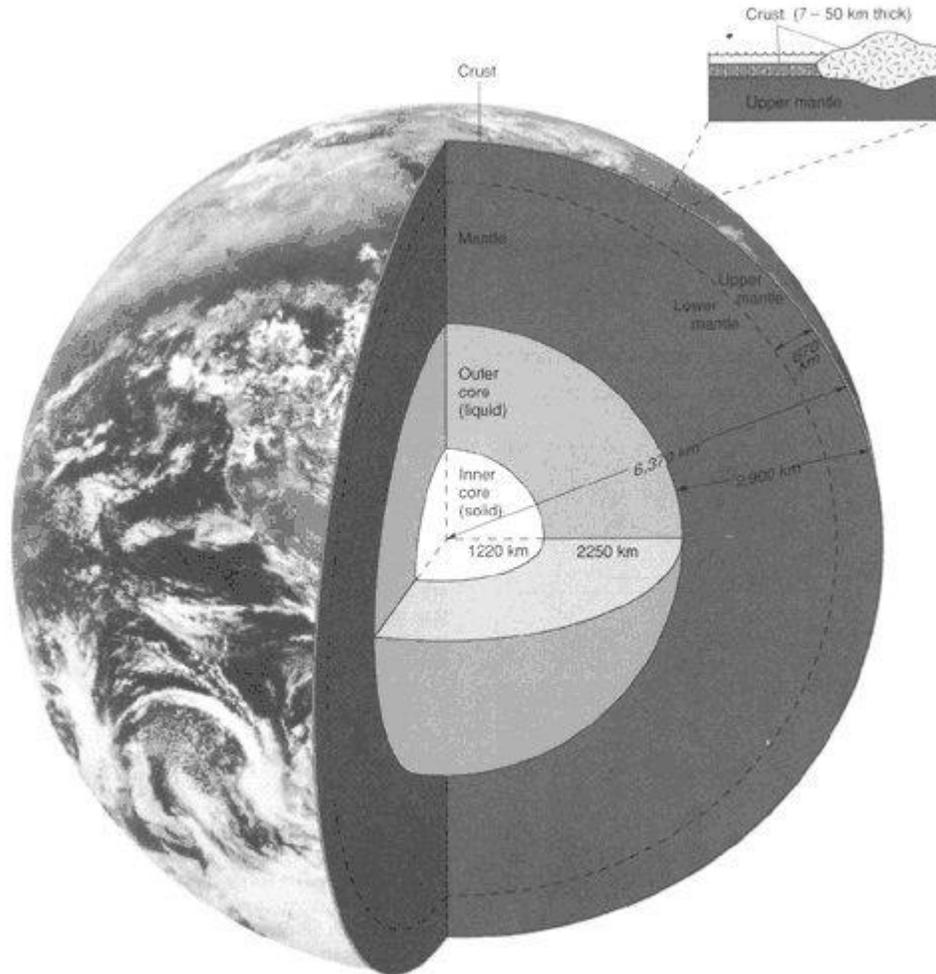
1. [The Imperishable Sacred Land](#)
  2. [Shambhala](#)
  3. [A northern paradise](#)
  4. [Inner kingdoms](#)
- [References](#)
- 

## Part 1: The Solid Earth Hypothesis

### 1. The standard earth model

Our direct knowledge of the earth's interior is minuscule. The earth has a radius of about 6370 km, but the deepest scientific borehole ever drilled is only 12 km. To put this in perspective: if the earth were reduced to a tabletop globe 50 centimetres (20 inches) in diameter, the portion accessible to direct observation through the deepest borehole would be the equivalent of a very thin skin less than 1 millimetre (0.04 inch) thick. In other words, scientists have barely scratched the surface of our globe.

Nevertheless, over the past 100 years or so, geoscientists have put together a detailed picture of the earth's interior based largely on *indirect* evidence -- mainly the behaviour of seismic waves that travel through the earth [1]. The earth's interior is believed to consist of several concentric spheres: an outer solid crust, averaging 7 km thick beneath oceans and 35 km beneath continents; a mainly solid mantle extending to a depth of 2900 km; an outer core of liquid iron extending to a depth of 5150 km; and an inner core of solid iron, with a radius of about 1220 km.



**Figure.** The standard model of the earth's interior [2].

Whenever an earthquake occurs, seismic waves spread out from the focus in all directions. Three types of waves are distinguished: surface waves, body waves, and free oscillations (vibrations of the entire planet). Instead of travelling in straight lines, body waves are reflected and refracted (bent), depending on the density, pressure, and elasticity of the different layers of rock through which they pass. On the basis of the time taken by different types of waves from specific earthquakes to reach different parts of the earth's surface, seismologists try to work out the precise path the waves have taken, the changes in velocity they have undergone at different depths, and the density and composition of the earth at different depths. Nowadays this is done with the help of supercomputers.

Raypaths are immensely complex; waves may undergo multiple reflections and refractions, and their paths are further complicated by the fact that lateral heterogeneity exists at every depth in the earth. This is directly indicated by the scatter in seismic-wave arrival times at all distances from the source. Seismic tomography, which seeks to image the three-dimensional structure of the earth,

provides indirect evidence of lateral variations of up to 10% in seismic velocity through the crust and mantle.

Scientists cannot even begin to interpret the hundreds of thousands of seismic records without making certain basic assumptions about the earth's interior. The main assumptions are that the earth's interior consists entirely of solid or liquid physical matter, and that temperature, pressure, and density increase with depth. These assumptions are generally believed to be self-evident.

At several depths in the earth, there appear to be discontinuities where the velocity of seismic waves changes abruptly. Such discontinuities are often transition zones rather than sharp boundaries, and vary in depth from place to place. The dominant boundary is that between the mantle and the core. Next in order of magnitude are the crust-mantle boundary (Mohorovicic discontinuity or Moho), the inner core-outer core boundary, and the mid-mantle discontinuities at depths of 400 and 670 km. The earth's core was 'discovered' in 1906, and its depth (about 2900 km) was determined by 1914. The Moho was 'discovered' in 1909, the inner core in 1936, and the 400- and 670-km discontinuities in the 1960s.

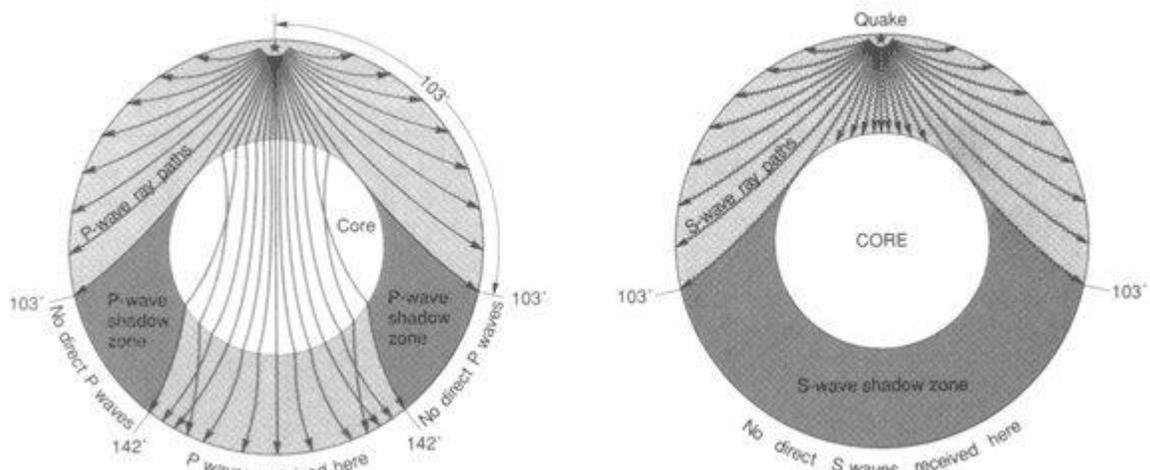
The thickness of the crust varies from 20 to 70 km beneath continents and from 5 to 15 km beneath oceans. As well as differing greatly in thickness, continental and oceanic crusts are said to have very different compositions: continental crust consists chiefly of granitic rock capped by sedimentary rocks, while ocean crust is believed to be composed largely of basalt and gabbro. At the crust-mantle boundary or Moho, seismic-wave velocities change abruptly, but there is no consensus on exactly why. No drillhole has yet penetrated to the Moho anywhere. The Moho varies considerably in depth, sometimes several Mohos are stacked up, and in places there is no Moho at all. Sometimes it is flat, continuous, and oblivious to faults, while in other areas it is strongly influenced by overlying geological structures and jumps from one depth to another [3].

At the two main discontinuities in the mantle, rocks are widely believed to undergo pressure transformations to denser phases. The 670-km discontinuity marks the boundary between the upper and lower mantle; seismic waves increase suddenly in speed at this depth, and earthquakes essentially cease. The mantle is thought to be composed of the dense, ultrabasic (ultramafic) rock peridotite. This is because lava sometimes contains fragments of peridotite and mountain-building processes sometimes bring up wedges of peridotite, and in both cases this rock is assumed to come from the mantle. V. Sánchez Cela disagrees and argues that many geological and geophysical phenomena can be better explained if the upper mantle is far more sialic (granitic) than currently believed [4].

The outer core is said to consist mainly of liquid iron, and the inner core of solid iron. The reasoning behind this is as follows. There are two main types of seismic body waves: P waves (compressional or longitudinal waves) and S waves (transverse or shear waves). P waves can travel through solids, liquids,

and gases, while S waves can only travel through solids. Seismic waves do not reach certain areas on the opposite side of the earth from a large earthquake. P waves spread out until, at  $103^\circ$  of arc (11,500 km) from the epicentre, they almost entirely disappear from seismograms. At more than  $142^\circ$  (15,500 km) from the epicentre, they reappear. The region in between is called the P-wave shadow zone. P waves are said to be missing in the shadow zone because they are refracted by the core.

The S-wave shadow zone is larger than the P-wave shadow zones; direct S waves are not recorded in the entire region more than  $103^\circ$  away from the epicentre. It therefore seems that S waves do not travel through the core at all, and this is interpreted to mean that it is liquid, or at least acts like a liquid. The way P waves are refracted in the core is believed to indicate that there is a solid inner core. Although most of the earth's iron is supposed to be concentrated in the core, it is interesting to note that in the outer zones of the earth, iron levels *decrease with depth*.



**Figure.** P-wave and S-wave shadow zones [5].

Seismologists sometimes draw contradictory conclusions from the same seismic data. For instance, two groups of geophysicists produced completely different pictures of the core-mantle boundary, where there are believed to be 'mountains' and 'valleys' as high or deep as 10 km. The two groups used virtually the same data but used different equations to process them [6]. Seismologists also disagree on the rate of rotation of the inner core: some say it is rotating faster than the rest of the planet, others that it is rotating more slowly, and yet others that it rotates at the same speed [7]!

It is becoming increasingly evident that the earth model presented by the reigning theory of plate tectonics is seriously flawed [8]. The rigid lithosphere, comprising the crust and uppermost mantle, is said to be fractured into several 'plates' of varying sizes, which move over a relatively plastic layer of partly

molten rock known as the asthenosphere (or low-velocity zone). The lithosphere is said to average about 70 km thick beneath oceans and to be 100 to 250 km thick beneath continents. A powerful challenge to this model is posed by seismic tomography, which shows that the oldest parts of the continents have deep roots extending to depths of 400 to 600 km, and that the asthenosphere is essentially absent beneath them. Seismic research shows that even under the oceans there is no continuous asthenosphere, only disconnected asthenospheric lenses.

The more we learn about the crust and uppermost mantle, the more the models presented in geological textbooks are exposed as simplistic and unrealistic. The outermost layers of the earth have a highly complex, irregular, inhomogeneous structure; they are divided by faults into a mosaic of separate, jostling blocks of different shapes and sizes, generally a few hundred kilometres across, and of varying internal structure and strength. This fact, in conjunction with the existence of deep continental roots and the absence of a global asthenosphere, means that the notion of huge rigid plates moving thousands of kilometres across the earth is simply untenable. Continents are about as mobile as a brick in a wall!

The plate-tectonic hypothesis that the present oceans have formed by seafloor spreading since the early Mesozoic (within the last 200 million years) is also becoming increasingly implausible. Numerous far older continental rocks have been discovered in the oceans, along with 'anomalous' crustal types intermediate between standard 'continental' and 'oceanic' crust (e.g. plateaus, ridges, and rises), and the evidence for large (now submerged) continental landmasses in the present oceans continues to mount.

## **2. Deep drilling springs surprises**

How much faith can be put in the theories concerning the composition and density of rocks at different depths? The only place where the accuracy of scientific models can be tested directly is in the uppermost few kilometres of the crust. Although oil companies have drilled as deep as 8 km on land, they drill in sedimentary basins. The igneous and metamorphic basement, which averages 40 km thick and makes up most of the continental crust, has rarely been sampled deeper than 2 or 3 km.

The deepest borehole drilled for scientific purposes is located on the Kola Peninsula near Murmansk, Russia, in the northwestern part of the Baltic Shield. The drilling of the main borehole began in 1970, and a final depth of 12,262 metres was reached in 1994. The drilling of this and other deep and superdeep wells has produced one surprise after another, and the findings have been extremely embarrassing for earth scientists [1]. One scientist commented: 'Every time we drill a hole we find the unexpected. That's exciting, but disturbing.' And a science reporter remarked: 'Kola revealed how far from truth scientific theory can roam.'

At the Kola hole, scientists expected to find 4.7 km of metamorphosed sedimentary and volcanic rock, then a granitic layer to a depth of 7 km (the 'Conrad discontinuity'), with a basaltic layer below it. The granite, however, appeared at 6.8 km and extends to more than 12 km; no basaltic layer was ever found! Seismic-reflection surveys, in which sound waves sent into the crust bounce back off contrasting rock types, have detected the Conrad discontinuity beneath all the continents, but the standard interpretation that it represents a change from granitic to basaltic rocks is clearly wrong. Metamorphic changes brought about by heat and pressure are now thought to be the most likely explanation.



**Figure.** The 64-metre drill-rig enclosure over the 12-km-deep Kola borehole [2].

The superdeep borehole at Oberpfälz, Germany, was expected to pass through a 3-to-5-km-thick nappe\* complex into a suture zone formed by a supposed continental collision. The borehole reached a final depth of 9101 m in 1994, but no evidence supporting the nappe concept was found. What the scientists did find was a series of nearly vertical folds that had failed to show up on seismic-reflection profiles.

\*A nappe is a large sheet or mass of rock that has been thrust from its original position by earth movements.

Rock density is generally expected to increase with depth, as pressures rise. Results from the Kola hole indicated that densities did increase with depth initially, but at 4.5 km the drill encountered a sudden decrease in density, presumably due to increased porosity. The results also showed that increases in seismic velocity do not have to be caused by an increase in rock basicity. The Soviet Minister of Geology reported that 'with increasing depth in the Kola hole, the expected increase in rock densities was therefore not recorded. Neither was any increase in the speed of seismic waves nor any other changes in the physical properties of the rocks detected. Thus the traditional idea that geological data obtained from the surface can be directly correlated with geological materials in the deep crust must be reexamined.'

The results of superdeep drilling show that seismic surveys of continental crust are being *systematically misinterpreted*. Much of the modelling of the earth's interior depends on the interpretation of seismic records. If these interpretations are wrong at depths of only a few kilometres, how much reliance can be placed on interpretations of the earth's structure at depths of hundreds or thousands of kilometres beneath the surface?!

Contrary to expectations, signs of rock alteration and mineralization were found as deep as 7 km in the Kola well. The hole intercepted a copper-nickel ore body almost 2 km below the level at which ore bodies were thought to disappear. In addition, hydrogen, helium, methane, and other gases, together with strongly mineralized waters were found circulating throughout the Kola hole. The presence of fractures open to fluid circulation at pressures of more than 3000 bars was entirely unexpected. The drillers at Oberpfälz discovered hot fluids in open fractures at 3.4 km. The brine was rich in potassium and twice as salty as ocean water, and its origin is a mystery.

Another surprise at the Kola hole was that lifeforms and fossils were discovered several kilometres down. Microscopic fossils were found at depths of 6.7 km. 24 species were identified among these microfossils, representing the envelopes or coverings of single-cell marine plants known as plankton. Unlike conventional shells of limestone or silica, these coverings were found to consist of carbon and nitrogen and had remained remarkably unaltered despite the high pressures and temperatures to which they had been subjected.

It is generally assumed that temperature increases with depth, reaching 1000°C at a depth of about 80 km, 4800°C at the core-mantle boundary, and 6900°C at the earth's centre. It is certainly true that mine shafts and oil drilling operations have indicated significant increases of temperature with depth. Indeed, superdeep drilling has shown that temperature increases with depth far more rapidly than predicted. In the Kola borehole, the temperature at 10-km depth was 180°C rather than the expected 100°C. Measurements revealed significant vertical variations in temperature gradient and heat-flux density along the borehole. Overall, the rate of temperature increase rose from 11° to 24°/km down to a depth of nearly 7 km, and then started to decline. Geologists recognize that the rate of temperature increase must drop off sharply at a certain depth as otherwise the mantle would be molten below about 100 km (even at the enormous pressures assumed to exist there), whereas seismic evidence indicates that it is solid.

The oceanic crust is commonly divided into three main layers: layer 1 consists of ocean-floor sediments and averages 0.5 km in thickness; layer 2 consists largely of basalt and is 1.0 to 2.5 km thick; and layer 3 is assumed to consist of gabbro and is about 5 km thick. A drillhole in the eastern Pacific Ocean has been reoccupied four times in a 12-year span, and has now reached a total depth of 2000 m below the seafloor. Seismic evidence suggested that the boundary between layers 2 and 3 would be found at a depth of about 1700 m, but the drill went well past that depth without finding the contact between the dikes of layer 2

and the expected gabbro of layer 3. Either the seismic interpretation or the model of layer 3's composition must be wrong [3].

As already mentioned, plate tectonics requires the crust beneath the oceans to be relatively young (no older than early Mesozoic), yet thousands of older rocks have been found in the world's oceans, and the geological and geophysical evidence already available strongly suggests that deeper ocean drilling will uncover more ancient sediments (including further remnants of continental landmasses) beneath the basaltic layer 2 that is currently -- and conveniently -- labelled 'basement' [4]. This layer suggests that magma flooding was once ocean-wide, and studies of ocean sediments show that this activity was accompanied by progressive crustal subsidence in large sectors of the present oceans, beginning in the Jurassic.

### 3. Mass, density, and seismic velocity

If the earth's interior were homogeneous, consisting of materials with the same properties throughout, seismic waves would travel in a straight line at a constant velocity. In reality, waves reach distant seismometers sooner than they would if the earth were homogeneous, and the greater the distance, the greater the acceleration. This implies that the waves arriving at the more distant stations have been travelling faster. Since seismic waves travel not only along the surface but also through the body of the earth, the earth's curvature will clearly result in stations more distant from an earthquake focus receiving waves that have passed through greater depths in the earth. From this it is inferred that the velocity of seismic waves increases with depth, due to changes in the properties of the earth's matter.

Seismic velocity in different media depends not just on the substance's density but also on its elastic properties (i.e. rigidity and incompressibility). In the case of solids and liquids, for instance, there is no correlation between sound-wave velocity and density [1]. Here are some examples involving metals:

Substance	Density (g/cm <sup>3</sup> )	Velocity of longitudinal waves (km/s)
aluminium	2.7	6.42
zinc	7.1	4.21
iron	7.9	5.95
copper	8.9	4.76
nickel	8.9	6.04
gold	19.7	3.24

There *is* a correlation between density and seismic velocity in the case of gases: velocity *decreases* with increasing density due to the increased number of collisions.

According to the relevant equations,\* the velocity of seismic waves will become *slower*, the *denser* the rocks through which they pass, if the rocks' elastic properties change in the same proportion as density. Since seismic waves accelerate with depth, this would imply that density *decreases*. However, scientists are convinced that the density of the rocks composing the earth's interior *increases* with depth. To get round this problem, they simply assume that the elastic properties change at a rate that more than compensates for the increase in density. As one textbook puts it:

Since the density of the Earth increases with depth you would expect the waves to slow down with increasing depth. Why, then, do both P- and S-waves speed up as they go deeper? This can only happen because the incompressibility and rigidity of the Earth increase faster with depth than density increases. [2]

Thus geophysicists simply adjust the values for rigidity and incompressibility to fit in with their preconceptions regarding density and velocity distribution within the earth! In other words, their arguments are circular.

\*P-wave velocity = square root of [(incompressibility + 4/3rigidity) divided by density]. S-wave velocity = square root of [rigidity divided by density]. In a fluid, rigidity vanishes and S waves cannot propagate at all.

Drilling results at the Kola borehole revealed significant heterogeneity in rock composition and density, seismic velocities, and other properties. Overall, rock porosity and pressure increased with depth, while density *decreased*, and seismic velocities showed no distinct trend [3]. In the Oberpfälz pilot hole, too, density and seismic velocity showed no distinct trend with increasing depth [4]. Many scientists believe that at greater depths, the presumed increase in pressures and temperatures will lead to greater homogeneity and that reality will approximate more closely to current models. But this is no more than a declaration of faith.

Scientists' conviction that density increases with depth is based on their belief that, due to the accumulating weight of the overlying rock, pressure must increase all the way to the earth's centre where it is believed to reach 3.5 million atmospheres (on the earth's surface the pressure is *one* atmosphere). They also believe that they know by how much rock density increases towards the earth's centre. This is because they think they have accurately determined the earth's mass ( $5.98 \times 10^{24}$  kg) and therefore its *average* density ( $5.52 \text{ g/cm}^3$ ). Since the outermost crustal rocks -- the only ones that can be sampled directly -- have a density of only  $2.75 \text{ g/cm}^3$ , it follows that deeper layers of rock must be much denser. At the centre of the earth, density allegedly reaches  $13.5 \text{ g/cm}^3$ .

Pari Spolter casts doubt on this model:

About 71% of the earth's surface is covered by oceans at an average depth of 3795 m and mean density of  $1.02 \text{ g cm}^{-3}$ . The average thickness of the crust is 19 km and the mean crustal density is  $2.75 \text{ g cm}^{-3}$ . From studies of seismic wave travel time, geophysicists have outlined a layered structure in the interior of the earth. There is no accurate way currently known of estimating the density distribution from seismic data alone. To come up with a mean density of 5.5,

earth models assuming progressively higher density values for the inner zones of the earth have been devised. . . .

Except for the ocean and the crust, direct measurements of the density of the inner layers of the earth are not available. This currently accepted Earth Model is inconsistent with the law of sedimentation in a centrifuge. The earth has been rotating for some 4.5 billion years. When it was first formed, the earth was in a molten state and was rotating faster than today. The highest density of matter should have migrated to the outer layers. Except for the inner core, . . . the density of the other layers of the earth should be less than  $3 \text{ g cm}^{-3}$ .

Also, heavy elements are rare in the universe. How could so much of materials with such low stellar abundances have concentrated in the earth's interior? [5]

The figures given for the masses and densities of all planets, stars, etc. are *purely theoretical*; nobody has ever placed one on a balance and weighed it! The masses of celestial bodies can be calculated from what is known as Newton's form of Kepler's third law. Kepler's law states that the ratio of the cube of the mean distance ( $r$ ) of each planet from the sun to the square of its period of revolution ( $T$ ) is always the same number ( $r^3/T^2 = \text{constant}$ ). Newton's version of this law assumes that  $r^3/T^2$  is equal to the inert mass of the body multiplied by the gravitational constant divided by  $4\pi^2$  ( $GM = 4\pi^2 r^3/T^2$ ). Even if the conventional figures for the total mass and average density of the earth are correct, the prevailing earth model may still be very wrong since no one knows for certain what type of matter exists at the very centre of the earth.

*The Devil's Dictionary* defines gravitation as: 'The tendency of all bodies to approach one another with a strength proportioned to the quantity of matter they contain – the quantity of matter they contain being ascertained by the strength of their tendency to approach one another!' Such is the circular logic on which standard gravity theory is based. It should be borne in mind, however, that weight is always a relative measure, since one mass can only be weighed in relation to some other mass. The fact that observed artificial satellite speeds match predictions can be seen as evidence that the fundamentals of newtonian theory must be correct. On the other hand, the net gravitational force need not be directly proportional to inert mass, for there is plenty of evidence that characteristics such as spin and charge can modify a body's gravitational properties [6].

#### **4. Deep earthquakes**

Most earthquakes are shallow, no deeper than 20-25 km, and occur when rocks snap and fracture under increasing stress. Earthquakes at much greater depths pose a major challenge to the standard earth model because below about 60 km, the rocks should be so hot and tightly compacted that they become ductile; instead of breaking catastrophically under stress, they should deform or flow plastically. Yet 30% of earthquakes occur at depths exceeding 70 km, and some have been recorded as far down as 700 km. Most deep-focus earthquakes occur

in Benioff zones; in plate-tectonic theory these deep-rooted fault zones are labelled 'subduction zones', where slabs of ocean lithosphere supposedly plunge into the earth's mantle (though there is abundant evidence contradicting this hypothesis [1]). However, some deep earthquakes have shaken Romania and the Hindu Kush where there are no 'subduction zones'. A variety of mechanisms for deep earthquakes have been proposed, but they are all controversial [2].

The seismic radiation of deep earthquakes is similar to that of shallow earthquakes. It used to be said that deep-focus earthquakes were followed by fewer aftershocks than shallow ones, but there are indications that many of the aftershocks are simply difficult to detect, and that there is much more activity at such depths than is currently believed. The fact that deep earthquakes share many characteristics with shallow earthquakes suggests that they may be caused by similar mechanisms. However, most earth scientists are incapable of entertaining the notion that the earth could be rigid at such depths. One exception is E.A. Skobelin, who draws the logical conclusion that since deep-focus earthquakes cannot originate in plastic material but must be linked to some kind of stress in solid rock, the solid, rigid lithosphere must extend to depths of up to 700 km [3].

On 8 June 1994, one of the largest deep earthquakes of the 20th century, with a magnitude of 8.3 on the Richter scale, exploded 640 km beneath Bolivia. It caused the whole earth to ring like a bell for months on end; every 20 minutes or so, the entire planet expanded and contracted by a minute amount. A significant feature of the Bolivian earthquake was that it extended horizontally across a 30-by-50-km plane within the 'subducting slab'. This undermines the hypothesis that such quakes are caused by olivine within the 'cold' centre of a slab suddenly being transformed into spinel in a runaway reaction when the temperature rises above 600°C. It also undermines the theory that gravity increases with depth; if this were true, the motion of earthquakes at such depths should be nearly vertical [4]. There appears to be something very wrong with scientific theories about what exists and what is happening deep within the earth.

The acceleration due to gravity is  $9.8 \text{ m/s}^2$  at the earth's surface and the prevailing view is that it rises to a maximum of  $10.4 \text{ m/s}^2$  at the core-mantle boundary (2900 km), before falling to zero at the earth's centre. But not all earth scientists agree. Skobelin argues that the normal, downwardly-directed gravitational force may be replaced by a reversed, upwardly-directed force at depths of 2700 to 4980 km, and that the widely-accepted figure of 3500 kilobars for the pressure at the earth's centre, may be an order of magnitude too high [5].

Earthquakes and volcanoes tend to concentrate along certain major fault lines in the earth's crust. The fact that heightened geological activity occurs along these 'plate boundaries' is sometimes hailed as one of the great successes of plate tectonics. However, it is precisely the high incidence of earthquake and volcanic activity that led geologists to label these belts as 'plate boundaries' in the first place! Plate tectonics sheds no light on earthquakes that happen within plates. Officer and Page state: 'We know very little about the mechanisms

involved in such intraplate earthquakes, but [they sometimes] illustrate effects that one might expect from a gigantic internal explosion, odd as such a concept may appear' [6].

Thomas Gold has argued that, during its formation, the earth retained large quantities of hydrocarbons in its interior. He holds that various gases are sometimes released from depths of about 150 km, and when they invade the outer brittle layers of rock they weaken them by creating new fractures or reducing friction in existing faults, thereby causing or facilitating earthquakes [7]. The emission of gases (e.g. methane) from the ground is already known to cause mud volcanoes on land, circular pockmarks on the ocean floor, and 'ice volcanoes' or pingos on ice fields. Hydrocarbons and hydrogen are also major components of the gases emitted during major volcanic eruptions.

Eyewitness accounts provide strong evidence that gas emissions also help to cause earthquakes in general, but nowadays scientists tend to ignore these 'subjective' accounts in favour of 'hard' seismic data. Eruptions, flames, roaring and hissing noises, sulphurous odours, hazes and fogs, asphyxiation, fountains of water and mud, vigorous bubbling in bodies of water -- all these are observed today in conjunction with earthquakes, just as they were in past. On the basis of such evidence, the ancients held that the movement and eruption of subterranean 'air' (i.e. gases) caused volcanoes if they found an outlet, and otherwise generated earthquakes. Gold argues that this mechanism could explain deep earthquakes, since he believes that the mechanism of sudden rock shear cannot operate deep in the earth's interior. But as already noted, this belief may be wrong, and both mechanisms may apply at all depths.

## **5. Geomagnetism**

Most earth scientists believe that, as well as having a high density, the earth's core, unlike the mantle, must be metallic in order to generate the geomagnetic field. According to the dynamo theory, fluid motion in the earth's outer core moves conducting material (liquid iron) across an already existing, weak magnetic field and generates an electric current. The electric current, in turn, produces a magnetic field that also interacts with the fluid motion to create a secondary magnetic field. Together, the two fields are stronger than the original and lie essentially along the earth's rotation axis.

The main characteristics of the geomagnetic field include short-term and long-term fluctuations in intensity, reversals of polarity at irregular intervals (ranging from tens of thousands to tens of millions of years), the  $11^\circ$  offset between the geomagnetic axis and spin axis, and the drift of the magnetic poles around the geographic poles in an estimated period of several thousand years. Scientists assume that the dynamo theory can explain these features, though a detailed understanding is lacking. There are competing dynamo models, and a great deal

of fudging is required to get the numerical models to reproduce some of the features of the actual magnetic field [1].

To explain the offset between the earth's geomagnetic axis and the spin axis, some scientists maintain that the earth's overall field may be a combination of a central, dynamo-created dipole field, aligned with the rotation axis, and several variable dipole fields located in the outermost portions of the core. But other scientists argue that there is no physical mechanism to generate dipoles near the core's surface [2]. Some planets have even greater and more puzzling tilts between their magnetic and rotation axes:  $46.8^\circ$  in the case of Neptune, and  $58.6^\circ$  in the case of Uranus.

Even assuming that an outer core of liquid iron exists, there are major problems with the dynamo theory. Joseph Cater writes:

Scientists are somewhat vague as to how a magnetic field could extend 2,000 miles beyond an electric current. It requires a very powerful current to produce even relatively weak magnetic effects a very short distance above the flow. The electrical resistance of iron, at the alleged temperatures of the core, would be staggering. A steady flow of electricity requires constant potential differences. How are such potential differences produced and maintained in this hypothetical core?

The magnitude, width, and depth of such currents would have to be unbelievable to extend the magnetic field even a small fraction of the distance required, and the EMF [electromotive force] required to produce it would be even more incredible. Where could such an EMF come from? So far, scientists seem reluctant to explain this, especially since these currents are confined to a ball and would therefore follow closed paths. [3]

V.N. Larin questions whether a mechanism exists to maintain strong electric currents in the earth's interior during its entire evolution, and argues that the very existence of active convection in the core is dubious. If convection is of thermal origin, then the source of heat in the iron core is incomprehensible. Another possibility is radioactivity, but no mechanism is known which might have segregated radioactive elements together with iron and nickel. Some scientists think that the heat source of convection may be the ongoing growth of the core. In this case, the heat would come from the potential energy of heavy particles settling in the gravity field, but this is unlikely to have lasted several billion years [4].

An alternative theory has been proposed by J.M. Herndon, who suggests that the earth's magnetic field is largely produced by electric currents generated by a self-sustaining nuclear fission reaction in a uranium (and thorium) subcore at the centre of the earth, having a density as high as  $26 \text{ g/cm}^3$  [5]. However, the existence of such a subcore is entirely hypothetical.

Given their belief in the generation of magnetic fields by convection currents of electrically conducting liquid iron in a planet's core, scientists were puzzled by the discovery that the Moon and Mercury had significant magnetic fields, since the

Moon's core is believed to be entirely solid and Mercury's core nearly so. Venus is believed to have an entirely liquid core and was expected to possess a strong magnetic field, but no significant self-generated field has been detected. The magnetic fields of Jupiter and Saturn are believed to be generated by electric currents within a layer of liquid metallic hydrogen inside them, while the fields of Neptune and Uranus are thought to be produced in their superheated liquid mantles -- but all this is little better than guesswork [6]. Clearly the present dynamo theory cannot explain the magnetic fields detected around some asteroids.

Alternative theories of the geomagnetic field are considered in part 2, section 4.

## References

### 1. The standard earth model

- [1] T. Lay and T.C. Wallace, *Modern global seismology*, San Diego, CA: Academic Press, 1995.
- [2] D. McGary and C.C. Plummer, *Physical geology: Earth revealed*, 3rd ed., Boston, MA: WCB, McGraw-Hill, 1998, p. 28.
- [3] P. Barton, 'Deep reflections on the Moho', *Nature*, vol. 323, pp. 392-3, 1986; S. Weisburg, 'The moho is immutable no more', *Science News*, vol. 130, pp. 326-7, 1986.
- [4] V. Sánchez Cela, *Formation of mafic-ultramafic rocks in the crust: Need for a new upper mantle*, Zaragoza: University of Zaragoza, 1999; V. Sánchez Cela, *Densilite: A new upper mantle*, Zaragoza: University of Zaragoza, 2000.
- [5] *Physical geology*, p. 32.
- [6] William R. Corliss (comp.), *Inner earth: A search for anomalies*, Glen Arm, MD: Sourcebook Project, 1991, pp. 41-3.
- [7] Sue Bowler, 'Journey to the centre of the earth', *Inside Science* no. 134, *New Scientist*, 14 October 2000.
- [8] See [Sunken continents versus continental drift](#), and [Plate tectonics: a paradigm under threat](#), *Journal of Scientific Exploration*, vol. 14, no. 3, pp. 307-52, 2000 (davidpratt.info).

### 2. Deep drilling springs surprises

- [1] Richard A. Kerr, 'Continental drilling heading deeper', *Science*, vol. 224, pp. 1418-20, 1984; Richard A. Kerr, 'Deep holes yielding geoscience surprises', *Science*, vol. 245, pp. 468-70, 1989; Richard Monastersky, 'Inner space', *Science*

*News*, vol. 136, pp. 266-8, 1989; Taryn Toro, 'German geology hits new depths', *New Scientist*, 29 September 1990, pp. 24-5; William R. Corliss (comp.), *Inner earth: A search for anomalies*, Glen Arm, MD: Sourcebook Project, 1991, pp. 11-14; N.I. Pavlenkova, 'The Kola superdeep drillhole and the nature of seismic boundaries', *Terra Nova*, vol. 4, pp. 117-23, 1993; R. Emmermann and J. Lauterjung, 'The German Continental Deep Drilling Program KTB: overview and major results', *Journal of Geophysical Research*, vol. 102, pp. 18179-18201, 1997; Y.A. Popov, S.L. Pevzner, V.P. Pimenov, and R.A. Romushkevich, 'New geothermal data from the Kola superdeep well SG-3', *Tectonophysics*, vol. 306, pp. 345-66, 1999; International Continental Drilling Program (ICDP), <http://icdp.gfz-potsdam.de>.

[2] Kola superdeep borehole, <http://icdp.gfz-potsdam.de/html/kola/wellsite.html>.

[3] D. McGeary and C.C. Plummer, *Physical geology: Earth revealed*, 3rd ed., Boston, MA: WCB, McGraw-Hill, 1998, p. 63.

[4] J.M. Dickins, D.R. Choi, and A.N. Yeates, 'Past distribution of oceans and continents', in: S. Chatterjee and N. Hotton, III (eds.), *New concepts in global tectonics* (pp. 193-9), Lubbock, TX: Texas Tech University Press, 1992.

### **3. Mass, density, and seismic velocity**

[1] David R. Lide (ed.), *CRC handbook of chemistry and physics*, Boca Raton, FL: CRC Press, 1996, pp. 14-34.

[2] A. McLeish, *Geological science*, Walton-on-Thames, Surrey: Thomas Nelson and Sons, 1992, p. 122.

[3] N.I. Pavlenkova, 'The Kola superdeep drillhole and the nature of seismic boundaries', *Terra Nova*, vol. 4, pp. 117-23, 1993.

[4] E. Huenges, J. Lauterjung, C. Bücke, E. Lippmann, and H. Kern, 'Seismic velocity, density, thermal conductivity and heat production of cores from the KTB pilot hole', *Geophysical Research Letters*, vol. 24, pp. 345-8, 1997.

[5] Pari Spolter, *Gravitational force of the sun*, Granada Hills, CA: Orb Publishing, 1993, pp. 117-9.

[6] See [Gravity and antigravity](http://davidpratt.info), davidpratt.info.

### **4. Deep earthquakes**

[1] [Plate tectonics: a paradigm under threat](http://davidpratt.info), *Journal of Scientific Exploration*, vol. 14, no. 3, pp. 307-52, 2000 (davidpratt.info).

[2] T. Lay and T.C. Wallace, *Modern global seismology*, San Diego, CA: Academic Press, 1995, pp. 17-23; H. Houston, 'Deep quakes shake up debate', *Nature*, vol. 372, pp. 724-5, 1994; R.A. Kerr, 'Bolivian quake deepens a mystery', *Science*, vol. 264, p. 1659, 1994; R.A. Kerr, 'Biggest deep quakes may need

help', *Science*, vol. 267, pp. 329-30, 1995; R. Monastersky, 'Great quake in Bolivia rings earth's bell', *Science News*, vol. 145, p. 391, 1994; C. Frohlich, 'Deep earthquakes', *Scientific American*, vol. 260, pp. 32-9, 1989.

[3] E.A. Skobelin, in: C.W. Hunt (ed.), *Expanding geospheres*, Calgary, Alberta: Polar Publishing, 1992, pp. 41-2.

[4] M.I. Bhat, email, 2000.

[5] *Expanding geospheres*, pp. 35-6.

[6] Charles Officer and Jake Page, *Tales of the earth: Paroxysms and perturbations of the blue planet*, New York: Oxford University Press, 1993, p. 52.

[7] Thomas Gold, *The deep hot biosphere*, New York: Copernicus, 1999, pp. 141-63; Thomas Gold and Steven Soter, 'The deep-earth-gas hypothesis', *Scientific American*, vol. 242, pp. 130-7, 1980.

## 5. Geomagnetism

[1] E. Dormy, J.-P. Valet, and V. Courtillot, 'Numerical models of the geodynamo and observational constraints', *Geochemistry, Geophysics, Geosystems*, vol. 1, paper number 2000GC000062, 2000 (<http://146.201.254.53/publicationsfinal/articles/2000GC000062/a2000GC000062.html>).

[2] S. Bowler, 'A simple model for planets' magnetic fields?', *New Scientist*, 16 June 1990, p. 32.

[3] Joseph H. Cater, *The ultimate reality*, Pomeroy, WA: Health Research, 1998, p. 163.

[4] Vladimir N. Larin, *Hydridic earth*, Calgary, Alberta: Polar Publishing, 1993, pp. 199-200.

[5] J.M. Herndon, 'Substructure of the inner core of the earth', *Proc. Natl. Acad. Sci. USA*, vol. 93, pp. 646-8, January 1996.

[6] Andrew Dominic Fortes, 'Magnetic fields of the planets', 1997, <http://www.ucl.ac.uk/geolsci/edu/students/planet/student/work/magrev/magtoc.htm>; W.R. Corliss (comp.), *The moon and the planets*, Glen Arm, MD: Sourcebook Project, 1985, pp. 185-8.

# Mysteries of the Inner Earth

David Pratt

May 2001

*Part 2 of 4*

---

## Part 2: The Hollow Earth Hypothesis

1. [Early theories](#)
  2. [Modern theories](#)
  3. [Hollow moons](#)
  4. [Feasibility -- I](#) (06/04)
  5. [Feasibility -- II](#) (08/05)
- [References](#)

---

### 1. Early theories

Since the scientific revolution, a small number of notable scientists have proposed the possibility of a hollow earth. One of the first was the famous English astronomer and mathematician, Sir Edmond Halley (1656-1742) [1]. He held that the earth had an outer crust, 500 miles thick, and a hollow interior containing three smaller spheres, one within the other, approximately the size of Venus, Mars, and Mercury, each sphere being separated from the next by 500 miles of atmosphere. The smallest sphere was thought to form a hot, solid core. Halley speculated that the inner spheres might be inhabited, and that light might be produced in a number of ways: the atmosphere might be luminous, or the inner sides of the spheres might emit light, or there might be small suns within the earth.

Halley's theory of concentric spheres largely stemmed from his efforts to explain why the earth's magnetic poles appeared to be wandering. He believed that each sphere had its own set of magnetic poles, and that the outer sphere moved slightly faster than the rest, causing magnetic variations. Halley presented his theory to the Royal Society in 1692; it attracted a great deal of attention and was reprinted several times, though not many scientists took it seriously.

Leonhard Euler (1707-1783), the noted Swiss mathematician and physicist, also speculated about a hollow earth. In 1767 he proposed that the earth's hollow

interior contained at its centre a small glowing core which served as a miniature sun for the inner world's hypothetical inhabitants [2]. Sir John Leslie (1766-1832), a Scottish physicist and mathematician, proposed that the earth had a hollow interior containing *two* suns, Pluto and Proserpina [3]. Jules Verne's classic tale *Journey to the Centre of the Earth* (1864) was partly inspired by Leslie's ideas.

The idea of a hollow earth has received little interest from scientists since then, but there have been occasional exceptions. In 1892, C. Lapworth wrote:

everywhere we find evidences of symmetrical crushing-in of the earth-crust by tangential stresses. Everywhere we find proofs that different layers of that crust have been affected differentially, and the outer layers have been folded the most. We seem to be dealing, not with a solid globe, but with a globular shell composed of many layers.

Is it not just possible that our earth is such a hollow shell, or series of concentric shells, on the surface of which gravity is at a maximum, and in whose deepest interior it is practically non-existent? May this not be so, also, in the case of the sun, through whose spot-eddies we possibly look into its hollow interior? [4]

A name often mentioned in connection with the hollow-earth theory -- usually in order to ridicule it -- is Captain John Cleves Symmes (1779-1829) [5]. He believed that the earth's interior was hollow, containing another four hollow, concentric spheres, with space between each, and habitable on both their concave and convex surfaces. He held that all celestial bodies had a similar structure. He estimated that the earth's outer shell was 1000 miles thick. Unlike Halley, he believed that there were enormous holes at the poles: 4000 miles across (12°) at the north, and 6000 miles (16°) across at the south, both being slightly askew. He argued -- quite wrongly -- that the refraction of sunlight percolating through the holes would be sufficient to cause the whole inner world to be lit with a perpetual day.

It is difficult to see how a newly forming planet could become a series of concentric spheres. But Symmes managed to interpret the rings of Saturn and the cloud belts of Jupiter as evidence for his theory. His arguments for gigantic polar openings were not very compelling either. He cited the supposedly abnormally warm climate in the polar regions, and believed that there was no ice beyond a certain latitude. He also invoked the alleged northerly migration of polar birds and animals, the erratic behaviour of the compass near the poles, and the aurora borealis, which he believed was caused by the sun's rays reflecting off the internal oceans and emerging through the polar holes. He held that polar explorers had probably sailed some distance over the rim of the openings, but not far enough to realize where they were.

Symmes' notion of polar openings earned him a great deal of ridicule. References to 'Symmes' hole' were common in the 1820s. If someone suddenly disappeared, the reply was often: 'Oh, I expect he's gone down into Symmes' hole.' Symmes announced that he was prepared to lead an expedition to the inner world. He said that his only terms were 'the patronage of this and the new

world', and that he dedicated his quest to his wife and her ten children. On at least nine occasions, petitions signed by hundreds of Symmes' supporters were presented and debated before the US House of Congress with the goal of financing such an expedition, but without success. However, enthusiasm for Symmes' ideas appears to have been largely responsible for the US Exploring Expedition of 1838-1840, which first determined that the Antarctic was of continental dimensions.



**Figure.** Symmes' gaping hole.

1871 saw the publication of *The Hollow Globe* [6], a book written by Wm.F. Lyon, based on information channelled through M.L. Sherman, a clairvoyant. The central idea of the book is that the earth is a hollow sphere, with a shell some 30 to 40 miles thick, and that the interior surface is a beautiful world, in a more highly developed condition than the exterior, and is accessible by a spirally formed aperture located in the 'unexplored open polar sea'. The earth's inner concave surface is said to be habitable. The book presents various arguments against the then widely-held theory that beneath its thin crust the earth was filled with molten lava. It suggests that spiritual powers or 'world-builders' made all planets hollow, because that is the simplest and most economical shape, providing the greatest amount of strength compatible with the smallest amount of material.

The book by Lyon and Sherman was reviewed in the July 1884 issue of *The Theosophist* [7]. The article is unsigned, implying that it was written by the editor, H.P. Blavatsky. She says that the book shows a high grade of intelligence and that the 'spirit' which inspired it was probably an adept, and possibly one of the adepts behind the founding of the Theosophical Society. She concludes that 'like

other works of a similar character this book has appeared, before the world was ripe enough to understand it, and it is therefore known and appreciated by only comparatively few'. She expresses the hope that the author will fulfil his desire to enter the earth's interior, 'if not in his present incarnation, then in the next, as a member of the sixth race, forerunners of which have already made their appearance upon this, the exterior surface of our hollow globe'.\*

\*For an overview of the paradoxical statements on this subject found in modern theosophical literature, see [Theosophy and the hollow earth](http://ourworld.compuserve.com/homepages/dp5/hollow.htm), <http://ourworld.compuserve.com/homepages/dp5/hollow.htm>.

Another notable book is *Etidorhpa or The End of Earth* by John Uri Lloyd, first published in 1895 [8]. Written in the form of a novel -- a story within a story -- it appears to contain a certain amount of scientific and esoteric information.\* The earth is depicted as hollow, with an outer shell 800 miles (1280 km) thick. (This is certainly more plausible than the figure of 30-40 miles (50-65 km) given by Lyon and Sherman; some hollow-earthers suggest a figure of 1000 miles or even 2000 or more miles.) The shell is said to be honeycombed with caverns, containing a wide variety of plant and animal life. At a certain depth below the earth's surface, the earth begins to generate its own luminosity. Gravity is said to increase to a depth of about 10 miles (16 km) below sea level, and then to steadily decrease, reaching zero at the 'sphere of rest', 700 miles (1120 km) below the outer surface, and 100 miles (160 km) from the inner surface. No details are given of the inner world, or inner circle, but the implication is that it is habitable.

\*In his book debunking the hollow-earth theory, Kafton-Minkel describes *Etidorhpa* as a unique work and the most remarkable of the inner-world novels. ('Etidorhpa' is 'Aphrodite' spelt backwards.)

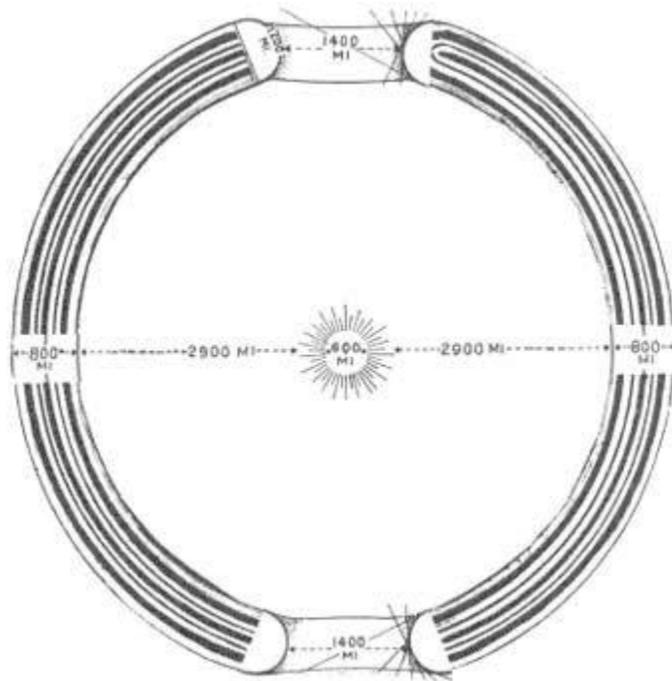
The book was formerly sold by the publishing company of the Point Loma Theosophical Society, and the following notice appeared in the May 1896 issue of its journal, *Theosophy* (p. 62): 'One of the most fascinating books which has appeared for years is *Etidorhpa*. It is fiction of the most scientific kind, full of facts as well as, to the average man, full of theories, and a vein of the most serious occultism runs through its 360 pages. The author, John Neri [Uri] Lloyd, is one of the best-known chemists in America, and his book has aroused wonderful interest among scientific and literary people. It is safe to say that no book on such lines has set so many people hard a-thinking in years. It will possess additional interest to members of the T.S. by reason of the many illustrations by one of our devoted members, J. Augustus Knapp of Cincinnati.'

In *Living Energies* (Bath: Gateway Books, 1996), Callum Coates draws attention to the important information provided in *Etidorhpa* on the functioning of springs and artesian wells (pp. 133-4). He also writes: 'in keeping with all other globular cell-structures, the Earth [may be] hollower than we presently think, which may be why it resonates like a bell when seismic charges are set off. Solid bodies do not resonate so readily' (p. 86).

## 2. Modern theories

*The Phantom of the Poles* by William Reed was published in 1906 [1], and *A Journey to the Earth's Interior* by Marshall B. Gardner was first published in 1913 [2]. These two books have had an enormous influence on virtually all subsequent

writers on the hollow earth. On the basis of the accounts of polar explorers, both authors came to the conclusion, quite independently of each other, that at the north and south poles there were large entrances to the earth's interior. Reed held that the earth's shell was 1000 miles thick, and that the southern polar opening was 1500 miles in diameter and the northern one 1000 miles in diameter. Gardner believed that the earth's shell was 800 miles thick, and both openings 1400 miles across. Reed, like Symmes, seemed to think that sunlight shining into the polar openings would be sufficient to illuminate the interior, while Gardner revived Euler's idea of a central sun, which he thought was 600 miles in diameter. Like Symmes, Gardner was an evangelist, and mailed scores of copies of his book to professors, legislators, presidents, and kings.



**Figure.** The earth according to Gardner.

If a gigantic polar hole *did* exist, and if the earth's convex outer surface curved smoothly inward until it became the inner concave surface, it would in theory be possible to walk or sail from the earth's exterior to the interior and back. The highest point of the rim or verge around the entire hole would be the 'north pole' in the sense that the polestar would be directly above the head of a person standing there. As the rim was approached, a degree of latitude would become ever shorter, giving explorers the impression that they had travelled much further than expected.

Many of the arguments for large polar holes presented by Gardner and Reed are the same as Symmes'. Most are very feeble and some are patently ridiculous. Reed, for example, argued that the flattening of the poles (which he

apparently understood to mean that the poles were literally flat!) proved that there must be a polar opening, as this would detract from the earth's roundness. As an example of how the hollow earth with its central sun may have formed, Gardner cited the Ring Nebula in the constellation Lyra, which looks like shells of gas surrounding a star, and which he believed would eventually contract into a planet with a central sun. Such nebulae were in fact called 'planetary nebulae' in the astronomy texts of that day because they look much like planets in low-powered telescopes. However, the central star of the Ring Nebula is much larger than any known planet, and the shell of gas surrounding it, millions of miles across, is expanding, not contracting, as the Ring Nebula is the remnant of a nova or exploding star. Gardner also believed that the Andromeda Nebula was in the early stages of becoming a planet, whereas it is now known to be a galaxy larger than the Milky Way!

Reed, writing in 1906, argued that the reason the north pole had not been discovered was because it did not exist on the earth's surface but in midair, in the centre of the polar opening. Gardner, on the other hand, published his book several years after the north pole had apparently been reached: Dr Frederick A. Cook claimed to have reached it in April 1908, and Commander Robert E. Peary in April 1909. However, Gardner highlighted the bitter dispute that erupted between these two explorers and their supporters (see part 3). He suggested that both had spent weeks wandering lost on the verge of the northern polar hole, and that Peary in particular may have had a problem telling the truth.

Both Reed and Gardner assumed that the inner world had a warm climate and that warm air escaping through the northern polar hole caused the Arctic to be abnormally warm. However, while carefully selecting examples of polar explorers encountering warm conditions in certain parts of the Arctic, they tend to ignore the bitter cold that is far more prevalent. It is well known that the climate within the arctic circle varies greatly depending on latitude, proximity of the sea, elevation, and topography, and that warm ocean currents around some of the arctic coasts allow an abundance of marine life.

In the northern hemisphere the zone of lowest temperature (the 'cold pole') lies in eastern Siberia, several hundred kilometres *south* of the arctic circle, in a region far removed from the moderating influence of the ocean. Here temperatures as low as  $-71^{\circ}\text{C}$  have been recorded. At Olekminsk, which lies some 1100 km from the nearest ocean, the temperature can be as low as  $-60^{\circ}\text{C}$  in the winter but as high as  $45^{\circ}\text{C}$  in the summer -- the greatest temperature range in the world; its all-year average is about  $0^{\circ}\text{C}$ . The lowest all-year temperatures are found in the Greenland interior, with an all-year average of  $-29^{\circ}\text{C}$ . This is because, in contrast to the thin ice cover in Siberia, the Greenland ice sheet never completely melts in summer [3]. On 5 April 1969 Wally Herbert and his Transarctic Expedition team found the temperature at the north pole to be  $-37.2^{\circ}\text{C}$ . Obviously Reed and Gardner's hot air must have been blowing in the wrong direction at the time!

Reed and Gardner propagated the view that instead of an ice-covered ocean in the far north, there was an open polar sea. This view was held by many 19th-century explorers but was disproven by Fridtjof Nansen's epic voyage in the *Fram* from 1893 to 1896, though Reed and Gardner managed to convince themselves otherwise (see part 3).

Reed argued that polar meteor showers, and the dust and stones found in arctic ice were the debris of volcanic eruptions in the interior world, and that coloured snow was caused by massive amounts of pollen originating from lush plant and flower growth inside the earth. Gardner claimed that the frozen mammoths found in Alaska and Siberia were from the earth's interior; they had allegedly died while searching for food, fallen into the ice and been quick-frozen, and had then been carried over the verge of the opening by ocean currents. The reason they were often well-preserved was because they had died only recently. However, many mammoth carcasses have been found frozen into the tundra hundreds of miles from the ocean and the vast majority are *not* well preserved.

Reed and Gardner drew attention to the fact that birds, polar bears, foxes, and musk oxen in the Arctic had been seen moving north for the winter, and that this had given many polar explorers the impression that a warm continent must exist near the north pole. Reed and Gardner believed the land actually lay inside the earth. Debunkers of the hollow-earth theory dismiss polar explorers' anomalous observations of animal movements as fragmentary and unreliable [4].

Reed and Gardner speculated that the earth's interior was probably inhabited. Gardner believed it was the original home of both the Eskimos and all the East Asian peoples. He even suggested that the 'up and outward position' of Chinese eyes may be 'a modification of the ordinary eye position induced by the fact that in the interior the sun is always in the zenith'! He called on all fellow-patriots to urge the American government to mount an expedition to colonize the inner world, as this 'would add the most glorious page yet written to the annals of the United States'.

Much of what was written on the hollow earth during the 20th century is of little or no value. Many of Reed and Gardner's arguments have been trotted out time and again, while the results of later exploration have been largely ignored. Perhaps the most widely-read book on the subject is *The Hollow Earth* (1963), written by Dr Raymond Bernard [5], which rehashes most of the flimsiest and silliest arguments for a hollow earth with large polar openings. Many explorers have now walked or sledged to the poles, flown over them, satellites have photographed them, and there is a permanently manned base at the south pole. A number of expeditions have crossed directly across the north and south poles, and some have approached each other from different parts of Antarctica and met at the correct spot. But no polar openings have apparently been discovered. At least, none are marked on maps. This is seen by many hollow-earthers as evidence of a vast international conspiracy [6]!

1998 saw the publication of Jan Lamprecht's book *Hollow Planets* [7], which attempts to tackle the issue from a more scientific angle. But he, too, believes that there is a massive coverup taking place to conceal smaller polar holes, measuring perhaps 200 miles across, and offset from the geographic poles (see part 3). Lamprecht at least puts paid to the idea that a large northern polar opening can be seen on certain satellite photos [8] -- which some writers claim were released to the public before the authorities realized what they showed and before the photos could be falsified or suppressed. The 'holes' mostly turn out to be storms and temporary circular air currents. What's more, they are found in all manner of locations: for instance, one satellite photo shows a feature 900 miles in diameter over the Kamchatka Peninsula in Russia (see figure below), while another shows a feature 800 miles across over Greenland. But it seems that for some hollow-earthers even a polar opening that changes size and jumps from place to place is preferable to none at all!



**Figure.** A hole in the pole? [9]

### **3. Hollow moons**

Although mainstream scientific interest in the possibility of a hollow earth is nonexistent, there has been a small amount of speculation about hollow moons. In 1959, Soviet scientist Iosif Shklovsky argued that the acceleration of Phobos (the inner moon of Mars) was so large that it had to be hollow, given the calculated drag force and mass, and might therefore be artificial. However, he later discarded this theory as the acceleration proved to be much smaller and the atmospheric model incorrect [1].

In the mid-1970s, two senior Soviet scientists, Mikhail Vasin and Alexander Shcherbakov, suggested that the earth's moon was partially hollow. Unable to

believe that it could be naturally hollow, they argued that it had been partially hollowed out by an alien civilization, which turned it into a huge spaceship and steered it into orbit around the earth. This theory was then elaborated upon by Don Wilson [2].

One of their arguments was that the chance of the earth capturing the moon by accident is extremely tiny, and the chances of this resulting in a circular orbit such as the moon now has are even tinier. Another argument was that the moon's (theoretical) density is much less than the earth's (3.3 as opposed to 5.5 g/cm<sup>3</sup>). They also pointed out that moon craters, even those 100 miles or more across, are only a mile or two deep whereas the largest ought to be 24-30 miles deep. They argued that the consistently shallow depth of craters (most of which are assumed to be due to impacts) was the result of the moon having a 20-mile layer of metallic armour plating beneath the 2.5-mile-thick outer layer of rock. Another argument was that when lunar modules and spent rocket stages were made to crash into the moon, it rang like a bell (or a huge hollow sphere) for up to four hours; moreover, the shock waves started small, then built up to a peak, before dying away. This was completely unexpected.

Several other scientists have pointed to facts that could indicate that our moon is hollow, though this possibility has never been entertained very seriously. For instance, in 1962, a NASA scientist, Dr G. McDonald, wrote in *Astronautics*: 'If the astronomical data are reduced, it is found that the data require that the interior of the Moon be less dense than the outer parts. Indeed, it would seem that the Moon is more like a hollow than a homogenous sphere' [3]. McDonald did not accept this conclusion and assumed that either the data or the calculations must be wrong. Dr S.C. Solomon of MIT claimed that a study of the gravitational field of the moon indicated that it could be hollow. He concluded his study, published in *The Moon, An International Journal of Lunar Studies*, as follows: 'The Lunar Orbiter experiments vastly improved our knowledge of the Moon's gravitational field . . . indicating the frightening possibility that the Moon might be hollow' [4]. On the basis of seismic data, various models of the moon were produced. In 1974 *Science News* reported that 'Some such models would have made for a rather bizarre Moon, such as a hollow titanium ball' [5]. The moon's seismic behaviour is now considered to be compatible with its solidity.

#### **4. Feasibility -- I**

According to a modern geological textbook: 'Geologists could be wrong about the earth's interior, but the current model of a solid rock mantle and a liquid metallic core with a solid inner core is widely accepted because it is consistent with all available knowledge. A hollow earth is not' [1]. Three objections to a hollow earth are mentioned:

- 1) it would not have seismic-wave shadow zones;
- 2) it would not have an average density of 5.5 g/cm<sup>3</sup>;
- 3) it would not have a magnetic field.

All these objections make the convenient assumption that current theories of seismicity, gravity, and geomagnetism are correct, but as shown in part 1, there is good reason to doubt this. The solid-earth model is based on assumption upon assumption about every parameter.

Regarding the second objection, it has already been shown that the true mass and density of the earth are unknown. The other two objections are considered below.

### ***Seismology***

The dominant boundary in the earth's interior is believed to be that between the mantle and outer core. The vast majority of seismic waves are thought to travel through the mantle and many bounce back and forth between the earth's outer core and the surface. Very few are believed to penetrate the outer core, and even fewer pass through the inner core. The depth of the core-mantle boundary is said to be 2900 km, but this is likely to be wrong if scientists are wrong about the density distribution within the earth. As shown in part 1, seismologists are known to be making systematic errors in their interpretations of seismic data even in the outer few kilometres of the earth's crust.

As mentioned earlier, there are two main types of seismic waves that pass through the body of the earth: P waves and S waves. P waves can travel through solids, liquids, and gases, while S waves can only travel through a solid medium. Because no S waves appear beyond  $103^\circ$  from an earthquake epicentre, scientists have concluded that S waves do not penetrate the core. P waves, on the other hand, are almost entirely absent between approx.  $103^\circ$  and  $142^\circ$  from the epicentre of an earthquake, from which it is concluded that they *do* penetrate the outer core, but are sharply refracted when entering and leaving, thus creating the 'shadow zone'. Scientists infer from this that the outer core is liquid. Theoretically, it could be gaseous, but this is regarded as impossible.

It could be argued that what scientists call the crust and mantle corresponds to the outer solid shell of a hollow earth, while the outer core is the 'hollow' cavity, and the inner core is the central sun. Scientists maintain that P waves, but not S waves, pass through the liquid 'outer core'. But would this be possible if the outer core were really a 'hollow' cavity? Clearly, hollow-earthers would not argue that the earth's interior is an absolute void. The earth's *outer* surface is covered by a gaseous atmosphere, the outer regions of which are an ionized gas (plasma), which thins until it merges into the interplanetary medium (an even more attenuated plasma), which stretches to the sun (believed to be a ball of plasma). The space between the earth's *inner* surface and an *inner* sun may contain similar grades of matter.

But would such a model be able to reproduce the travel times of P waves that in the current model are thought to have travelled through the dense 'outer core'? At the outer core, P-wave velocity is said to fall from about 13.6 to 8.1 km/s. This need not be exactly true, for although the overall travel times of seismic waves

are known with a high degree of precision, the exact path and varying velocities of seismic waves within the earth are impossible to determine. However if, in the hollow-earth model, we place a thin atmosphere above the inner surface, then seismic-wave speeds in it may be only a fraction of the 'scientific' value; in the outer atmosphere the speed of sound is only 331 *metres* per second! So this model will probably only work if we assume that the inner cavity contains an etheric medium through which seismic waves can propagate at much faster speeds. Although the existence of an all-pervading medium of subtler, etheric matter is a logical necessity, whether it would allow the effects described here is unknown.\*

\*Substituting 'empty space' and field equations for an all-pervading medium is unsatisfactory; abstract mathematical descriptions *explain* nothing (see [Space, time, and relativity](#),

<http://ourworld.compuserve.com/homepages/dp5/relativ.htm>).

Light propagates through the ether rather than an absolute void. It is known that certain electromagnetic waves in the atmosphere can produce sound waves when they strike the earth. But the speed of light is some 33,000 times greater than the theoretical seismic velocities in the 'outer core'.

If the force of gravity on both the outer and inner surfaces of the earth's solid shell is directed 'downward', i.e. into the shell, there must be a zone of zero gravity somewhere within the shell, where these two forces cancel. *Etidorhpa* places this 'energy shell' or 'sphere of rest' at a depth seven eighths of the distance from the outer to the inner surface. Such a zone might reflect S waves and most P waves. Some of the P waves that pass through it, or perhaps the vast majority, might then be channelled around the earth between the inner surface and the energy sphere, with most of them being refocused on the other side of the earth, thereby creating the P-wave shadow zones. In this model, rather than P waves travelling more slowly through the 'outer core' than through the mantle, most may not travel through the cavity at all but make a detour around it, so that their slower speed is only apparent. However, if virtually no P waves travel through the cavity, some explanation other than a central sun would be needed to account for the seismic data that suggest an 'inner core'.

Seismic data alone cannot determine whether the earth is solid or hollow, because they cannot be interpreted without making certain fundamental assumptions. As indicated in part 1, the conventional assumptions about gravitational acceleration, density, and pressure within the earth are open to doubt. It is therefore possible that seismic waves follow different paths and have different velocities than scientists think, and that the standard earth model is far removed from reality.

### **Geomagnetism**

A hollow earth would require a new theory of geomagnetism since it would rule out the present dynamo model -- which, as shown in part 1, is highly dubious anyway. A number of alternative mechanisms have been put forward, but none has won widespread support [2]. Magnetism is caused by charged particles in motion, and an alternative theory is that the earth's magnetic field is generated by

charges in the earth's atmosphere and the crust, which are carried with the earth as it rotates. The main objection to this theory is that planets would have to have enormous electric fields in their atmospheres and there is no evidence of this. But nor is there any evidence disproving it; the earth's background electric charge cannot be measured directly from the earth itself [3].

A rotating planet can be compared to an electrical solenoid [4]. A solenoid consists of a coil of wire, and when a current is passed through it, a magnetic force is generated at right angles to the direction of the wire. Since planets carry charges with them in their atmosphere and crust, this generates electrical currents in the direction of rotation, or east-west. The magnetic field is generated at right angles to this, i.e. north-south.

The most detailed alternative model of the geomagnetic field has been developed by Harold Aspden, who argues that the field is generated mainly by ether spin [5]. More specifically, it arises from charge displacement caused by the spinning ether sphere located within the earth and extending about 100 km above its surface, in conjunction with a balancing charge displacement in the matter constituting the physical earth. Aspden explains that, with a distributed core charge of one polarity and a compensating surface charge of opposite polarity, the earth's rotation would produce a magnetic field that matches what is observed. The reason the magnetic poles are offset from the geographic poles is because the ether sphere spins about an axis that is tilted with respect to the earth's spin axis. And the reason the magnetic poles move around the geographic poles earth is because the ether spin axis precesses around the earth's spin axis.

In the light of Aspden's theory, a spinning, ethereal central sun could play a key role in generating the main magnetic field. Other factors contributing to the irregular and varying nature of the overall geomagnetic field include electric currents in the ionosphere and magnetosphere, magnetized rocks in the earth's crust, electric currents in the earth's crust (telluric currents), subterranean flows of brines and other conducting fluids, and ocean current effects [6]. The concentration of charges in the atmosphere fluctuates according to a 24-hour cycle, just as the magnetic field undergoes daily fluctuations. The field increases during solar flares and sunspot activity, when the earth receives more charged particles.

Rocks cannot retain magnetism when the temperature is above the Curie point (about 500°C for most magnetic materials), and in the standard earth model, this restricts magnetic rocks to the upper 40 km of the earth's interior. In the hollow-earth model, on the other hand, only certain parts of the earth's outer shell would probably be above the Curie temperature, and metallic deposits would make a far greater contribution to the earth's permanent magnetism and to regional magnetic anomalies.

Palaeomagnetic studies show that some ancient rocks have been magnetized in a direction opposite to that of the present magnetic field. The scientific

consensus today is that the global geomagnetic field at the time these rocks formed had a reversed polarity. In at least some cases, however, rocks with inverse magnetism may have undergone self-reversal at a later stage, or reflect a regional magnetic anomaly. Even today there are isolated spots of opposite magnetic polarity in both the northern and southern hemispheres.

If global magnetic reversals *have* occurred, they could be caused by the sign of the electric charge of the earth or its atmosphere, or the direction of electric currents in the crust or atmosphere being reversed by some mechanism. Aspden suggests that geomagnetic reversals could be due to the solar system periodically entering space domains in which electric polarities are reversed. In addition, an electrochemical cell can self-reverse, and the earth may contain giant electrochemical cells [7]. One of the external sources of the earth's magnetic field is the ring current in the outer Van Allen radiation belt. Paul LaViolette argues that very intense solar activity could strengthen the ring-current magnetic field to such an extent that it could reverse the polarity of the earth's main magnetic field [8]. Furthermore, the sunspots of the outer sun are known to undergo polarity reversals in a cycle of about 22 years, and something similar might happen with an inner sun, contributing to magnetic anomalies at the earth's surface.

Given the problems faced by the dynamo theory and the existence of other ways of generating a planetary magnetic field, geomagnetism does not rule out the possibility of a hollow earth.

## **5. Feasibility -- II**

### ***Gravity and isostasy***

If the newtonian theory of gravity were correct, there could be no huge caverns in the earth's outer shell and no tunnels connecting the outer and inner worlds. Even a few kilometres beneath the earth's surface the immense pressures would cause any cavities to collapse. Moreover, a habitable inner surface, with gravitational forces holding inhabitants 'down', would be impossible, because the gravitational attraction of the matter beneath their feet would be counteracted by the gravity of the matter forming the earth's shell above their heads -- i.e. on the opposite side of the 'cavity' -- and by the attraction of the inner sun.

However, if, as several experiments suggest, the newtonian assumption that gravity has unlimited penetrability is incorrect, and negative particles and ions can screen or counteract the attractive force of gravity [1], pressures (and temperatures) would not increase steadily with depth, the earth's shell could be honeycombed with cavities and tunnels, and the force of gravity on the inner concave surface would be compatible with life.

Isostasy is the theoretical balance of all large portions of the earth's crust as though they were floating on a denser underlying layer, about 110 km (70 miles)

below the surface. Theoretically, if a section of lithosphere is loaded, e.g. by ice, it will slowly subside to a new equilibrium position; and if a section of lithosphere is reduced in mass, e.g. by erosion, it will slowly rise to a new equilibrium position. It might be argued that without a superheated, viscous mantle below the Moho boundary, isostasy would not work. In actual fact, whether the traditional 'mantle' exists or not, the simplistic theory of isostasy has already been shown to have serious shortcomings.

Much of the evidence to support isostasy has come from observations of the apparent rebound of the crust following the retreat of the late Pleistocene ice sheets from northwest Europe and Canada. However, while the north of Sweden appears to be in the process of uplift, as ideas on isostasy require, the southern parts of the country are sinking. Since scientists largely base their estimates of mantle viscosity on selective data on 'postglacial rebound', their estimates are unlikely to be correct.

Antarctica is thought to have supported massive ice sheets for most of the past 15 million years. If the mantle were subject to deformation under such loading, even at a nominal rate of 1 mm/year, the crust there should have subsided by 15 km -- which has obviously not happened. In fact, the Trans-Antarctic mountains, only several million years old, are elevated more than a kilometre above sea level, showing that the lithosphere/mantle is capable of lifting continental ice sheets, rather than being depressed by them. The most concentrated crustal loading of the earth's lithosphere probably occurs beneath large seamounts, since the ocean crust is fairly thin. However, on the basis of the current earth model, Peter James has calculated that the bearing capacity at the Moho is an order of magnitude greater than the imposed loading of a seamount, so that isostasy cannot explain their subsidence [2].

The theory of isostasy is tested by making gravity measurements over the earth's surface. On the assumption that gravity is proportional to inert mass, positive or negative gravity anomalies are interpreted as indicating an excess or deficiency of mass, and therefore departures from isostatic equilibrium. Gravity measurements reveal many large-scale 'isostatic' anomalies. For instance, an enormous area of 'negative mass' covers part of India and most of the adjacent Arabian Sea, yet there is no evidence that the lithosphere there is being upwarped. Moreover, in regions of tectonic activity vertical crustal movements often intensify gravity anomalies rather than acting to restore isostatic equilibrium. For example, the Greater Caucasus shows a positive gravity anomaly (usually interpreted to mean it is overloaded), yet it is rising rather than subsiding. The greatest anomaly of all is the triaxial deformation of the earth. In addition to the rotation axis and the (43-km-longer) equatorial axis, the earth has a third axis, roughly through the equator; as a result, the equator is a little flattened, being oval rather than truly circular. The earth's shape is distorted by protuberances of various shapes and sizes, equivalent to about 2000 feet of rock, or over a mile of ice, and the anomalies have spans of the order of thousands of miles [3].

The fact that there is no empirical basis for the common assumption that gravity is proportional to mass casts doubt on the standard interpretation of gravity measurements; rather than being a direct function of the quantity of matter, the strength of the gravitational force may depend on the electrical and other properties of matter. The defective theory of isostasy can certainly not be used to lend weight to the orthodox picture of the 'mantle'.

### ***Geological activity***

The earth's crust has undergone oscillating uplifts and subsidences throughout geologic history. Most of the sediments forming the continents were laid down under the sea, and the total thickness of sediments is sometimes as much as 20 km, showing that vertical movements of about the same magnitude have taken place. There is also mounting evidence for submerged continental landmasses in the present oceans. It is widely believed that 'mantle' heat flow and vertical and horizontal movements of mantle material can cause significant changes in crustal thickness, composition, and density, resulting in substantial uplifts and subsidences.

Neither vertical crustal movements nor earthquakes and volcanoes require a solid earth, with a high-density, permanently superhot 'mantle'. However, there must certainly be zones within the earth's shell where very high temperatures exist. The theory of surge tectonics postulates that all the major features of the earth's surface, including rifts, foldbelts, metamorphic belts, and strike-slip zones, are underlain by shallow (less than 80-km-deep) magma chambers and channels, known as 'surge channels' [4]. Surge channels and complexes are believed to correspond to linear lenses of anomalous (low-velocity) upper mantle that are commonly overlain by shallower, smaller low-velocity zones. Seismotomographic data suggest that surge channels may form an interconnected worldwide network, which has been dubbed 'the earth's cardiovascular system'. Magma is said to flow horizontally and vertically through active channels at the rate of a few centimetres a year, and due to the earth's rotation the preferred direction of flow is eastward. Horizontal flow is demonstrated by two major surface features: linear, belt-parallel faults, fractures, and fissures; and the division of tectonic belts into fairly uniform segments. The magma is believed to originate in the asthenosphere, which is generally believed to consist of partially melted rock. Rather than being a global layer, the asthenosphere consists of disconnected zones, extending from about 60 to 150 km in depth.

Interpretations of seismic data generally assume that lower velocities mean higher temperatures while higher velocities mean lower temperatures. For instance, the high-velocity 'roots' of ancient continental nuclei are assumed to consist of cooler rock, while low-velocity zones (such as the asthenosphere) are usually assumed to consist of hotter, perhaps partially melted rock. However, differences in seismic velocity can also reflect differences in pressures, chemical composition, or mineralogical phases, and it is therefore wrong to assume that *all* low-velocity zones must be areas of incipient melting. V. Sánchez Cela argues

that asthenospheric zones are better explained as zones where phase changes are taking place [5].

Drilling tens of kilometres into the crust to check seismic interpretations is technologically unfeasible at present. However, further information on the lower crust and upper 'mantle' could also come from the future discovery of tunnels and caverns extending to 'impossible' depths. The Veronja (or Krubera) Cave in Georgia, Abkhazia, is currently the deepest known cave in the world, with a depth of 1710 metres [6]. South African gold mines are by far the deepest mines in the world, reaching depths of over 2 miles (3.2 km).

Basalts have erupted on earth throughout geologic history, and cover some 63% of the ocean basins and at least 5% of the continents. Giant flood-basalt fields, such as the Deccan Traps in India and the Siberian Traps, have volumes of 100,000 to 10,000,000 km<sup>3</sup>. In plate tectonics, flood basalts, large igneous provinces, and all intraplate magmatism are usually ascribed to 'mantle plumes' - upwellings of hot material allegedly originating at the core-mantle boundary. The movement of plates over the plumes is said to give rise to hotspot trails, i.e. chains of volcanic islands and seamounts. Such trails should therefore show an age progression from one end to the other, but a large majority show little or no age progression. In a detailed critique, H.C. Sheth has argued that there is no geological evidence of any kind requiring mantle plumes, and that the concept is ill-founded, contrived, and invalid, and has led earth scientists up a blind alley. He shows that shallower processes could produce basaltic volcanism [7].

While cylindrical upwellings of mantle material (not necessarily from great depths) might account for isolated volcanoes, they cannot account for the massive ovate and linear flood-basalt provinces found in many parts of the world. Some geologists argue that volcanism in the midocean ridges, linear islands and seamount chains, ocean plateaus, island arcs, and continental interiors is more readily explained by the rupturing of individual or colliding surge channels [8]. V. Sánchez Cela has proposed that the upper mantle is far more silicic than current models assume, and believes that the ultramafic rocks currently assumed to come from the upper mantle, together with their partial melting products (basalts), can be formed in the upper crust in suitable dynamic and chemical conditions [9].

80% of all earthquakes are said to take place in the upper 100 km, while the rest occur at depths of up to 700 km.\* Most deep-focus earthquakes occur in Benioff zones, which are probably deep contraction fractures that formed early in the earth's history. Moreover, as mentioned in part 1, such earthquakes suggest the existence of solid, brittle rocks at such depths, contrary to the conventional earth model.

\*It should be noted that all estimates of depth based on the interpretation of seismic data are likely to be wrong if the underlying assumptions concerning the earth's interior are wrong. However, such estimates can be used as a *relative* indication of depth.

Electrical disturbances have been noted both preceding and during earthquakes, volcanic eruptions, and hurricanes. It has been suggested that changes in geoelectric currents may precede major mechanical stress relief that appears afterwards in the form of an earthquake [10]. In addition to the observation of anomalous earth currents in the vicinity of earthquake epicentres, changes in the magnetic field, both local and global, before, during, and after earthquakes and volcanic eruptions have been observed [11].

In the 19th century, earthquakes, volcanoes, and many other geological phenomena were believed to be caused by great currents of electricity in the earth and atmosphere. Nowadays, electrical and magnetic phenomena have been demoted to mere byproducts of crustal stresses and the movement of internal fluids. Nevertheless, electromagnetic forces may play a far more prominent role in geological activity than is currently believed. Joseph Cater suggests that the fault lines crisscrossing the earth's rocky shell could act as condensers allowing a significant buildup of electric charges, resulting in tremendous repulsive electrostatic forces and explosive discharges when the concentration reaches a critical state. The ensuing stresses and strains and accumulating heat could help to generate pockets of molten rock, and trigger vertical and horizontal crustal movements [12].

If scientific estimates of the temperature far below the earth's surface are grossly exaggerated, the earth's shell may contain far more liquid water than is currently believed. If water (from either surface or subterranean sources) comes into contact with locally superhot rocks, this would have explosive effects. *Etidorhpa* suggests that large quantities of water periodically come into contact with huge deposits of sodium and other metallic bases, and the violent chemical reaction that ensues forces melted rock and steam to the surface, resulting in earthquake or volcanic activity. As indicated in part 1, the movement of subterranean gases might also play an important role in such activity.

In short, none of the geological activity observed at the earth's surface proves the standard earth model or rules out a hollow earth.

### ***Planet formation***

Several researchers have suggested that a spinning sphere might become hollow naturally. If the earth was initially in a more molten or plastic state and rotated faster than today, centrifugal forces could have partially counteracted the gravitational force, causing the highest-density matter to migrate to the outer zones, thereby 'hollowing out' the planet's interior.

Scientists believe that stars and planets formed from huge clouds of dust and gas, which condensed into spinning spheres under the force of gravity. John Flora states that such stars and planets should have spun ever faster as they contracted, in accordance with the law of conservation of angular momentum. In reality, however, larger stars spin faster than smaller ones, and in our solar system larger planets spin faster than smaller ones. For instance, the earth

rotates in 24 hours, while Jupiter, the largest planet, with a diameter over 11 times that of earth, spins about its axis in just under 10 hours. This is not what we would expect of condensed, solid planets. Flora argues that a high rate of rotation would cause a spherical body to expand until it reaches a point of maximum inertial stability, thereby becoming hollow [13].

Dr Gordeev, a mathematician, argues that if a homogeneous globe begins to spin, the centrifugal force will cause light elements to move outwards, leaving behind a core at the centre, where centrifugal force is zero. Assuming there is an initial crust, when the light materials reach it, it will become increasingly 'solid', while the rest of the globe becomes 'hollow'. Gordeev disagrees with Flora's argument that some kind of polar holes would be produced during the formation of a hollow sphere [14].

According to theosophy, instead of condensing out of molten physical matter our globe has crystallized out of a more ethereal state of matter, described as 'fiery, cool and radiant'. The Stanzas of Dzyan (6:4) describe in figurative language how 'fohat' -- electric, vital force, guided by the universal mind -- builds planets ('wheels') by generating vorticular motion ('whirlwinds') in the primordial matter or 'fire-mist': 'He collects the fiery dust. He makes balls of fire, runs through them, and round them, infusing life thereinto, then sets them into motion' [15]. The 'germs of wheels' are described as 'centres of force, around which primordial Cosmic matter expands, and, passing through all the six stages of consolidation, becomes spheroidal and ends by being transformed into globes or spheres'. The earth thereby 'passed from a soft plastic body into a rock-bound globe'. The 'rocky crust' or 'body shell' is said to have reached its most material state at the midpoint of our planet's evolution, several million years ago, and has since begun to return slowly to a more ethereal state [16]. At the centre of any globe there is said to be an 'inner kingdom' composed of the lowest of the three kingdoms of elementals (ethereal, submineral nature-forces). The earth's core is described as 'concreted electricity', and is said to be analogous to the nucleus of an atom [17].

Whereas science regards the sun as a ball of plasma, or fourth-state matter, theosophy asserts that the sun's interior consists largely of matter in its fifth, sixth, and seventh states -- states unknown to scientists on earth [18]. It also asserts that sunspots do not prove the solidity of the 'central mass' of the sun, any more than storm clouds prove the solid mass of the atmosphere behind them, and that the sun's visible outer robes of condensed vital electricity merely form an outer shell [19]. According to the scientific model, a photon takes about a million years to travel from the sun's centre to its surface. According to theosophical literature, on the other hand, the sun's energies take only a year to pass through the sun, and there are bodies circling in the interior of the sun, around its core [20].

Although scientists cannot be certain of the real masses and average densities of the planets, they do have a good idea of their *relative* masses and densities. That means that if the earth is hollow, it is highly likely that all the other planets,

and also the sun, are hollow as well, otherwise astronomical predictions of celestial motions would fail, and the space programme would be impossible. Even the conventional values for the mass and average density of celestial bodies do not rule out their being hollow, since there could be a super-dense type of energy-substance concentrated at their centres.

### ***Central sun***

As far as a hypothetical central sun is concerned, an analogy can perhaps be drawn with the external sun. The theory that the sun is powered exclusively by thermonuclear reactions faces serious problems, the main one being that the sun only produces about a third as many neutrinos as the model requires. The fact that the sun undergoes periodic fluctuations in output and size is also difficult to reconcile with thermonuclear theory [21].

To account for the neutrino shortage, it has been proposed that electron-neutrinos from the sun change into muon-neutrinos and tauon-neutrinos on their way to the earth, these two neutrino 'flavours' being more difficult to detect. In June 2001 the Sudbury Neutrino Observatory (SNO) in Canada announced that it had confirmed this theory. However, the only way to truly confirm it would be to make neutrino measurements at the sun and at several points between sun and earth. Since the experiments in question only involved measurements on earth, the joyful acceptance of the SNO's pronouncements by other mainstream scientists merely confirms how uncritical and unprofessional they can be when orthodox theories are at stake [22].

Harold Aspden is one of the scientists who rejects the hypothesis that the sun derives its power from fusion of colliding protons in its allegedly super-hot interior. He argues that gravity close to the sun's surface squeezes hydrogen atoms so close together that they ionize. And since the gravitational interaction between two free protons is 1836 times greater than that between two free electrons, the net repulsion of the protons in the sun's interior balances gravitational forces and prevents further compaction. As a result the sun has a uniform mass density and temperature that is insufficient to trigger fusion - 'and if it were,' says Aspden, 'the sun would have been blown to pieces long ago!' He continues:

The energy the sun radiates is sustained because free electrons recombine with protons and when they do, this imports energy from the quantum underworld (the aether) to get those electrons back into their quantum state orbits. The sun's energy is not fusion energy but simple energy drawn from the aether by gravity squeezing hydrogen atoms close together to cause ionization. [23]

Paul LaViolette argues that the cores of both planets and stars produce what he calls 'genic energy', because they are supercritical regions of space where photons draw energy from the underlying ether. He argues that 15% of the sun's energy could be supplied by genic energy, while the rest comes from nuclear fusion. He shows that the sun and low-mass stars (red and brown dwarfs) have the same mass-luminosity relation as the four gas giants (Jupiter, Saturn,

Neptune, and Uranus), suggesting that they are powered chiefly by the same energy generation mechanism. He maintains that geonic energy can account for 73% of the earth's entire thermal output, including all of the core heat flux. This would render unnecessary the current speculations that this heat comes from the gradual release of heat trapped since primordial times, or from the gradual solidification of a molten core, or from radioactive decay [24].

Jones et al. have proposed that cold nuclear fusion might be an important source of the heat emanated by the earth [25]. They argue that the fusion of deuterium and hydrogen deep within the earth would explain the high levels of helium-3 found in rocks, liquids, and gases from volcanoes and in active tectonic regions of the earth's crust. They point out that Jupiter radiates twice as much heat as it receives from the sun, and suggest that the excess heat could come from cold fusion in Jupiter's core, which is believed to consist of metallic hydrogen together with iron silicates. LaViolette argues that while cold fusion might be feasible for planet-sized bodies, stars would exhaust their deuterium supply within a few million years due to their much higher luminosities, so that cold fusion does not explain why the planets share a common mass-luminosity relation with lower main-sequence stars.

That there may be unrecognized sources of radiation deep within the earth is shown by the phenomenon of 'anomalous cascades' -- huge showers of nuclear particles that have been measured in a deep mine coming from the sides and even from below. Neutrinos are the only known particles capable of penetrating the entire earth to create the upwardly directed showers, but ordinary neutrinos from the sun do not seem to have enough energy to produce them [26].

### ***Alchemy***

On the question of what powers the stars, G. de Purucker writes:

the interiors of the various suns are not at all existing in conditions of incomprehensibly intense heat, although it is probably true enough that the outermost ethereal layers of the suns possess a certain amount of heat of their own, as a result of chemical processes. The heart of any sun is a most marvellous alchemical laboratory in which occur molecular, atomic, and electronic changes which it would be utterly impossible to reproduce in any of our chemical workshops. [27]

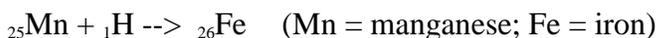
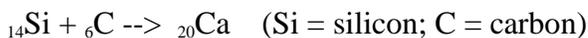
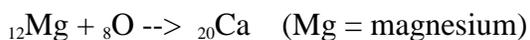
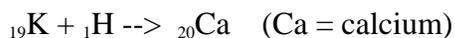
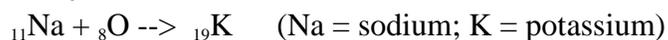
He states that although some degree of atomic dissociation may be taking place in the sun, this does not explain the origin of the energies that it ceaselessly emanates. Every star, he says, is 'the outward vehicle of an indwelling spiritual and intellectual presence'; at their core resides 'a divine monad of stellar origin and character'. And this solar logos or 'god' should not be thought of as being solely at the core of the physical sun, but rather as being in the invisible astral, mental, and spiritual realms of the sun [28]. Purucker is here voicing a central tenet of the ancient wisdom: that every physical organism is the outer manifestation of a series of inner 'energy fields' or 'souls' of increasing subtlety and power.

On earth, too, a series of chemical and alchemical processes are said to be constantly in progress, which differ from those taking place in stars and nebulae only in degree.

The interior of the Earth is another of Nature's marvelous laboratories wherein wonderful and to us men almost unknown things are constantly happening; and, indeed, the same may be said of the unceasing laboratorial work of Nature in the higher and highest ranges or strata of the Earth's atmosphere, and its unceasing interplay of forces and substances with the fields of outer space, whether this be done through the medium of radiation of various kinds, or partly by radiation and partly by as yet undiscovered natural means. [29]

Modern science is often inclined to adopt a sledgehammer approach in its study of nature. For instance, physicists widely believe that by smashing subatomic particles together at ultrahigh energies in particle accelerators and then studying the debris, they will be able to wrench from nature some of her deepest secrets! It is also commonly believed that nuclear fusion, whereby light elements combine into heavier ones, can take place only at temperatures of millions of degrees, such as are thought to exist in stars. Yet numerous experiments have shown that anomalous excess heat can be produced by a variety of poorly understood nuclear reactions, possibly involving fusion, at low temperatures and in relatively simple devices, instead of in reactors costing millions of dollars. 'Cold fusion' has generally been derided by the scientific establishment [30], though as noted above, some scientists have speculated that it may be taking place within the earth and other planets.

Biologist Louis Kervran and a number of other researchers have demonstrated that, in plants, animals, humans, and even minerals, common elements can be transmuted into heavier or lighter elements without the need for extremely high temperatures and pressures [31]. These transmutations are often reversible, and most involve hydrogen, which has 1 proton ( ${}_1\text{H}$ ), or oxygen, which has 8 ( ${}_8\text{O}$ ). Examples are:



Mainstream scientists dismiss the possibility of such alchemical transformations, as they believe that protons and neutrons can only be added to or removed from atomic nuclei by violent methods and under extreme conditions. But nature can apparently accomplish such things by gentler means as well.

A reviewer of one of Kervran's books wrote:

Hundreds of experiments in reputable laboratories undoubtedly demonstrate that transmutations of atomic nuclei occur in living matter. It may be impossible, but it seems to happen. Sodium changes to potassium, calcium to potassium and vice

versa. In certain cases silicon plus carbon gives calcium. Nitrogen is transformed to carbon monoxide. All of which is quite contrary to all known natural laws; but the experiments exist, and I know of no serious refutation of them. [32]

In 1959, French chemist Pierre Baranger stated that, after many years of experiments, 'we have to submit to the evidence: plants know the old secret of the alchemists. *Every day under our very gaze they are transmuting elements*' [33].

Kervran argued that the occurrence of low-energy transmutations, sometimes with the help of bacteria, helps to explain the origin of metals and the composition of successive geological strata.

In a series of experiments with seedlings placed in air-tight glass vessels, Rudolf Hauschka found that their mineral content both increased and decreased, and he concluded that plants could not only transmute physical substances, but could also generate physical matter out of the ether and dematerialize it again. He noted an emergence and disappearance of matter in rhythmic sequence, often in conjunction with the phases of the moon [34].

It would seem that no model of the earth and its evolution can be correct or complete if it ignores the evidence for subtler states of matter and alchemical transmutations.

## References

### 1. Early theories

[1] Edmond Halley, 'An account of the cause of the change of the variation of the magnetical needle, with an hypothesis of the structure of the internal parts of the earth', *Philosophical Transactions*, 1692, vol. 16, pp. 563-78; Walter Kafton-Minkel, *Subterranean worlds: 100,000 years of dragons, dwarfs, the dead, lost races & UFOs from inside the earth*, Port Townsend, WA: Loompanics Unlimited, 1989, pp. 52-4.

[2] *Subterranean worlds*, p. 55; Jan Lamprecht, *Hollow planets: A feasibility study of possible hollow worlds*, Austin, TX: World Wide Publishing, 1998, pp. 21-9.

[3] *Subterranean worlds*, p. 55.

[4] C. Lapworth, 'The heights and hollows of the earth's surface', *Proceed. R. Geogr. Soc.*, vol. 14, pp. 688-97 (p. 697), 1892.

[5] *Subterranean worlds*, pp. 56-73; Joscelyn Godwin, *Arktos: The polar myth in science, symbolism, and nazi survival*, Grand Rapids, MI: Phanes Press, 1993, pp. 109-12.

[6] M.L. Sherman and Wm.F. Lyon, *The hollow globe; or the world's agitator and reconciler. A treatise on the physical conformation of the earth*, Chicago: Religio-Philosophical Publishing House, 1871 (Mokelumne Hill, CA: Health Research, 1971); 2nd ed., 1876.

[7] [The hollow globe. By M.L. Sherman](#), *The Theosophist*, vol. 5, no. 10, pp. 251-4, July 1884 (<http://ourworld.compuserve.com/homepages/dp5/hollow.htm>).

[8] John Uri Lloyd, *Etidorhpa or the end of earth*, Cincinnati: Robert Clarke Company, 1895, 11th ed. 1901; reprinted by Mokelumne Hill, CA: Health Research (<http://www.healthresearchbooks.com>), 1983; and Kila, MT: Kessinger (<http://www.kessingerpub.com>), n.d.

## 2. Modern theories

[1] William Reed, *The phantom of the poles* (1906), Mokelumne Hill, CA: Health Research, 1964.

[2] Marshall B. Gardner, *A journey to the earth's interior or Have the poles really been discovered* (2nd ed., 1920), Mokelumne Hill, CA: Health Research, 1964.

[3] Isaac Asimov, *The ends of the earth: The polar regions of the world*, New York: Dutton, 1990, pp. 158-60, 206.

[4] Walter Kafton-Minkel, *Subterranean worlds: 100,000 years of dragons, dwarfs, the dead, lost races & UFOs from inside the earth*, Port Townsend, WA: Loompanics Unlimited, 1989, p. 66.

[5] Raymond Bernard, *The hollow earth*, New York: Carol Paperbacks, 1991; revised ed., Mokelumne Hill, CA: Health Research, 1977.

[6] E.g.: Brinsley Le Poer Trench, *Secret of the ages: UFOs from inside the earth*, St Albans, Herts.: Panther, 1976; William L. Brian II, *Moongate: Suppressed findings of the U.S. space program, The NASA-military cover-up*, Portland, OR: Future Science Research Publishing Co., 1982; Mark Harp, 'A case for the hollow earth theory', *Nexus*, Dec. 1994 - Jan. 1995, pp. 35-41; Joseph H. Cater, *The ultimate reality*, Pomeroy, WA: Health Research, 1998, pp. 88-99; Alec Maclellan, *The hollow earth enigma*, London: Souvenir Press, 1999; Sadek Adam, *Hollow earth authentic*, Pomeroy, WA: Health Research, 1999.

[7] Jan Lamprecht, *Hollow planets: A feasibility study of possible hollow worlds*, Austin, TX: World Wide Publishing, 1998 (<http://www.hollowplanets.com>).

[8] *Ibid.*, pp. 365-73.

[9] <http://www.v-j-enterprises.com/janpicts.html>.

## 3. Hollow moons

[1] W.R. Corliss (comp.), *The moon and the planets*, Glen Arm, MD: Sourcebook Project, 1985, p. 227.

[2] Don Wilson, *Our mysterious spaceship moon*, London: Sphere Books, 1976; Don Wilson, *Secrets of our spaceship moon*, London: Sphere Books, 1980.

[3] Quoted in *Secrets of our spaceship moon*, p. 95.

[4] *Ibid.*, p. 97.

[5] *Ibid.*, p. 145.

#### **4. Feasibility -- I**

[1] D. McGeary and C.C. Plummer, *Physical geology: Earth revealed*, 3rd ed., Boston, MA: WCB, McGraw-Hill, 1998, pp. 34, 45.

[2] Andrew Dominic Fortes, 'The origin of *planetary* magnetic fields', 1997, <http://www.ucl.ac.uk/geosci/edu/students/planet/student/work/magrev/dynamos.htm>.

[3] Frederic Jueneman, *Raptures of the deep*, Des Plaines, IL: Research & Development Magazine, 1995, pp. 121, 124.

[4] Joseph H. Cater, *The ultimate reality*, Pomeroy, WA: Health Research, 1998, pp. 163-6.

[5] Harold Aspden, *The physics of creation*, 2003, [www.aspden.org/books/2edpoc/2edpoccontents.htm](http://www.aspden.org/books/2edpoc/2edpoccontents.htm), ch. 8, pp. 150-63.

[6] W.R. Corliss (comp.), *Science frontiers: Some anomalies and curiosities of nature*, Glen Arm, MD: Sourcebook Project, 1994, pp. 235-7; William R. Corliss (comp.), *Inner earth: A search for anomalies*, Glen Arm, MD: Sourcebook Project, 1991, pp. 147-51.

[7] *Science frontiers*, p. 235.

[8] Paul LaViolette, *Earth under fire*, Schenectady, NY: Starlane Publications, p. 188.

#### **5. Feasibility -- II**

[1] [Gravity and antigravity](http://ourworld.compuserve.com/homepages/dp5/gravity.htm), <http://ourworld.compuserve.com/homepages/dp5/gravity.htm>.

[2] Peter James, *The tectonics of geoid changes*, Calgary, Alberta: Polar Publishing, 1994, pp. 19-23; Peter James, 'Is isostasy a real phenomenon?', *New Concepts in Global Tectonics Newsletter*, no. 3, pp. 3-4, 1997.

[3] Charles H. Hapgood, *The path of the pole*, Philadelphia: Chilton Book Company, 1970, pp. 352-60; V.V. Belousov, *Geotectonics*, Moscow: Mir, 1980, pp. 259-61.

[4] Arthur A. Meyerhoff, Irfan Taner, A.E.L. Morris, W.B. Agocs, M. Kaymen-Kaye, M.I. Bhat, N.C. Smoot, and Dong R. Choi, *Surge tectonics: A new hypothesis of global geodynamics* (D. Meyerhoff Hull, ed.), Dordrecht: Kluwer, 1996.

[5] V. Sánchez Cela, *Densialite: A new upper mantle*, Zaragoza: University of Zaragoza, 2000, pp. 176-8.

[6] NSS World Deep Cave List, <http://www.pipeline.com/~caverbob/wdeep.htm>.

[7] H.C. Sheth, 'Flood basalts and large igneous provinces from deep mantle plumes: fact, fiction, and fallacy', *Tectonophysics*, vol. 311, pp. 1-29, 1999.

[8] *Surge tectonics*, pp. 253-4.

[9] *Densialite*, pp. 207-12.

[10] Erwin J. Saxl, 'An electrically charged torque pendulum', *Nature*, vol. 203, pp. 136-8, 1964.

[11] W.R. Corliss (comp.), *Earthquakes, tides, unidentified sounds and related phenomena*, Glen Arm, MD: Sourcebook Project, 1983, pp. 89-96; Charles Officer and Jake Page, *Tales of the earth: Paroxysms and perturbations of the blue planet*, New York: Oxford University Press, 1993, pp. 32, 37, 45.

[12] Joseph H. Cater, *The ultimate reality*, Pomeroy, WA: Health Research, 1998, pp. 83-7.

[13] Jan Lamprecht, *Hollow planets: A feasibility study of possible hollow worlds*, Austin, TX: World Wide Publishing, 1998, pp. 25-6.

[14] *Ibid.*, pp. 26-7.

[15] H.P. Blavatsky, *The secret doctrine* (1888), Pasadena, CA: Theosophical University Press, 1977, 1:33, 144, 252fn.

[16] *Ibid.*, 1:116-7, 159, 260; 2:153.

[17] *Dialogues of G. de Purucker*, Pasadena, CA: Theosophical University Press, 1948, 2:325-6; G. de Purucker, *Fundamentals of the esoteric philosophy*, 2nd ed., Pasadena, CA: Theosophical University Press, 1979, p. 407; A.T. Barker (comp.), *The mahatma letters to A.P. Sinnett*, 2nd ed., Pasadena, CA: Theosophical University Press, 1975, p. 79.

[18] G. de Purucker, *Fountain-source of occultism*, Pasadena, CA: Theosophical University Press, 1974, p. 295; *Dialogues of G. de Purucker*, 1:33.

- [19] *H.P. Blavatsky collected writings*, Wheaton, IL: Theosophical Publishing House, 1950-91, 5:154-61.
- [20] *Fountain-source of occultism*, pp. 299, 154.
- [21] Don Scott, 'The electric sun', <http://www.users.qwest.net/~dascott/Sun.htm>.
- [22] Don Scott, 'Sudbury Neutrino Observatory report: an analysis', <http://www.users.qwest.net/~dascott/Sudbury.htm>.
- [23] Harold Aspden, 'Tapping nature's energy source', [aetherometry.com/aspden\\_tapping\\_nature's\\_energy\\_source](http://aetherometry.com/aspden_tapping_nature's_energy_source).
- [24] Paul LaViolette, *Subquantum kinetics: A systems approach to physics and cosmology*, Alexandria, VA: Starlane Publications, 2nd ed., 2003, pp. 189-204; Paul LaViolette, *Genesis of the Cosmos: The ancient science of continuous creation*, Rochester, VE: Bear and Company, 2004, pp. 318-27 (<http://www.etheric.com>).
- [25] S.E. Jones et al., 'Observation of cold nuclear fusion in condensed matter', *Nature*, vol. 338, pp. 737-40, 1989; 'Rocks reveal the signature of fusion at the centre of the earth', *New Scientist*, 6 May 1989, p. 30.
- [26] 'Particle shower sprays upward', *Science News*, vol. 118, p. 246, 1980.
- [27] *Fountain-source of occultism*, p. 298.
- [28] *Ibid.*, p. 304.
- [29] G. de Purucker, *The esoteric tradition*, 2nd ed., Pasadena, CA: Theosophical University Press, 1973, pp. 450-1.
- [30] Charles G. Beaudette, *Excess heat: Why cold fusion research prevailed*, South Bristol, MA: Oak Grove Press, 2000; Tadahiko Mizuno, *Nuclear transmutation: The reality of cold fusion*, Infinite Energy Press ([www.infinite-energy.com](http://www.infinite-energy.com)), 1998.
- [31] Peter Tompkins and Christopher Bird, *The secret life of plants*, New York: Harper & Row, 1973, pp. 274-91; C.L. Kervran, *Biological transmutations*, Woodstock, NY: Beekman Publishers, 1980, pp. 70-3; C. Louis Kervran, *Biological transmutations*, Magalia, CA: Happiness Press, 1989, pp. 43, 44-5, 48-50, 59-60, 68-9, 87-8, 100-1, 157.
- [32] *Biological transmutations*, 1980, p. 72.
- [33] *The secret life of plants*, p. 279.
- [34] Rudolf Hauschka, *The nature of substance*, London: Vincent Stuart Ltd., 1966, pp. 11-20, 67-9, 118-20, 122-3.

## **Mysteries of the Inner Earth**

David Pratt

May 2001

*Part 3 of 4*

---

## Part 3: Polar Puzzles

1. [The open polar sea](#)
  2. [The north pole controversy](#)
  3. [Polar land coverup?](#)
  4. [Flights of fancy](#)
  5. [Auroras and the poles](#)
- [References](#)

---

### 1. The open polar sea

Many 19th-century explorers believed that beyond the belt of pack ice at the perimeter of the Arctic Ocean there was an open polar sea, and possibly continental land as well. The idea of an open polar sea took a long time to dispel, but we now know that there is no iceless ocean beyond 80°N. However, polynyas, temporary areas of ice-free water, occur in both the Arctic Ocean and the Southern Ocean surrounding Antarctica, and are not yet fully understood. Some are 160 km across, and the largest may cover as much as 300,000 sq km, implying a substantial influx of heat [1].

In 1827 an expedition led by Edward Parry ventured far north of Spitzbergen, over ice and along leads of open water. As they sledged north, the ice-field became lighter and more fissured, and they eventually found themselves on the edge of what seemed to be a vast open polar sea, containing only a few scattered pieces of ice. They reached 82°45'N, a record that was unbeaten for half a century. In 1853 Elisha Kent Kane mounted an unsuccessful attempt to reach the north pole via Smith Sound separating Greenland from Ellesmere Island. The same route was attempted in 1861 by Isaac Israel Hayes, who sledged just beyond 80°N. Both expeditions mistook an area of open water for an open polar sea. The first man to reach the edge of the Arctic Ocean was another

American, Charles Francis Hall. In 1871 he sailed up the channels leading from Baffin Bay to the Arctic Ocean and reached 82°11'N. Hall died after his ship was hit by a floe.

While attempting to reach the north pole in 1871-73, two young Austrian explorers, Karl Weyprecht and Julius Payer, discovered the islands of Franz Joseph Land and came to believe that they were the outliers of a continental landmass. Lieutenant George Washington De Long hoped to find this land. In 1879 he sailed in the *Jeanette* through the Bering Straits into the Arctic Ocean, planning to take advantage of the warm, north-flowing currents which he believed would open a way through the pack ice. However, in June 1881 his ship sank in the pack ice northeast of the New Siberian Islands, a tragedy which De Long and many of his men did not survive.

Three years after the *Jeannette* had sunk, debris and scraps of clothing that had littered the floe near the grave of the ship were found embedded in the ice that had been washed ashore in southwest Greenland. This gave the Norwegian polar explorer Fridtjof Nansen the idea for the epic drift of the *Fram* across the Arctic Ocean, from June 1893 to August 1896. The plan was to drive his specially designed ship into the pack ice in the vicinity of the New Siberian Islands and drift with the currents across the Arctic Ocean towards the Greenland Sea. The *Fram* drifted across the Polar Basin, but as time went on it became clear that it would not drift over the pole but would bypass it. Nansen and Johansen left the ship to make a dash for the pole across the ice floes with sledges and dogs. They left the *Fram* in latitude 84°N in March 1895. In just under a month they reached their farthest north of 86°13', from where the northern prospect was 'a veritable chaos of iceblocks'. They then made their way over treacherous ice to Franz Joseph Land, some 400 miles to the southwest, averaging less than 5 miles a day. Nansen was eventually reunited with the *Fram* at Tromsø in August 1896.

The famous British explorer Wally Herbert writes:

[Nansen's] expedition, in the teeth of scepticism and discouragement, had drifted with the shifting expanse of polar ice across an unknown ocean -- a courageous voyage inspired and conducted with consummate intelligence -- a saga that will never be surpassed. [2]

The expedition found neither land nor an open polar sea. They frequently encountered large stretches of open water, and the weather conditions together with the wildlife and its direction of travel sometimes made them suspect there might be land in the region of the north pole. However, their final conclusion was that the existence of a considerable expanse of land beyond 86°N was highly unlikely.



Figure. Arctic exploration [3].

Some of Nansen's experiences during his arctic voyage in the *Fram*, as described in his book *Farthest North* (1898), have become an integral part of hollow-earth lore. Gardner and Reed and many later writers claim that Nansen travelled a considerable distance into the northern polar opening without realizing it. However, Nansen could not have entered the interior without passing a point on the earth's surface that gave a false impression of 90° latitude -- i.e. of being at the north pole -- and there is no evidence that the *Fram* ever reached such a point. Gardner makes a lot of the fact that after leaving the ship for the abortive attempt on the pole, Nansen was completely lost for many months. He insinuates that this was because the curvature of the earth was different to what was expected due to the fact that Nansen was on the lip of a polar opening. However, Nansen's difficulty in finding Franz Joseph Land was largely due to the fact that he and Johansen had carelessly let their chronometer watches run down, with the result that all their calculations for longitude were out by several degrees.

The arctic climate appears to have varied markedly during the past 2000 years, partly reflecting global trends. For instance, the climate appears to have been much milder from the 5th to 11th centuries, with less permafrost and sea ice [4]. Historical reports indicate that the winter of 1476-77 in Iceland was extremely mild, supporting Christopher Columbus' disputed claim that he found the ocean there to be relatively ice free at the time. The climate subsequently cooled, but Iceland has also had mild winters in more recent times. Weather reports indicate that between 1800 and 1883 there were 20 winters during which no pack ice came down from the polar ice cap north of Iceland [5]. But none of this requires a belief in warm air and ocean currents emerging from a polar hole!

## 2. The north pole controversy

Commander Robert E. Peary (1856-1920) was obsessed by the ambition to be the first man to reach the north pole. His final attempt on the pole was undertaken at the age of 53, after 23 years of arctic exploration (on one of his expeditions he had to have seven of his toes amputated due to frostbite). He set out from Cape Columbia on the north coast of Ellesmere Island on 22 February 1909, and claimed to have reached the north pole on 6 April 1909. However, just before Peary's return to the United States in September 1909, Dr Frederick A. Cook (1865-1940), a respected American explorer who had been with Peary in Greenland in 1891-92 and who had spent 1907-09 in the Arctic, announced that he had reached the pole the year before with two Eskimos, from the north point of Axel Heiberg Island. The *Encyclopaedia Britannica* comments:

The matter aroused considerable controversy, which is still very much alive. There are grounds for serious doubts as to whether either man reached the pole, since neither was able to produce conclusive evidence to support his claim.[1]



**Richard E. Peary.**



**Frederick A. Cook.**

The problems with Peary's claim are his very high sledging speeds and his very slack navigation. Peary covered the final leg of 130 nautical miles (nmi) in five marches of 26 nmi each on his outward journey, and in three marches of 43.5 nmi each on his return journey. Peary supporters try to show that these incredible speeds are not impossible by pointing to the successful 1986 polar expedition led by Will Steger. Steger achieved an average speed of 21.7 nmi per day, and even managed 32 nmi in half a day [2]. However, when Steger reached the pole on 1 May 1986, he had few rations, having abandoned most of them to lighten his load, and was airlifted out. He could not have returned to his starting point on what remained, whereas Peary had to carry everything he needed for his round trip. No one has ever reached the north pole and returned to their point of departure as fast Peary allegedly did [3]. This fact undermines the claim of some hollow-earthers that Peary's high sledging speeds were due to the anomalous curvature of the earth in the region of the supposed polar opening.

Peary claimed to have followed a 660 km straight line from Cape Columbia along the 70°W meridian to the pole. His last recorded observation of the sun was at a distance of six travelling days or 220 km from the pole. From here he was accompanied solely by the black explorer Matthew Henson (his manservant) and four Eskimos. He claimed to have travelled the last distance at a faster pace than at any time previously and to have done so without any navigational aids other than 'dead reckoning', which means maintaining your direction forward by observing your track behind. The problem is that the arctic ice is always shifting and moving with the wind and currents. Wally Herbert asks: 'What then gave him the crazy idea that he could strike out across the drifting pack ice, and without any observations for longitude or any checks on the variation of the compass, could aim for and hit the Pole?' [4].

Peary asserted that he had observed the sun from the pole to establish his position, but the observations were not recorded in his diary but on a piece of paper inserted into the diary at that place. Herbert believes Peary probably got little further than 89°. The pages of Peary's diary for 6 April (when he claimed to have reached the pole) and the succeeding two days, are uncharacteristically blank. Herbert believes Peary was then wrestling with a major dilemma. He had to choose 'between admitting that he had gone in the wrong direction and had failed to reach his goal, or looking back along the trail at all those years of suffering and convincing himself that he had earned the right to claim it' [5].

Frederick A. Cook claimed to have reached the north pole on 21 April 1908. He left the last Eskimo village in Greenland in February 1907, and for his assault on the pole he was accompanied by just two Eskimos, Etukishuk and Ahwelah. He stated that on his return journey he had drifted off course and was prevented from reaching his food caches on the mainland. He was forced to spend a winter in the Canadian Arctic, before undertaking a circuitous and difficult sledge journey back to Greenland.

Cook's claim to have been the first man to reach the pole was immediately challenged by Peary but initially won wide acceptance. However, the Peary Arctic Club launched a vigorous campaign to discredit him. They published an article based on interviews with Etukishuk and Ahwelah conducted by several of Peary's men, including Henson and Donald MacMillan. The Eskimos were quoted as saying that they had never ventured far into the polar ocean, and had camped out on the polar ice for several days before returning to land. Cook's claim to have been the first man to reach the summit of Mt McKinley, the highest mountain in North America (20,320 ft/6194 m), in 1906 also came under attack. Ed Barrill, the man who had accompanied Cook to the top, now confessed that they had never been anywhere near the summit, and that the supposed photograph of the summit published in Cook's book had been taken far lower down.

Far more damage was done to Cook's reputation, however, when a committee at the University of Copenhagen, to which Cook had submitted some of his original field notes, ruled that they were not sufficient to prove that he had reached the north pole. The American press proceeded to denounce Cook as 'one of the most monumental impostors of history'. Meanwhile, a committee of the National Geographic Society, composed entirely of Peary's admirers, had endorsed Peary's claim to have discovered the north pole. However, not everybody was satisfied. In 1911 his proofs were examined by a Congressional subcommittee. Although it endorsed his claims by four votes to three,

Peary's testimony before Congress was full of prevarications, contradictions and incredible lapses of memory on crucial points. It was a disaster for Peary, and it set in motion all the doubts that plague his claim to this day. [6]

One of the subcommittee members denounced him as a 'wilful and deliberate liar' and a 'contemptible little ass'!

After a year of self-imposed exile, Cook proceeded to tour Europe and America in an effort to win back public support. He ridiculed Peary at every opportunity, even calling him a 'leprous blot on the fabric of clean human endeavor'. Although public interest in the controversy eventually died out, heated debate between Cook partisans, Peary partisans, and those who are partisans or detractors of both has continued to this day. Cook's advocates, who include several world-class explorers and geographers, describe him as 'the most defamed man in arctic history'.

Regarding the Mt McKinley controversy, Cook's defenders point out that the Peary Arctic Club is now known to have paid Barrill \$5000 for his 'confession', and maintain that Cook's descriptions of features at the highest elevations of the mountain indicate that he must have been there. They concede, however, that most if not all of the photographs in Cook's book *To the Top of the Continent* (1908) were not in fact taken high on the mountain as the captions declared, but they claim that Cook used them as substitutes because he failed to take good, clear photos at the highest altitudes. It does seem rather implausible, though, that he just happened to have photographed features suitable for 'illustrative

purposes' even before the real ascent had begun. Moreover, there are important discrepancies between Cook's original diary of his climb (which he never submitted for examination) and his published accounts, as if his story was still evolving [7].

Regarding the Eskimo testimony against Cook, Cook's defenders point out that about 35 polar Eskimos were interviewed by the Danish explorer Knud Rasmussen in the summer of 1909, before Peary returned from his attempt on the pole, and they testified that Etukishuk and Ahwelah had told them that they had travelled over the pack ice with Cook for weeks and had reached the 'Great Nail' (north pole). A year later, however, Rasmussen retracted his report because the two Eskimos had allegedly told a Danish missionary that they did not in fact go all the way to the pole. Peary's supporters issued conflicting statements regarding the testimony of Etukishuk and Ahwelah. It is quite possible that they had misunderstood or misrepresented what the two Eskimos had said, or that the latter had modified their story in order to pacify Peary. So Cook may have travelled further over the pack ice than Peary's followers claimed. But it is noteworthy that the stories handed down among the Eskimos to this day do *not* support Cook's claim to have reached the north pole [8].

Cook's description of physical conditions and natural features at the north pole and in the region the Central Arctic Basin through which he sledged is said by his supporters to have been confirmed by later exploration in detail after detail, proving he must have come close to the pole [9]. Sceptics, on the other hand, argue that Cook's description of the pack-ice conditions and the drift of the ice near the pole could have been an informed guess based on what he and other explorers had found less far to the north.

As regards the judgement by the University of Copenhagen, Cook's defenders point out that the records submitted by Cook were indeed incomplete, but that this was because while he was in Greenland he had given the rest to Harry Whitney, who was supposed to bring them with him to the US on Peary's vessel. Peary, however, had ordered Whitney to leave behind anything belonging to Cook. Interestingly, Cook never tried to retrieve his records. Indeed, he stated privately that he had copies of them and that they did not contain anything that would prove his claims, though this was not the impression he gave the University of Copenhagen. He admitted to being very happy with its open verdict. There is strong evidence that Cook's navigational abilities were grossly inadequate. He did not submit any of his observations for latitude and longitude to the Danes, though he did include some observations in his book a few years later. However, they contained errors, which were corrected in subsequent editions [10].

All but one of Cook's original notebooks have since come to light. Robert Bryce argues that a careful study of them reveals why he did not want anybody to see them all. They contain various changes to dates, distances, and latitudes, are inconsistent, and differ on important points from his published accounts of his trip, showing how he gradually improved his story. Cook's speeds are also

difficult to credit. He claimed to have travelled the 520 miles from Cape Thomas Hubbard to the pole at a rate of 15.3 miles per day. When detours are allowed for, his speed must have averaged 23 miles per day for 34 consecutive days. If we ignore Peary's claims, no dog sledge journey to the pole ever since, even ones that were resupplied on route, has approached anything like such a speed. Bryce concludes from Cook's records that he did make an honest attempt at the pole, but turned back after advancing about 92 miles over the treacherous pack ice [11]. With his gentle, self-assured manner and never-failing smile, Cook then proceeded to 'deceive millions magnificently'. In 1911, one of Cook's former supporters wrote: 'Let us draw the mantle of charity around him and believe, if we can, that there is a thread of insanity running through the woof of his brilliant mind' [12].

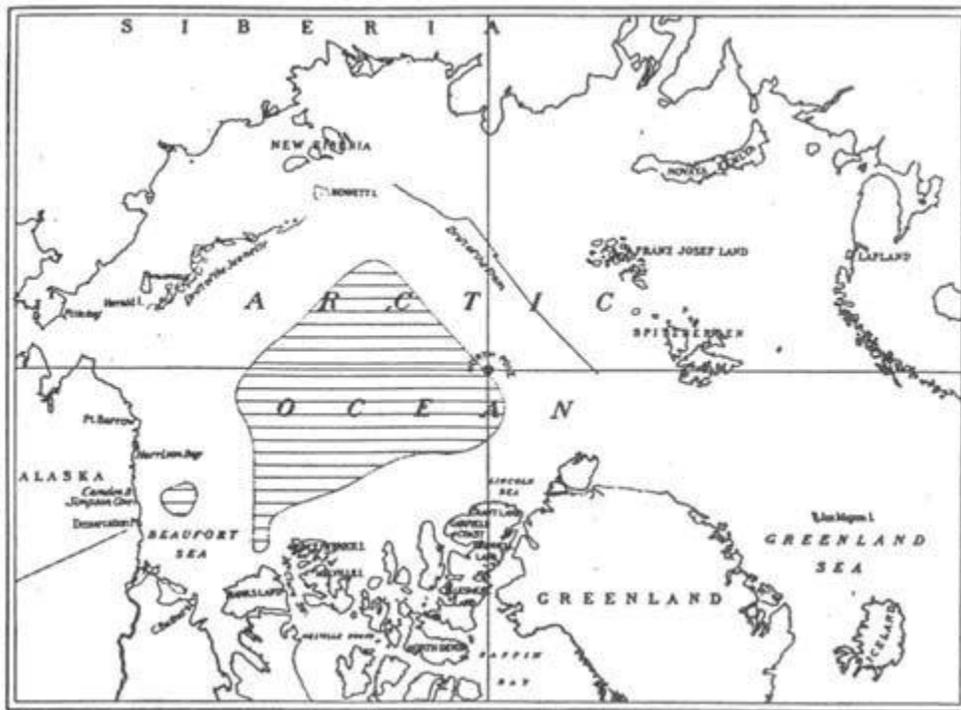
Controversy surrounds not only the question of who was the first person to reach the north pole on foot, but also who was the first to fly there. The Americans Richard E. Byrd and Floyd Bennett claimed to have made the first airplane journey over the north pole on 9 May 1926, flying from their base in west Spitzbergen to the pole and back. Like Peary, they were acclaimed as national heroes. However, some doubt always lingered over whether their plane had actually reached the north pole. In 1996 the diary that Byrd had kept on his famous flight was discovered, and some researchers think that his diary entries suggest the airplane was still about 150 miles (240 km) short of the north pole when Byrd decided to turn back because of his concern over an oil leak [13]. Three days after Byrd's flight, Roald Amundsen of Norway, Lincoln Ellsworth of the United States, and Umberto Nobile of Italy flew over the north pole in a dirigible, on their transarctic flight from Spitzbergen to Alaska.

Since then, the north pole has been reached many times. The first landing made by an aircraft at the pole was in 1937 when a Soviet team was landed there to set up a scientific drifting station. In August 1958 the nuclear-powered submarine the *Nautilus* made a historic underwater cruise from Point Barrow, Alaska, to the Greenland Sea, passing completely beneath the ice cap of the north pole. The first surface vessel to reach the pole was the Soviet nuclear icebreaker *Arktika*, which approached from the direction of the New Siberian Islands. The first surface expedition confirmed as having reached the pole was an American expedition under Ralph Plaisted, which reached it from northern Ellesmere Island by snowmobile in 1968. The following year the British Transarctic Expedition, led by Wally Herbert, was the first to reach the pole by dog team while en route from Point Barrow to Spitzbergen.

There can no doubt that the earth's north geographic pole *does* exist on the earth's outer surface rather than being an imaginary point in the middle of a huge polar hole.

### **3. Polar land coverup?**

Early arctic explorers reported seeing birds and animals moving north as winter was setting in, instead of going south, and inferred that they were heading to a warm land in the north. Peary once experienced a heavy fall of black dust in Greenland and thought it may be volcanic dust from unexplored land to the north. In 1904 Dr R.A. Harris of the US Coast and Geodetic Survey published an article explaining why he believed that there must be a large body of undiscovered land or shallow water in the polar basin northwest of Greenland. He argued that the prevailing currents seemed to indicate their deflection by an unknown landmass lying in this approximate area, that the Eskimos living on the northern fringes of the Arctic Ocean had a tradition that a landmass existed to the north, and that the disruption of the tides north of Alaska indicated a moderating effect explainable by intervening land [1].



**Figure.** R.A. Harris' 1904 map showing hypothesized land near the pole [2].

Various arctic explorers actually reported seeing land in the distance, though it should be noted that visibility can be very poor, and mirages are very common. In 1811 Jakov Sannikov reported that he had seen a vast land to the northwest of the New Siberian Islands; it was named Sannikov Land. E. Moll claimed to have seen it twice, in 1886 and 1893, and it was marked on maps. Nansen did not find Sannikov Land during his expedition, nor have any later expeditions found it, and it is now thought to have been an ice island. Eskimos in Alaska have sometimes reported seeing hilly land to the north in the bright, clear days of spring. Land in this vicinity was seen by Captain John Keenan and his crew in the 1870s [3]. However, no such land has been discovered.

## ***Crocker Land***

Another famous disappearing land is Crocker Land, 'discovered' by Peary. He first saw it on 24 June 1906 from the top of a 2000-ft mountain situated behind Cape Colgate in northern Greenland. He wrote: 'North stretched the well-known ragged surface of the polar pack, and northwest it was with a thrill that my glasses revealed the faint white summits of a distant land which my Eskimos claimed to have seen as we came along from the last camp.' A few days later, on 28 June, Peary was at Capt Thomas Hubbard at the northern tip of Axel Heiberg Island. It was a clear day and, from the top of a 1600-ft hill, Peary says that through his binoculars he was able to 'make out apparently a little more distinctly, the snow-clad summits of the distant land in the northwest, above the ice horizon'. At both locations Peary built cairns in which he left a brief record.

Peary estimated that Crocker Land lay 120 miles from the northern coastline of Axel Heiberg Island. In 1914 his friend, Captain Donald B. MacMillan, led an expedition to find it. On 16 April he left Cape Thomas Hubbard with Ensign Fitzhugh Green and two Eskimos, Pawahto and Etukishuk. They trekked out onto the frozen polar sea, bypassing many leads of ice-free water. By the evening of 21 April they were nearly 100 miles from shore, yet nothing was in sight on the horizon, even though the mist had cleared. The next morning, however, MacMillan was inside their igloo when he heard Green shouting excitedly that Crocker Land was in sight. In his diary he wrote:

We all rushed out and up to the top of a berg. Sure enough! There it was as plain as day -- hills, valleys, and ice cap -- a tremendous land extending through 150 degrees of the horizon. We had even picked out the point to head for when Pawahto remarked that he thought it was mist . . . resembling land. As we watched it more narrowly its appearance slowly changed from time to time so we were forced to the conclusion that it was a mirage of the sea ice. This phenomenon has fooled many and many a good man . . . [4]

They thought they could see land again in the morning of the 23rd, but it had faded away in the afternoon when the sun worked south and west. Though they advanced a total of nearly 150 miles, they found no land, and MacMillan concluded: 'my dream of 5 years is over.'

After returning to shore, the party found one of Peary's cairns and retrieved his message. Although he had seen Crocker Land from this spot, the record read simply: 'Peary, July 28, 1906.' MacMillan looked out to sea and thought he could see land as well. He believed that if he had been there in Peary's place, he would have declared the discovery himself. Later, Peary's other cairn was discovered. The message it contained stated that on the day Peary claimed to have first seen Crocker Land he had 'a clear view of the northern horizon', yet there was again no mention of land.

Wally Herbert draws attention to the fact that Peary's diary entries for both days also make no mention of his discovery of new land to the northwest. Nor do the telegrams he sent out on his voyage home informing his sponsors of his

achievements. Only in his book *Nearest the Pole*, published in 1907, did he mention 'Crocker Land', which he named after one of his financial backers. Herbert thinks that both Crocker Land, and his highly dubious claim to have set a new 'farthest north' on the same expedition, may have been forced upon Peary by his desperate need to be given one final chance to reach the north pole [5].

### ***Bradley Land***

Frederick A. Cook stated that on his journey to the north pole in 1908, he looked for Crocker Land but did not find it at the location given by Peary. However, he said he had seen a mountainous, ice-clad land slightly further from shore, which he named Bradley Land. He saw it to the west of his line of march north across the pack on 30 March 1908, and again on 31 March. It extended from 83°20'N to 85°11'N and was located at about 102°W longitude. It appeared to consist of two islands, and had an elevation of about 1800 feet at its highest points [6].

Later exploration has not found any land at that location. However, in the late 1940s aerial reconnaissance did reveal a number of large 'ice islands' -- breakaway pieces of the ancient ice shelf -- drifting slowly clockwise in the arctic basin north of Ellesmere Island. Several arctic researchers have suggested that Cook may have mistaken one for land. However, ice islands are much smaller than the features Cook described, and only rise about 25 feet above sea level. Some Cook partisans therefore claim that the ice island Cook saw was not 40 miles away, as he thought, but only 2 miles away, but since Cook claims to have seen Bradley Land in clear weather, this is unconvincing.

One thing is certain: the photograph of Bradley Land that Cook included in *My Attainment of the Pole* (1911) does not show an ice island but real, ice-clad land. Cook supporters tend to agree, but say that, as with some of the Mount McKinley photos, Cook may have used a photograph of a body of land resembling what he had seen as a substitute for the actual but probably poor-quality photo! Others, like Wally Herbert, see the photo as evidence that Cook faked his north-pole journey [7]. Cook's Eskimo companions are reported to have stated that Cook had not seen Bradley Land and that the photograph in his book was taken off the northwest coast of Axel Heiberg Land.

Prior to his attempt at the pole, Cook had expressed the common belief that land would be found in the Arctic Ocean. He said it was reasonable to expect some rocky islets north of Greenland, perhaps extending as far as the 85th parallel, and that any land would probably have an elevation of at least 1000 feet. His faith in Harris's 1904 paper on the likelihood of a polar continent was probably reinforced by Peary's claim of seeing Crocker Land. It seems that Cook took a calculated gamble by claiming to have seen Bradley Land and marking its location on his map. On his return journey, he supposedly came to within 11 miles of Bradley Land, yet he said he had not see it, though his Eskimos had seen it while he was asleep. But he did not make any effort to reach it and confirm its existence [8].

As evidence of how Cook's story evolved, it is worth noting that, in contrast to his later book on his polar expedition, he stated in one of his notebooks that he *did* in fact see Crocker Land, on 30 March 1908, and he even gives a detailed description. He also stated that he first sighted Bradley Land on 4 April, rather than 30 March, and that on his return journey he saw both Crocker Land and Bradley Land [9]!

Cook asserted that he encountered an island of old, glacial land ice between 87° and 88°N, only 120 miles from the north pole, and travelled over it for portions of two days. He was astonished to discover this island of ancient glacial ice so many hundreds of miles from land. Although it is now known that drifting islands of old glacial ice do exist in the region of the higher Arctic, Cook's photograph of the glacial land ice has proven fraudulent. Wally Herbert discovered that Cook did not print the entire plate in his book. In the Cook Collection at the US Library of Congress, he found an uncropped lantern slide that shows an enormous piece of rock on the right-hand side of the ice. In other words, the glacier is visibly resting on dry land of unknown extent, yet Cook made no mention of this.

Since there is no known land close to the north pole, Herbert and others regard the photo as further evidence that Cook was a liar [10]. The incriminating lantern slide was originally discovered back in 1913 by Evelyn Briggs Baldwin, and led him to renounce his belief in Cook [11]. Cook supporters, on the other hand, trot out their familiar argument that Cook must have used a substitute photograph for 'illustrative purposes'! In his book, Cook expressed uncertainty as to whether the glacial island was floating ice or was resting on land beneath sea level. This may have served as a hedge that some such feature might be discovered, since this part of his route lay across the zone Harris thought might hold an unknown continent.

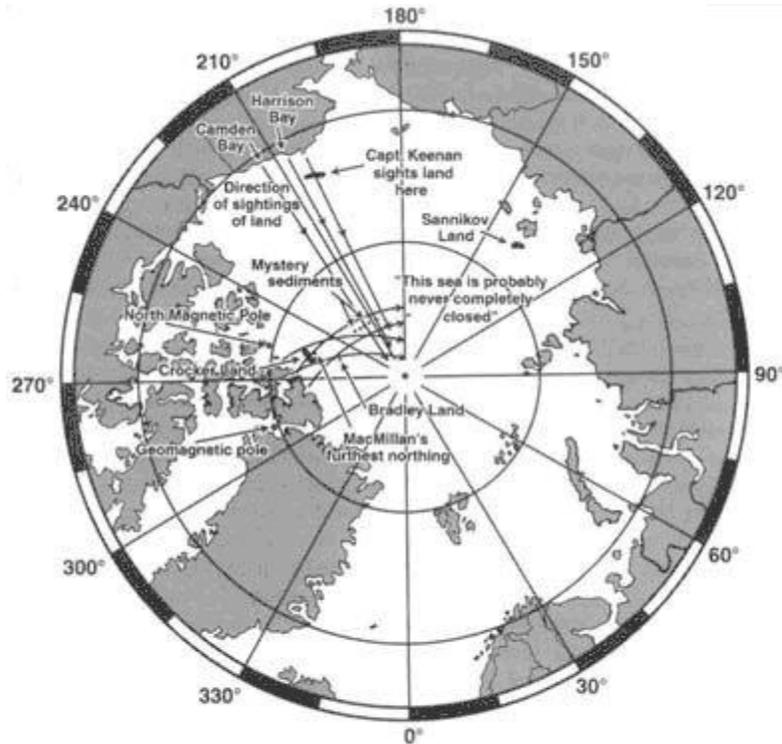
### ***A mega-conspiracy?***

Jan Lamprecht takes quite a different view of Cook and Peary and the controversy surrounding them. Despite all the evidence against them, he believes that they were both perfectly honest, though he admits that Peary's sanctioning of a campaign of vilification against Cook is inexcusable. He believes that both reached the north pole, that their sightings of Bradley Land and Crocker Land were genuine, and that Cook's photo of Bradley Land is authentic. To salvage their reputations, however, he has to invoke a conspiracy of incredible proportions. He argues that one or more polar lands in the north polar region have in fact been discovered -- not where Peary and Cook thought they were, but north of Alaska, some 5° short of the north pole -- and that they lie near or just within a polar opening measuring 100 or 200 or more miles across. He claims that the military and government authorities of Russia, America, Canada, and perhaps other nations have perpetrated an unprecedented coverup to hide these revolutionary discoveries [12]!

Lamprecht argues that the 'land' seen by MacMillan and his men in 1914, with its snow-capped peaks, white summits, and undulating landscape, was not a mirage of sea ice but a 'telescopic mirage' of an enormous polar land in the mid-Arctic lying about 250 to 350 miles from where it was sighted. He also argues that Peary's sightings of Crocker Land were telescopic mirages of the same landmass, dismissing the evidence that he made the story up. On rare occasions, the atmosphere can in fact behave like a telescope. For instance, in 1939 a captain of a schooner and his crew saw landmarks of Iceland as though at a distance of 25-30 nautical miles instead of the actual 335-350 statute miles [13].

Mirages are very common in the Arctic, and frequently involve multiple images lying above the object producing the mirage. These images are usually distorted and upside-down but sometimes the topmost image is the right way up, though it may be vertically compressed. However, neither Peary nor MacMillan saw an inverted image. Lamprecht suggests that the land in question may lie on the inward-curving surface of a polar opening, and that from Peary or Macmillan's vantage point the lower (inverted) image was blocked by the sharp curvature, even though it was seen from locations over 100 miles apart. To explain the enormous lateral extent of the mirages seen by MacMillan (though apparently not by Peary), Lamprecht speculates that the land had been magnified horizontally. Nevertheless, for the mirage to extend over a third or more of the horizon, without any noticeable degradation in brightness, the land itself would still have to be enormous.

Lamprecht believes that Cook's photo of Bradley Land may also be a telescopic mirage, probably of the easternmost extension of Crocker Land, which he thinks is located on the earth's outer surface, but is being covered up because it lies too close to the polar hole. He thinks that Keenan Land could also be a telescopic mirage of the same gigantic polar continent (seen at a distance of over 900 miles!), but that this is probably not true of Sannikov Land given the direction in which it was sighted. He believes that Sannikov Land may lie further away than was originally thought and that the Russians may be keeping it under wraps because it lies too close to the polar hole (though this is difficult to understand from his map -- see below) [14].



**The Missing Polar Continent**  
Artist: Billy Baty

How plausible are such stories of a vast, international, perfectly leak-proof conspiracy to conceal the existence of a polar land, a polar opening, and a hollow earth? Given the widespread belief in the possibility of a large polar continent in the early 20th century, if any land *were* sighted why would it immediately have been hushed up? After all, if it were lying half-within a reasonably large polar opening, this unexpected fact would not be immediately obvious, and it is hard to see why the military would immediately impose total secrecy.

Despite the large number of military and government personnel -- from several different countries -- who, over the years, must have been involved in perpetuating the alleged coverup and secretly exploring the supposed polar land(s) and opening, and perhaps even the earth's interior, not the slightest leak has ever taken place. And despite the fact that some of the countries involved were enemies during the Cold War, there have apparently been no territorial disputes and no wars over the inner world's resources. Such a conspiracy seems rather unlikely.

Lamprecht believes the polar land and hole might have been discovered in 1926, when Amundsen, Ellsworth, and Nobile made their transpolar flight from Spitzbergen to Alaska. But instead of publicizing their discoveries, they supposedly went straight to the military, and were sworn to secrecy. And even when a bitter dispute broke out between Amundsen and his Italian pilot, Nobile,

over credit for the flight, neither of them broke the silence about the supposed discovery of a polar hole.

It is interesting to note that the British Transarctic Expedition from Point Barrow in Alaska to Spitzbergen from February 1968 to April 1969, led by Wally Herbert, passed very close to the spot where Lamprecht places his hole. Lamprecht suggests that Herbert's slow speed may have been caused not by the need to make detours around pressure ridges, but by the need to make a detour around a polar opening. He even implies that Herbert is involved in a campaign of 'sophisticated deception' to conceal the hole's existence, and suggests that Herbert's 'nasty hatchet job' on Cook and Peary is aimed at discrediting the evidence for Crocker Land and Bradley Land. Needless to say, Lamprecht does not have a shred of concrete evidence to support this wild accusation.

If there *is* any land or a polar opening in the region of the north pole, they would surely interfere with the drift of the pack ice. In this regard, Wally Herbert makes an interesting observation about his experience on the Transarctic Expedition:

We began to feel there must be some obstruction along the imaginary line which describes a circle around the Pole at a radius of 260 miles -- a hump, perhaps, over which ice drifting north could not pass. No less than four times since the end of October [1968] we had drifted towards 86°N, coming at one time to within an hour's walk of that imaginary obstacle -- only to slip back again to 85°30'N, the latitude at which we had moved our hut after the first winter floe had broken up. We had hoped to establish our winter quarters at latitude 88°N, and be carried by the trans-polar drift stream across the Pole. Had this plan materialized, it would have left us with less than 600 miles to sledge to make landfall on Spitzbergen. But we had failed to get farther north than 85° before we had had to turn back and return to our summer floe. And the winter drift, which we had expected to transport us to latitude 87°N, longitude 140°W by 1 March 1969, had instead carried us 130 miles off course to the east.

Nansen had faced a similar problem during his epic drift in the *Fram*. After the first eighteen months, it had become evident that the thirteen-man crew of the *Fram* were unlikely to come closer to the Pole than 300 miles unless they left the warmth and safety of the ship and set out on foot. [15]

Although it is often said that the Arctic Ocean and seafloor have been thoroughly explored, it should be borne in mind that this ocean is one and a half times the size of the USA. So the possibility of a small opening, or island with tunnel, having gone undiscovered cannot be absolutely ruled out. As far as the possibility of a 'coverup' is concerned, it is worth noting that according to some mystical and esoteric traditions, certain sacred areas of the earth are protected and concealed by the exercise of *occult* power (see part 4, section 2).

#### **4. Flights of fancy**

The south geographic pole was first reached on 14 December 1911 by the Norwegian explorer Roald Amundsen. On 17 January 1912 it was reached again, via a different route, by a British team led by Captain Scott, who was distressed to find Amundsen's flag already there. On their return journey, all five members of the team perished during a blizzard.

Hollow-earthers have not been able to find many anomalies in Antarctica to explain in terms of a polar entrance to the earth's hollow interior. Some have argued that the southern opening is smaller than the northern one, or that it is completely blocked with ice. No modern hollow-earther argues that there is an opening centred on the south pole itself; the south pole is clearly a single point that can be reached by different routes, situated on a plateau with an elevation of 10,000 feet. Since 1956 there has been a permanently manned scientific base there.

In 1929 Richard E. Byrd became the first man to fly over the south pole; unlike his northern polar flight, this one aroused no major controversy! However, Byrd went on to lead several major expeditions to Antarctica, collecting valuable scientific information and flying over vast reaches of the continent, mapping its coast and mountain ranges. Some hollow-earthers have devoted a lot of time to distorting his findings and statements to support the idea of large polar openings.

In 1959 F. Amadeo Giannini published an extremely weird book entitled *Worlds Beyond the Poles*, in which he put forward his theory that the earth was linked to the moon and planets by a continuous land surface! He quoted a radio announcement supposedly made by Byrd from his arctic base in February 1947: 'I'd like to see that land beyond the Pole. That area beyond the Pole is the center of the great unknown' [1]. He claimed that on this northern polar flight, Byrd had flown 1700 miles 'beyond the earth' before returning to his base, and had passed over

iceless land and lakes, and mountains where foliage was abundant. Moreover, a brief newspaper account of the flight held that a member of the admiral's crew had observed a monstrous greenish-hued animal moving through the underbrush of that land beyond the Pole. [2]

Giannini interpreted the 'land beyond the pole' to be celestial land connecting the earth with the moon and other planets!

His story about Byrd's 1947 flight was repeated in the December 1959 issue of *Flying Saucers* in a sensational article written by the editor, Ray Palmer, who used it to support the hollow-earth theory. Palmer claimed that Byrd must have flown part-way into the earth's hollow interior, and that this truth had been covered up. He also argued that flying saucers came from within the earth.

There was one small problem with the story about Byrd: in February 1947 he was officially in the *Antarctic*, not the Arctic! He was Officer in Charge of the huge US Navy Antarctic Expedition, Operation Highjump, involving 13 ships manned by 4000 men. According to his article on the expedition in *The National*

*Geographic* (October 1947), Byrd arrived in Little America on 29 January 1947. On 15 February two planes, one of them piloted by Byrd, flew to the south pole, and then into the 'mystery land beyond the pole', as Byrd calls it. They flew about 100 miles to latitude 88°30'S, then turned eastward until they reached the 45th east meridian, when they turned back to Little America. Altogether they surveyed nearly 10,000 square miles of 'the country beyond the pole'. According to Byrd, all they saw there was a 'rolling white desert from horizon to horizon'. Byrd says that this flight from the base and back covered 1800 miles and took 12 hours. They evacuated Little America on 23 February and arrived back in the US on 14 April.

Some of Ray Palmer's readers pointed out these facts to him, and in the February 1960 issue of *Flying Saucers* he said that in his opinion the flight in question was into the opening at the *south* pole, and that Giannini had falsified the north-pole flight. Giannini, however, stuck to his guns, and claimed that in 1947 Byrd had flown to the Arctic after leaving the Antarctic! He even claimed that the New York Office of US Naval Research had allowed him to transmit a radio message of godspeed to Admiral Byrd at his arctic base! Giannini asserted that Byrd's north-pole flight was reported by the *New York Times* and several other publications until censorship was imposed from Washington. Palmer says that his readers turned every library in the country upside down but found nothing to confirm the north-pole flight [3]. So either Giannini was a blatant liar or he suffered from a highly confused and unbalanced state of mind. Another serious problem with the supposed north-pole flight is that while February is summer in Antarctica, it is winter in the Arctic -- and perpetual darkness does not provide ideal conditions for a flight to the north pole, or for sighting 'a monstrous greenish-hued animal moving through the underbrush'!

In 1955/56 Byrd led another huge expedition to Antarctica, known as Operation Deepfreeze. In his book, Giannini quoted the following radio announcement: 'On January 13 [1956] members of the United States expedition accomplished a flight of 2,700 miles from the base at McMurdo Sound, which is 400 miles west of the South Pole, and penetrated a land extent of 2,300 miles beyond the pole' [4]. Byrd's account of the expedition in *The National Geographic* (August 1956) states that in 10 flights from the McMurdo Sound base, between 3 and 14 January, US Navy long-range planes observed approx. 800,000 square miles of Antarctica previously unseen by human eyes. On 8 January Byrd flew from McMurdo Sound over the 'area of inaccessibility' in the heart of East Antarctica, and then to the south pole. By the time he got back he had flown 2310 miles in just over 11 hours.

Palmer and other hollow-earthers assumed that Byrd flew 2300 miles beyond the south pole *in one direction*, and pointed out that this would be beyond Antarctica -- unless it had been into a polar opening! But it is clear that when Byrd speaks of 'the mysterious land beyond the pole', he simply means the unexplored part of the Antarctic continent, 'beyond' the south pole from the point of view of the US base on the Ross Ice Shelf.

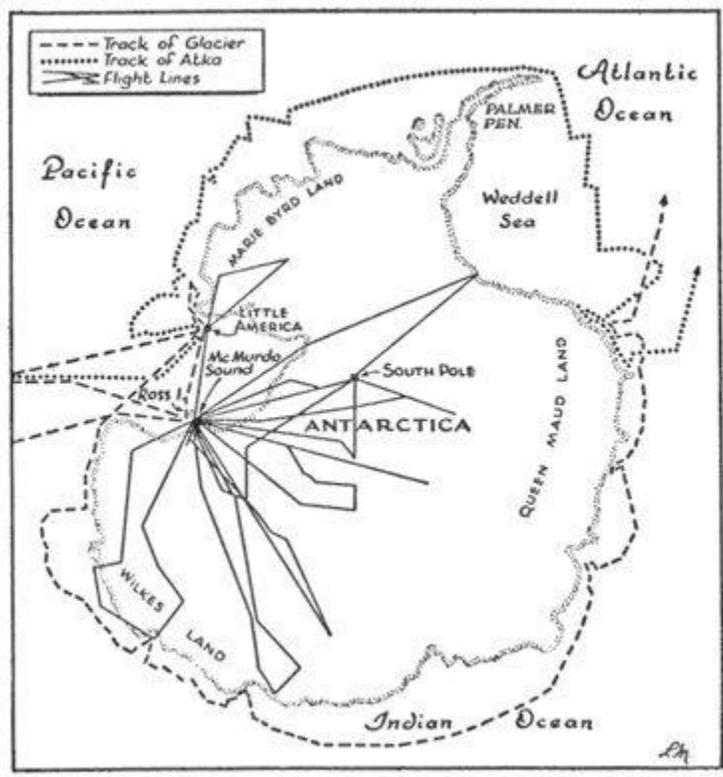
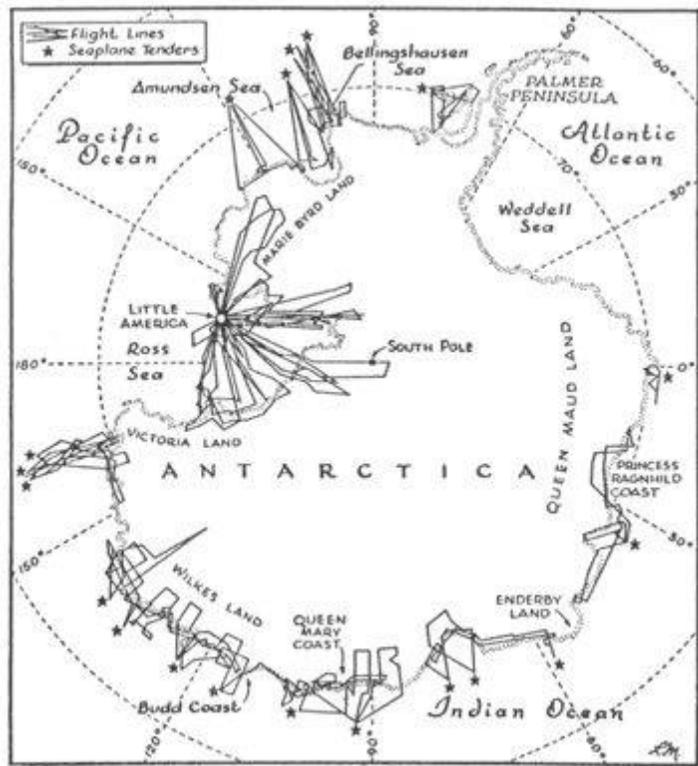


Figure. Flights made during the 1947 and 1956 expeditions to Antarctica [5].

The nonsense spread about Byrd's expeditions reached its climax in the publication of the 'secret' diary of his supposed 1947 flight beyond the north (!) pole [6]. It records how, as Byrd draws nearer to the pole, he passes over green valleys and sees an animal resembling a mammoth. Then suddenly three flying saucers marked with swastikas appear from nowhere and cause his plane to land by exercising a mysterious force. Byrd is escorted by two tall, blond, handsome men with German accents to a wise, aged man called the Master, who informs Byrd that he has passed into the inner world of the Arianni. The Master tells him that surface humanity must cease tampering with atomic power or suffer a new Dark Age of destruction. 'Byrd' also records that on returning to the outer world, he was ordered by top security forces to remain silent. Remarkably, there are still a few hollow-earthers who take this piece of silliness seriously.

During the US Navy's 1947 exploration of Antarctica, a number of ice-free areas were found with fresh-water lakes amidst brown, barren rock hills [7]. The most remarkable of them, situated near the Queen Mary Coast of Wilkes Land in southeastern Antarctica, was entirely free of ice over at least 300 square miles -- Admiral Byrd called this 'the most surprising discovery of the expedition'. The lake contained countless billions of green, blue-green, red, and brown algae. The favoured explanation was that rock areas exposed by a retreating glacier or by prevailing winds would absorb a great deal of heat in the summer months of perpetual daylight, and this would slowly be reradiated. Subterranean heat sources were suspected in some cases. The German antarctic expedition to Queen Maud Land in 1938-39 also made some surprising discoveries, including a 'group of low-lying hills sprinkled with many lakes and completely free of ice and snow', resembling the barren hot springs region of Iceland [8]. However, none of this constitutes serious evidence for a southern polar opening.

Jan Lamprecht presents a couple of extremely tenuous arguments for openings at both the north and south poles [9]. He argues that long-delayed radio echoes might result from radio waves entering the earth's interior through a polar hole, bouncing around inside the earth, and then exiting again. And he suggests that the movement of air into and out of polar holes might explain certain meteorological phenomena, such as strange clouds sighted in Britain and America. He also refers to the fact that after the Chernobyl nuclear power plant accident in April 1986, scientists discovered a high concentration of radioactive fallout 38 km from the south pole, deposited in late 1987 or early 1988, some 20 months earlier. It is known that radioactive fallout from nuclear tests in the northern hemisphere takes 20 months to reach the south pole. However, Lamprecht says that this is the only spot in the southern hemisphere where Chernobyl fallout has been found, and believes that since the radioactive material was not detected crossing the equator, it must have travelled into the north-pole opening and out of the south-pole opening.

## 5. Auroras and the poles

The auroras seen in the polar regions are one of nature's most beautiful and mysterious phenomena. From space the aurora appears as a diffuse ring surrounding the polar regions, roughly centred on the geomagnetic pole. From the ground it can take the form of luminous arcs, bands, and patches, and at its most dramatic it appears as a shimmering, multicoloured curtain of light, rippling and swirling, everywhere broken up into spikes and streamers moving across the sky -- apparitions that the Vikings called 'the spears of Odin'. Auroras are generally aligned along the direction of the local magnetic field.

As William Corliss points out, even 'normal' auroras have not yielded up all their mysteries:

Auroras are loosely associated with solar activity and geomagnetic storms, so we surmise that gusts of electrically charged particles emitted by the sun (the solar wind) help in some way to set fire to the polar heavens. But beyond these generalities, there is much we do not understand. [1]

He adds that abnormal auroras, such as auroras near the earth's surface and auroras with curious geometries, 'reveal even deeper levels of ignorance about one of Nature's most spectacular manifestations'.





**Figures.** The aurora borealis [2].

The standard explanation is that auroral light is produced by a high-vacuum electrical discharge powered by the sun [3]. 98% of the charged particles (mainly electrons and protons) reaching the earth from the sun are deflected by the earth's magnetic field, while the rest manage to enter the comet-shaped magnetosphere -- though exactly where and how is unclear -- and are then stored in some unknown way. The particles that produce the auroras are believed to emanate from the plasma sheet inside the earth's magnetotail. They are accelerated to speeds near one-fifth that of light (200 times their original speed) -- again by some unknown mechanism -- and are steered by the magnetic field to the polar regions. Here they descend into the atmosphere and generate the aurora when they collide with and ionize oxygen and nitrogen atoms in the ionosphere, at heights from over 900 km to about 70 km. Because the ions are in an excited state, they emit radiation of various wavelengths, creating the characteristic colours of the aurora (yellow-green, blue, and red or purplish-red).

In *The Aurora Watcher's Handbook*, Neil Davis writes:

Amazingly enough, auroral scientists still do not understand why aurora occurs in discrete auroral forms instead of as a diffuse glow across a broad region of the sky. The reason somehow has to be bound up in the way matter in the plasma state behaves . . . [4]

Scientists believe that most of the universe is in the plasma state (the fourth state of matter), a plasma being an ionized gas, i.e. a gas in which at least some atoms have dissociated into positive ions and free electrons. The entire region from the centre of the sun to the bottom of the earth's ionosphere is said to be in the plasma state. Scientists acknowledge that they still have much to learn about plasmas. Indeed, theosophy implies that what is currently labelled 'plasma' sometimes includes higher states of matter.

Scientists have suggested mechanisms to explain auroral motions and shape changes. A major factor is believed to be the warping of the incoming particle streams by attendant magnetic and electric fields, but it is thought that additional mechanisms may be operating. The cause of the variation in the brightness of auroras and in the general level of activity over periods of several minutes is unknown.

The auroral breakup is the most active and spectacular part of a moderate to large auroral display. It is generally followed by a 'pulsating aurora', far weaker and less bright, consisting of patches of light blinking on and off in a regular pattern ranging from 0.1 sec to over 20 sec. This activity may continue for the rest of the night. Such pulsations sometimes overlies the stronger auroral activity too. The cause of these pulsations is unknown, but they are usually accompanied by geomagnetic pulsations.

Auroras in the northern hemisphere tend to be brighter than those in the southern hemisphere. Auroral displays in the two hemispheres are often mirror images of each other, but sometimes this conjugacy fails altogether, especially at higher latitudes. A startling finding is that pulsating auroras, on the other hand, are always exactly synchronous at opposite ends of the earth; they vary in brightness at exactly the same times within a fraction of a second, despite the fact that they are only quasi-periodic and have a strong random element. This points to a common, as yet unidentified cause, perhaps located in the equatorial plane, equidistant from the two poles.

Low-level (less than 60 km) and ground-level auroras are supposed to be impossible, as incoming particles should not have enough energy to penetrate that far into the atmosphere. However, there are very reliable reports of such phenomena. In addition to low-level auroras, evidence that terrestrial electricity may sometimes be discharged from the earth into the atmosphere during auroral displays includes the fact that some auroras tend to follow coastlines, the odours of ozone, sulphur, and/or 'electricity' detected in conjunction with low-level and high active auroras, and the surface electric effects associated with auroras [5]. Also anomalous is the fact that geomagnetic storms and auroras sometimes appear to correlate with thunderstorms, clouds, and atmospheric pressure [6].

Charged particles from the sun should not have enough energy to affect the weather, though some scientists think auroras somehow act as a trigger.

Another puzzling phenomenon is auroral sound -- swishing, rushing, crackling, and hissing sounds sometimes heard during auroral displays [7]. Current theory places auroral displays so high that the near-vacuum of the atmosphere should not transmit audible sound effectively. Moreover, several minutes should elapse between seeing the aurora and hearing sound, yet auroral sound tends to synchronize to some extent with auroral motion, suggesting that conventional sound generation and transmission are out of the question, except perhaps in the case of genuine low-level auroras. Theories include direct perception of electromagnetic radiation from the aurora as sound, electrical discharge at the earth's surface induced by the aurora, and very-low-frequency waves generated by solar-wind particles acting on transducers such as hair.

Although auroras are more intensive during the highs of the 11-year solar cycle, not every solar flare triggers an aurora. It appears that while the sun feeds charged particles to the earth, the earth itself somehow controls the aurora. There is a certainly reason to doubt that the aurora is caused solely by charged particles from the sun. An alternative theory, proposed in the mid-20th century, is that the aurora is not caused primarily by solar particles but by electric currents originating in the earth which flow to the north and south magnetic polar regions and are then inducted to the atmosphere, where they ionize the gases in the higher, more rarefied layers of the atmosphere, producing the aurora. Finally, the electricity returns to the earth in lower latitudes, forming a continuous circulation of electricity through all parts of the crust and atmosphere. This theory readily allows for auroras to be produced in the lower atmosphere when atmospheric conditions allow [8].

Neil Davis explains that there is still some uncertainty as to how the auroral light is generated:

Direct excitation by particle impact is a certainty, but some observations suggest that other processes may also be operating. These may involve heating by electric fields and interactions between ionized atmospheric constituents and various types of electromagnetic waves that pervade the medium. Questions still remain about all the processes that go into producing two of the aurora's brightest and most simple emissions, the oxygen red and green lines at 6300 Å and 5577 Å, and the cause of the 'enhanced aurora' remains a mystery. [9]

Auroral displays are sometimes accompanied by magnetic and electric disturbances, but not always. A possibility ignored today is that there are also subtler processes at work. Baron von Reichenbach in the 19th century and Wilhelm Reich in the 20th century argued that auroras partly result from the luminating properties of ethereal energy-substances pervading the atmosphere [10]. Reichenbach called this subtler substance odyle, and Reich called it orgone; both became convinced of its existence in the course of numerous experiments. Aurora-like glows can be produced in high-vacuum tubes that have been charged

in an orgone accumulator and are simply stroked with the hand; no electrical excitation is involved here.

In 1716 Sir Edmund Halley (of Halley's Comet fame) suggested that some of the luminous atmosphere lighting the inner shells in the earth's hollow interior might be escaping through the much thinner crust at the poles, thereby producing the auroras. Lyon and Sherman believed that the earth's more highly developed interior world generated its own aural light, and that the auroras in the polar regions were largely caused by ethereal elements emanating from the interior world and emerging through polar openings [11].

Captain John Symmes, William Reed, and Marshall Gardner also invoked polar openings in their explanations of the auroras, but their views cannot be taken seriously: Symmes claimed that the auroras were caused by the sun's rays reflecting off the internal oceans; Reed argued that the aurora was due to the reflection on the clouds, ice, and snow of burning volcanoes and prairie or forest fires in the earth's interior; and Gardner argued that the aurora was caused by rays of light from the inner sun shining out of the large polar openings but being modified by clouds and other conditions of the inner and outer atmospheres. Jan Lamprecht speculates that charged particles from the outer sun are accelerated by circling repeatedly through the inner earth via polar openings some 200 miles across, and suggests that the electrons involved in pulsating auroras originate in the pulsating inner sun and are expelled through the polar holes.

According to theosophy [12], the aurora borealis and aurora australis are not merely electric and magnetic displays but are manifestations of the subtler psychomagnetic vitality of the earth. They are intimately linked with the sun, especially the sunspots, and are also connected with inrushes and outrushes of different types of monads or consciousness-centres both to and from our globe. Like earthquakes, the auroral discharges in one of their functions dissipate what would otherwise become an overaccumulation of magnetic and electric energy within the earth.

The magnetism reaching us from the sun -- physical, astral, and mental -- is said in theosophy to enter the earth in the region of the north pole. Part of it then passes directly from pole to pole through the centre of the earth, while other parts sweep over its surface from north to south, either meridionally or diagonally. At the south pole, some of it streams outwards into space and ultimately returns to the sun, while the rest returns to the north pole, either through the earth's interior or over its surface, and is then sent forth again. Clearly, known physical particles such as electrons and protons, along with photons (packets of electromagnetic energy), cannot pass through a solid earth. This would not apply, however, to neutrinos and more etheric energy-substances.

G. de Purucker says that the sun is both the heart and brain of its kingdom. If you look upon it as the heart for an instant, it receives the influxes of the rivers of lives, the circulations of the solar system, in its north pole. They pass through

the heart of the sun, are cleansed and washed and leave at the south pole of the sun. Precisely as our earth and every other planet have each its receptor at the north pole, and its ejector or vent at the south pole.

He then refers to the Greek legend of Eolus and the cave of the winds, in which the cave stands for the earth, and the winds are the winds of the spirit, the circulations of the cosmos. The cave had two 'gates': the gate of horn in the north, through which the gods mainly descend but also ascend, and the gate of ivory at the south, out of which go the hordes of men.

In other words, the earth feeds itself physically, magnetically, psychically, spiritually, through the north pole. The currents sweep through the earth -- every word here is worth a volume -- and leave by the south pole. So it is with the sun. That is the way the sun feeds its family: just as the heart feeds the body. It sends out its blood through the south pole, as it were, and after the circulation around the body has taken place, it receives it in again at the north pole. [13]

## References

### 1. The open polar sea

[1] W.R. Corliss (comp.), *Neglected geological anomalies*, Glen Arm, MD: Sourcebook Project, 1990, pp. 118-9; W.R. Corliss (comp.), *Science frontiers: Some anomalies and curiosities of nature*, Glen Arm, MD: Sourcebook Project, 1994, p. 204.

[2] Wally Herbert, *Across the top of the world: The British trans-arctic expedition*, London: Longmans, 1969, p. 17.

[3] 'Arctic', *Encyclopaedia britannica*, CD-ROM, 1994-2000.

[4] *Neglected geological anomalies*, pp. 114-5.

[5] Jan Lamprecht, *Hollow planets: A feasibility study of possible hollow worlds*, Austin, TX: World Wide Publishing, 1998, p. 399 (<http://www.hollowplanets.com>).

### 2. The north pole controversy

[1] 'Arctic', *Encyclopaedia britannica*, CD-ROM, 1994-2000.

[2] Jan Lamprecht, *Hollow planets: A feasibility study of possible hollow worlds*, Austin, TX: World Wide Publishing, 1998, pp. 362-5.

[3] Robert M. Bryce, *Cook & Peary: The polar controversy, resolved*, Mechanicsburg, PA: Stackpole Books, 1997, pp. 1101-3.

[4] Wally Herbert, *The noose of laurels: The discovery of the north pole*, London: Hodder & Stoughton, 1989, p. 260.

[5] *Ibid.*, p. 308.

[6] *Cook & Peary*, p. 879.

[7] *Ibid.*, pp. 795-844.

[8] *The noose of laurels*, pp. 298, 331-8.

[9] Sheldon S.R. Cook, 'Reflections on the polar "noose of laurels" 1909-1999', *Polar Priorities*, vol. 19, September 1999, pp. 13-37.

[10] *Cook & Peary*, pp. 861-9, 910-1.

[11] *Ibid.*, pp. 881-2, 890-900, 969-75.

[12] *Ibid.*, p. 844.

[13] 'Richard E. Byrd', *Encyclopaedia britannica*, CD-ROM, 1994-2000; *Cook & Peary*, pp. 1115-6.

### **3. Polar land coverup?**

[1] Robert M. Bryce, *Cook & Peary: The polar controversy, resolved*, Mechanicsburg, PA: Stackpole Books, 1997, pp. 266-7.

[2] *Ibid.*, p. 885.

[3] Jan Lamprecht, *Hollow planets: A feasibility study of possible hollow worlds*, Austin, TX: World Wide Publishing, 1998, pp. 417, 429.

[4] *Cook & Peary*, p. 570.

[5] Wally Herbert, *The noose of laurels: The discovery of the north pole*, London: Hodder & Stoughton, 1989, p. 197.

[6] *Cook & Peary*, pp. 407-8.

[7] *The noose of laurels*, pp. 317-9.

[8] *Cook & Peary*, pp. 884-5, 1105.

[9] *Ibid.*, pp. 893-4.

[10] *The noose of laurels*, pp. 319-20.

[11] *Cook & Peary*, p. 886.

[12] *Hollow planets*, pp. 434-42, 485-95, 499-500.

[13] William H. Hobbs, 'A remarkable example of polar mirage', *Science*, vol. 90, pp. 513-4, 1939; W.R. Corliss (comp.), *Rare halos, mirages, anomalous rainbows and related electromagnetic phenomena*, Glen Arm, MD: Sourcebook Project, 1984, pp. 143-5.

[14] *Hollow planets*, p. 493.

[15] Wally Herbert, *Across the top of the world: The British trans-arctic expedition*, London: Longmans, 1969, p. 152.

#### 4. Flights of fancy

[1] F. Amadeo Giannini, *Worlds beyond the poles: Physical continuity of the universe* (1959), Mokelumne Hill, CA: Health Research, 1977, p. 13.

[2] *Ibid.*, p. 151.

[3] Raymond Bernard, *Flying saucers from the earth's interior*, Mokelumne Hill, CA: Health Research, n.d., pp. 48-9, 84-5; Walter Kafton-Minkel, *Subterranean worlds: 100,000 years of dragons, dwarfs, the dead, lost races & UFOs from inside the earth*, Port Townsend, WA: Loompanics Unlimited, 1989, p. 196.

[4] *Worlds beyond the poles*, p. 14.

[5] Joscelyn Godwin, *Arktos: The polar myth in science, symbolism, and nazi survival*, Grand Rapids, MI: Phanes Press, 1993, p. 128.

[6] *The missing diary of Admiral Richard E. Byrd*, New Brunswick, NJ: Abelard Productions, 1990; <http://www.v-j-enterprises.com/byrdiar.html>.

[7] Richard E. Byrd, 'Our Navy explores Antarctica', *The National Geographic Magazine*, October 1947, pp. 429-522 (Plate VIII, and pp. 475, 498-500).

[8] *The polar myth in science, symbolism, and nazi survival*, p. 126.

[9] Jan Lamprecht, *Hollow planets: A feasibility study of possible hollow worlds*, Austin, TX: World Wide Publishing, 1998, chs. 11, 12, pp. 500-3.

#### 5. Auroras and the poles

[1] W.R. Corliss (comp.), *Lightning, auroras, nocturnal lights, and related luminous phenomena*, Glen Arm, MD: Sourcebook Project, 1982, p. 7.

[2] The Aurora Page,  
<http://www.geo.mtu.edu/weather/aurora/images/aurora/jan.curtis>.

[3] 'Atmosphere', *Encyclopaedia britannica*, CD-ROM, 1994-2000; Neil Davis, *The aurora watcher's handbook*, Fairbanks, AK: University of Alaska Press, 1992.

[4] *The aurora watcher's handbook*, p. 173.

[5] *Lightning, auroras, nocturnal lights*, pp. 16-21, 44-7; W.R. Corliss (comp.), *Science frontiers: Some anomalies and curiosities of nature*, Glen Arm, MD: Sourcebook Project, 1994, p. 255; *Science Frontiers*, no. 119, Sep.-Oct. 1998, no. 127, Jan.-Feb. 2000; *Anomaly Register*, no. 1, Feb. 1997.

[6] *Lightning, auroras, nocturnal lights*, pp. 24-6, 28-30, 39-41; *The aurora watcher's handbook*, pp. 179-81; Jan Lamprecht, *Hollow planets: A feasibility study of possible hollow worlds*, Austin, TX: World Wide Publishing, 1998, pp. 334-9.

[7] W.R. Corliss (comp.), *Earthquakes, tides, unidentified sounds and related phenomena*, Glen Arm, MD: Sourcebook Project, 1983, pp. 169-76; Corliss, *Science frontiers*, p. 287; Harriet Williams, 'Sizzling skies', *New Scientist*, 6 January 2001, pp. 14-19; *The aurora watcher's handbook*, pp. 183-203.

[8] N.V. Hendricks and N.V. Hendricks, Jr., *Polar-electrical theory of the aurora borealis-australis and terrestrial magnetism*, Adrian, MI: Edwards Brothers, Inc., 1945.

[9] *The aurora watcher's handbook*, p. 174.

[10] *Reichenbach's letters on od and magnetism* (1852), Mokelumne Hill, CA: Health Research, 1964, pp. 78-83, 113-14; Wilhelm Reich, *Ether, god and devil: Cosmic superimposition*, New York: Farrar, Straus and Giroux, 1973, pp. 141, 239-47.

[11] M.L. Sherman and Wm.F. Lyon, *The hollow globe; or the world's agitator and reconciler. A treatise on the physical conformation of the earth* (1871), Mokelumne Hill, CA: Health Research, 1971, pp. 289-90.

[12] G. de Purucker, *Fountain-source of occultism*, Pasadena, CA: Theosophical University Press, 1974, pp. 306-7; H.P. Blavatsky, *The secret doctrine* (1888), Pasadena, CA: Theosophical University Press, 1977, 1:204-5.

[13] G. de Purucker, *Studies in occult philosophy*, Pasadena, CA: Theosophical University Press, 1973, pp. 321-2; *Fountain-source of occultism*, pp. 305-8. See [Theosophy and the hollow earth](http://ourworld.compuserve.com/homepages/dp5/hollow.htm), <http://ourworld.compuserve.com/homepages/dp5/hollow.htm>.

**David Pratt**

**May 2001**

**Part 4 of 4**

---

## Part 4: Mythology, Paradise, and the Inner World

1. [The Imperishable Sacred Land](#)
  2. [Shambhala](#)
  3. [A northern paradise](#)
  4. [Inner kingdoms](#)
- [References](#)
- 

### 1. The Imperishable Sacred Land

Theosophy teaches that a series of seven root-races or humanities will develop during the present fourth round of the earth's evolution. The first humanity is said to have appeared in the mid-Paleozoic, about 150 million years ago (according to the theosophical timescale), and we are currently in the fifth. Each lives on its own 'continent', a word referring not only to the main continental area where the evolution of a root-race takes place but also to *all the dry land* that exists during the life-period a particular root-race. Just as the root-races overlap, so parts of the continents of one root-race become incorporated into the continental system of the next [1].

The first continent is known as the Imperishable Sacred Land and is the most mysterious of the seven continents. It is said to be located in the region of the north pole.

This 'Sacred Land' . . . is stated never to have shared the fate of the other continents; because it is the only one whose destiny it is to last from the beginning to the end of the Manvantara throughout each Round. It is the cradle of the first man and the dwelling of the last *divine* mortal, chosen as a *Shishta* for the future seed of humanity. Of this mysterious and sacred land very little can be said, except, perhaps, according to a poetical expression in one of the Commentaries, that the 'polestar has its watchful eye upon it, from the dawn to the close of the twilight of "a day" of the GREAT BREATH' [In India called 'The Day of Brahma.']. [2]

The statement that the first continent never sinks or perishes is repeated many times, and this characteristic distinguishes it from the other continents [3].

The first continent surrounded and included the north pole and extended somewhat southwards from the pole in seven different zones, like the leaves of a lotus. These zones included Greenland, Spitzbergen, Sweden, Norway, and Siberia, together with other former land areas in the far north that have since been submerged. The central locality of the first continent was right at the north pole. H.P. Blavatsky writes:

If, then, the teaching is understood correctly, the first continent which came into existence capped over the whole North Pole like one unbroken crust, and remains so to this day, beyond that inland sea which seemed like an unreachable *mirage to the few arctic travellers* who perceived it. [4]

G. de Purucker drew attention to the phrase 'If, then, the teaching is understood correctly', and pointed out that Blavatsky was not permitted to give out all she had been taught [5].

If the earth is hollow, as Blavatsky's review of *The Hollow Globe* by Lyon and Sherman implies, then the first continent could refer to two different things: the polar land on the outer surface of the earth, and the sacred central land or 'inner circle' in the earth's interior, which will continue to exist until the earth reaches the end of its life-period. Likewise, terms such as 'the blessed land of eternal light and summer' and 'the land of the eternal sun'[6] could refer either to the polar land at a time when the earth's axis was more or less upright and the polar regions were in sunlight, or to the inner central land if the earth's interior is self-luminous or contains a central sun.

## 2. Shambhala

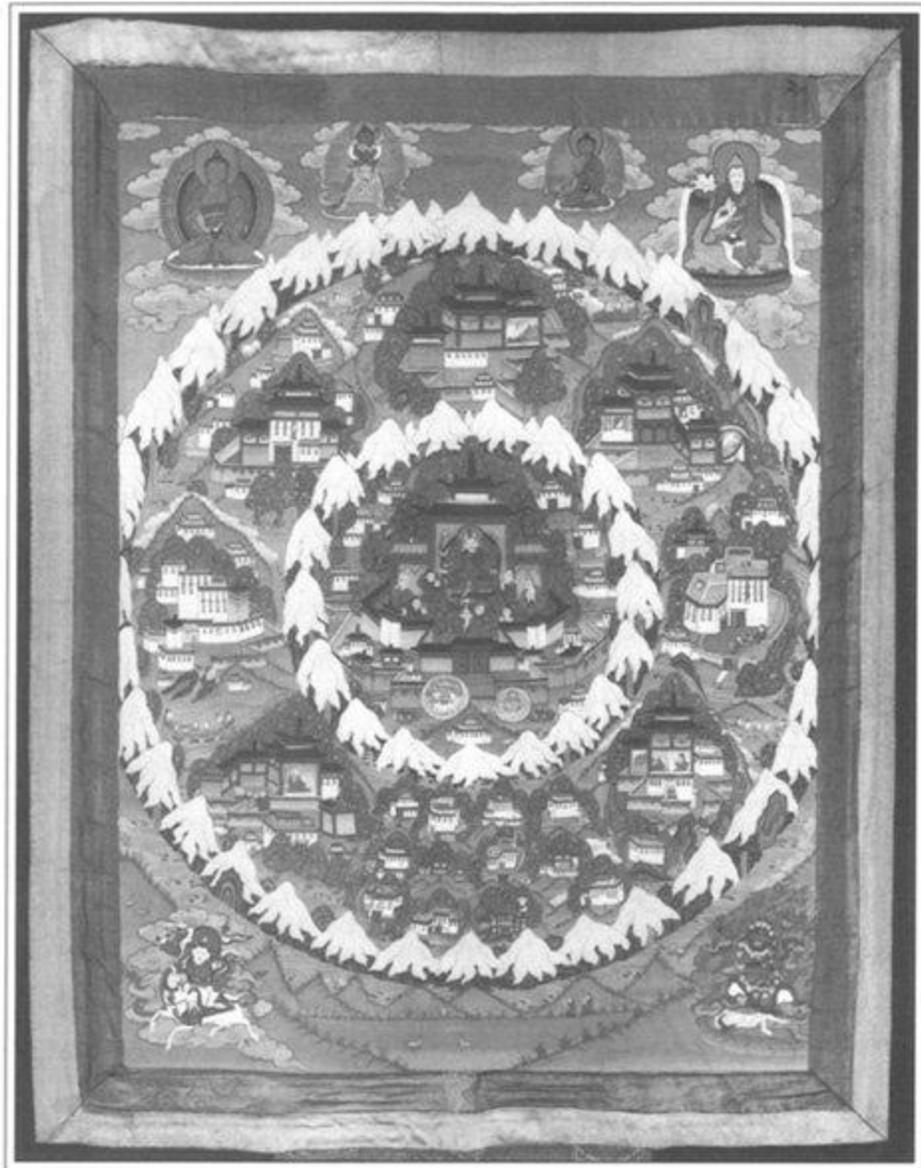
Tibetan sacred texts speak of a mystical kingdom called Shambhala, hidden behind snow peaks somewhere north of Tibet, where the most sacred Buddhist teachings -- the Kalachakra or Wheel of Time -- are preserved. It is prophesied that a future king of Shambhala will come with a great army to free the world from barbarism and tyranny, and will usher in a golden age. Similarly, the Hindu Puranas say that a future world redeemer -- the kalki-avatara, the tenth and final manifestation of Vishnu -- will come from Shambhala. Both the Hindu and Buddhist traditions say it contains a magnificent central palace radiating a powerful, diamondlike light.

The mythical paradise of Shambhala is known under many different names: It has been called the Forbidden Land, the Land of White Waters . . . , the Land of Radiant Spirits, the Land of Living Fire, the Land of the Living Gods and the Land of Wonders. Hindus have known it as Aryavarsha, the land from which the Vedas come; the Chinese as Hsi Tien, the Western Paradise of Hsi Wang Mu, the Royal Mother of the West; the Russian Old Believers, a nineteenth-century Christian sect, knew it as Belovodye and the Kirghiz people as Janaidar. But throughout Asia it is best known by its Sanskrit name, Shambhala, meaning 'the place of peace, of tranquillity,' or as Chang Shambhala, northern Shambhala, the name Hindus use to distinguish it from an Indian town of the same name. . . . [A]t the end of his life the Chinese Taoist teacher Lao-Tzu, returned to Shambhala, although he called it Tebu Land. . . .

[I]t is regarded by most esoteric traditions as the true center of the planet, as the world's spiritual powerhouse and the heartland of a brotherhood of adepts

from every race and country who have been influential in every major religion, every scientific advance and every social movement in history. [1]

Buddhist texts say that Shambhala can be reached only by a long and difficult journey across a wilderness of deserts and mountains, and warn that only those who are called and have the necessary spiritual preparation will be able to find it; others will find only blinding storms, empty mountains, or even death. One text says that the kingdom of Shambhala is round, but it is usually depicted as an eight-petalled lotus blossom -- a symbol of the heart chakra. Indeed, an old Tibetan story states that 'The kingdom of Shambhala is in your own heart.' As Edwin Bernbaum points out, the guidebooks to Shambhala, whose puzzling directions are a mixture of realism and fantasy, can be read, on one level, as 'instructions for taking an inner journey from the familiar world of the surface consciousness through the wilds of the subconscious to the hidden sanctuary of the superconscious' [2].



**Figure.** The Land of Shambhala. In the centre are Mount Meru and the King's palace, surrounded by 8 petal-shaped regions with their 96 principalities.

Nevertheless, the idea that Shambhala is also located in the material world is firmly rooted in Tibetan tradition. Opinions on where the kingdom might lie, however, differ markedly. Some Tibetans think it might be in Tibet, perhaps in the Kunlun mountains; more point toward the region around Mongolia and Sinkiang province of China; but most believe that Shambhala is in Siberia or some other part of Russia. Some lamas believe it is hidden in the desolate, uninhabited wastes of the Arctic. According to Lama Kunga Rimpoche, 'Shambhala is probably at the North Pole, since the North Pole is surrounded by ice, and Shambhala is surrounded by ice mountains.' Finally, a few lamas believe that

Shambhala exists outside the earth on another planet or in another 'dimension' [3].

Bernbaum once had a dream of going with a guide to the north pole. As they approached the pole, the air became warmer and the snow cover thinner until there was only grassy tundra, flowers, and a balmy breeze. Finally they came to a round pond with a small island that had a pole right at the centre. He turned to his guide and protested, 'But this is impossible! This can't be the north pole; there's supposed to be ice and snow up here.' The guide merely pointed at the island and said with a smile, 'There's the pole.' Bernbaum related his dream to Lama Chopgye Trichen Rimpoche, who remarked: 'That may have been the entrance to Shambhala' [4].

The Russian artist, philosopher, and explorer Nicholas Roerich (1874-1947) travelled through China and Mongolia to the borders of Tibet in 1925-1928. During a conversation with a lama, he was told: 'Great Shambhala is far beyond the ocean. It is the mighty heavenly domain. It has nothing to do with our Earth. . . . Only in some places, in the Far North, can you discern the resplendent rays of Shambhala.' When pressed by Roerich, the lama conceded that the heavenly Shambhala had an earthly counterpart. Indeed, the expression 'the resplendent rays of Shambhala' seems to be a reference to the aurora that manifests in the polar region. But the lama also described Shambhala as a 'far-off valley', hidden in the midst of high mountains, with hot springs and rich vegetation.

The lama stated that the ruler of Shambhala is 'ever vigilant in the cause of mankind': he sees all the events of earth in his 'magic mirror' and 'the might of his thought penetrates into far-off lands'. He continued: 'Uncountable are the inhabitants of Shambhala. Numerous are the splendid new forces and achievements which are being prepared there for humanity.' The lama confirmed that messengers from Shambhala are at work in the world, and that even the ruler himself sometimes appears in human form. He stressed that the secrets of Shambhala are well guarded, and that it is impossible for anybody to reach Shambhala unless their karma is ready and they are called [5].

The modern theosophical tradition, too, recognizes that Shambhala is a real place:

Shambhala . . . , although no erudite Orientalist has yet succeeded in locating it geographically, is an actual land or district, the seat of the greatest brotherhood of spiritual adepts and their chiefs on earth today. From Shambhala at certain times in the history of the world, or more accurately of our own fifth root-race, come forth the messengers or envoys for spiritual and intellectual work among men.

This Great Brotherhood has branches in various parts of the world, but Shambhala is the center or chief lodge. We may tentatively locate it in a little-known and remote district of the high tablelands of central Asia, more particularly in Tibet. [6]

It is surrounded by an akashic veil of invisibility; and an army of airplanes might fly over it and see it not. All the armies of all the nations on earth might pass it by and not know that it existed. . . . It is quite an extensive tract of country. . . . [I]n it are gathered some of the most valuable records of the human race . . . There, surrounded by the greatest and most evolved human beings, the Silent Watcher of the Earth has his invisible abode. [7]

Shambhala, our 'spiritual home', is said in theosophy to comprise *two* localities on earth. One of them is 'situated in the highlands of Asia, somewhere to the westward of the meridian line passing through Lhasa' [8]. Long ago, this locality was a sacred island in a vast Central Asian inland sea, known as the 'abyss of learning' or 'sea of knowledge', and was accessible via subterranean passages. According to tradition, this place exists to this day as an oasis surrounded by the Gobi desert [9].

But there is also another holy locality, alluded to in all the great exoteric religions:

this spot is the summit of what in the Hindu Puranas is called Shveta-dvipa, Mount Meru or Sumeru. It is the north pole of the earth, so chosen not for its geographical qualities, if such there be, but on account of its astronomical position. . . . [I]t is the mystical north pole, geographically identical with the north pole of the earth, but mystically quite different . . . [10]

In other words, Shambhala, in one of its meanings, is the Sacred Imperishable Land. Theosophical literature also states that there is an even higher Shambhala located in the sun, and that all these different localities are inhabited by classes of entities with which the human race is spiritually and intellectually connected.

Bearing in mind that the Central Asian Shambhala is said to be protected by an 'akashic veil' which renders it invisible and impenetrable, it is interesting to note that in the review of *The Hollow Earth*, Blavatsky suggests that explorers may have been prevented from penetrating further north into what was then suspected to be an open polar sea by 'the exercise of some occult power'. This could be interpreted to mean that there is something in the northern polar region that is being concealed -- not by a military/government conspiracy, but by occult forces.

### **3. A northern paradise**

Traditions of a paradisiacal, primeval land in the far north are universal. Sometimes this sacred land is said to be located in the 'centre' or 'navel' of the earth. In one sense, this refers to the north pole, which appears to be in the 'centre' of the earth if the planet is viewed from above the pole. But clearly such expressions could also refer to the earth's interior. The northern paradise is often associated with a world tree, a world mountain or pillar from which four rivers emerge, and a world-engirdling serpent. The pillar, mountain, or tree links our own 'middle earth' with the upper and lower worlds [1]. All these symbolic

features can be interpreted on different levels -- terrestrial, astronomical, and spiritual.



**Figure.** The Scandinavian tree of life (Yggdrasil), growing on the cosmic mountain [2].

In Hindu mythology Meru\* is the mystical mountain at the centre of the world, where Indra, king of the gods, has his jewelled palace. Victoria LePage points out that 'Mount Meru is conceived of as the earth's navel as well as its central staff, its source of life and power spreading out from the central region to the eight outer zones, and from thence to the world' [3]. The symbolism here is derived from embryology: just as the embryo grows from the navel outwards, so does the earth. 'Meru' actually has several different meanings, including a mountain in Asia, the north geographical pole, the north celestial pole, the earth's spin axis, the world axis connecting earth to higher realms, and the cerebrospinal axis of the human body.

\*Like the Egyptians and the Akkadians, the Indians conceived of two opposed polar mounts: the arctic Meru, known as Sumeru (su = good, beautiful), was the dwelling of the gods, and the antarctic Meru, or Kumeru (ku = bad, miserable), was the dwelling of the demons.

Meru, the Olympus of the Indians, is said to be situated in the centre or navel of the earth. It was guarded by serpents, which 'watched the entrance to the realm of Secret Knowledge'. According to tradition, it was the 'land of bliss' of the earliest Vedic times. Occult teachings 'place it in the very centre of the North Pole, pointing it out as the site of the first continent on our earth, after the solidification of the globe' [4]. In the ancient astronomical text *Surya-Siddhanta* (12:34), Meru is described as 'passing through the middle of the earth-globe, and protruding on either side' [5]. H.P. Blavatsky says that 'Meru is *not* "the fabulous

mountain *in* the navel or centre of the earth," but its roots and foundations are in that navel, though it is in the far north itself. This connects it with the "central" land "that never perishes" . . .' [6].

Just as the human body contains a series of chakras, or subtle energy centres, linked by the sushumna, a central channel in the spinal cord, so there may be corresponding energy centres on and in the body of the earth. Shambhala is sometimes described as the main power centre, with auxiliary centres scattered about the globe [7]. In theosophy, the heart of mother earth is said to beat 'under the foot of sacred Shambhala', and we are told:

Occult teaching corroborates the popular tradition which asserts the existence of a fountain of life in the bowels of the earth and in the North Pole. It is the blood of the earth, the electro-magnetic current, which circulates through all the arteries; and which is said to be found stored in the 'navel' of the earth. [8]

This inner reservoir of physical and psychospiritual life-forces may correspond in one sense to the root-chakra (muladhara chakra) in the human body, situated at the base of the spine. From this viewpoint, Meru represents the central duct or path of terrestrial kundalini or shakti running through the earth [9].

Some Hebrew legends speak of a place called Luz -- an underground city near a sacred mountain called the 'abode of immortality'. An almond tree, named *luz* in Hebrew, grew near it, a hollow in its roots leading down to the underground centre. René Guénon saw this as another version of the archetypal mountain/tree/cave complex symbolizing Shambhala. He stated that the real significance of Luz is that it corresponds in planetary terms to the muladhara chakra, whose kabalistic name in Hebrew is *luz*. The name derives from a root word denoting that which is concealed, secret, and silent; it also connotes a kernel -- the innermost part of the almond. The most common iconographic depiction of Shambhala is similar to the four-spoked muladhara chakra, the subtle 'earth-centre' in the human body [10].

In his book *Paradise Found*, William Warren writes:

[T]he earliest inhabitants of the Tigro-Euphrates basin located 'the Centre of the Earth,' *not in their own midst*, but in a far-off land, of sacred associations, where 'the holy house of god' is situated, -- a land 'into the heart whereof man hath not penetrated;' a place underneath the 'overshadowing world-tree,' and beside the 'full waters.' No description could more perfectly identify the spot with the Arctic Pole of ancient Asiatic mythology. [11]

In *The Chaldean Account of Genesis*, we read: '[H]uman beings . . . the great gods created, and in the earth the gods created for them a dwelling. . . . [I]n the midst of the earth they grew up and became great, and increased in number, Seven kings, brothers of the same family . . .' Iranian, Indian, Chinese, Scandinavian, and Aztec literature also refer to this ambiguous location at 'the centre of the earth' [12].

The Japanese paradise was situated 'on the top of the globe' and at the same time 'at the centre of the earth'. It was called the 'island of the congealed drop'. Its first roof-pillar was the earth's axis, and over it was the pivot of the vault of heaven. Similarly, the Chinese terrestrial paradise, round in form, is described not only as at the centre of the earth, but also as directly under Shang-te's heavenly palace, which is declared to be in the polestar, and is sometimes called the 'palace of the centre'. The Egyptians located their Ta Neter, or land of the gods, in the extreme north [13]. Today there is an echo of these ancient traditions in the fact that children send notes to Santa Claus, or Father Christmas, in his 'wonderland' at the north pole, asking for gifts.

The Eskimos have legends that they came from a fertile land of perpetual sunshine in the north. They believe that after death the soul descends beneath the earth, first to an abode rather like purgatory, but good souls then descend further to a place of perfect bliss where the sun never sets [14]. In Psalm 48:2 of the Bible, Mount Zion is said to be 'in the far north', and in Ezekiel (28:13-14) Eden, 'the garden of God', is placed on the 'holy mountain of God'. In Hebrew tradition, the primeval Eden is sometimes said to be at the 'centre of the earth' [15].

According to the Hindu Kurma Purana, an island called Shveta-Dvipa, or White Island, lay in the northern sea, the paradisiacal homeland of great yogis possessing supreme wisdom and learning [16]. Blavatsky writes: 'According to Tibetan tradition the White Island is the only locality which escapes the general fate of other dwipas and can be destroyed by neither fire nor water, for -- it is the "eternal land" ' [17].

North of the Himalayas, possibly in the Tarim Basin, lay Uttarakuru or northern Kuru, a version of Shambhala which the Mahabharata describes as the blissful land of the sages towards which Arjuna, the warrior prince of the Bhagavad-Gita, travelled in search of enlightenment. It is described as a place of marvels where magic fruit trees yield the nectar of immortality. It is said to be one of four regions surrounding Mount Meru like the four petals of a lotus and to be the homeland of the siddhas, enlightened yogis famed for their miraculous powers [18].

Greek mythology speaks of a mysterious northern yet ever-springlike land called Hyperborea ('beyond the north wind'), situated beyond the mountains -- in some accounts situated under the north pole -- to which Apollo journeyed in his chariot of swans [19]. There the true 'omphalos' or navel of the earth was located. For the Orphics, the island of Electris, the seat of the gods, lies under the polestar in the furthest waters of Tethys [20]. The Mandeian Gnostics believed that an ideal earth, an earth of light peopled by a divine race of superhumans, was situated in the north, separated from our world by a high mountain of ice. It is said to exist 'between heaven and earth', and Henry Corbin concludes that it does not refer to the north of our globe but to the 'cosmic north', i.e. superphysical realms [21]. But, like Shambhala, it might also have an earthly counterpart.

The Avestan term 'Airyanem Vaejah' (Pahlavi: Eran-Vej) designates the cradleland of the Aryan-Iranians, located not in any of the earth's seven climates, but at the centre of the central zone, the eighth climate [22]. It was there that Yima, the 'first man', received the command to construct a *vara*, or enclosure, where the most highly developed humans, animals, and plants would be gathered in order to save them from the deadly winter unleashed by the demonic powers so that they might one day refurbish a transfigured world. This *vara* or paradise had a gate and luminescent windows which secreted an inner light within, for it was illuminated by both uncreated and created lights. Its various meanings include a subterranean sanctuary, an ark, and the human body [23].

Airyanem Vaejah, the 'primeval land of bliss', appears to be identical to Shveta-Dvipa, Mount Meru, the Sacred Imperishable Land, and Shambhala (in its several meanings) [24]. Blavatsky quotes Fargard 1:2 of the Vendidad, where 'we find Ahura-Mazda saying to Spitama "the most benevolent" -- that he made every land dear to its dwellers, since otherwise the "whole living world would have invaded the Airyana-Vaego" ' [25]. According to Fargard 2:40, 'The one thing missed there is the sight of the stars, the moon, and the sun, and a year seems only as a day' [26].

#### **4. Inner kingdoms**

As with the idea of a paradisiacal cradleland of humanity at the north pole, references to networks of caverns and tunnels and/or an inner world within the earth are commonplace in the world's religions, myths, legends, and folklore. The attributes assigned to the underworld range from heavenly to hellish, and its inhabitants likewise range from superhuman to subhuman. Myths and legends generally embody multiple levels of meaning, and the underworld can also refer to nonphysical planes of reality.

During his travels in Asia, Nicholas Roerich spent a lot of time studying local folklore, which included tales of lost tribes or subterranean dwellers.

In many places of Central Asia, they speak of the Agharti ['concealed', 'secret'], the subterranean people. In numerous beautiful legends they outline the same story of how the best people abandoned the treacherous earth and sought salvation in hidden countries where they acquired new forces and conquered powerful energies. [1]

While crossing the Karakorum pass, his Ladakhi guide said to him: 'Do you know that in the subterranean caves here many treasures are hidden and that in them lives a wonderful tribe which abhors the sins of the earth?'

And again when we approached Khotan the hoofs of our horses sounded hollow as though we rode above caves or hollows. Our caravan people called our attention to this, saying, 'Do you hear what hollow subterranean passages we are crossing? Through these passages, people who are familiar with them can reach far-off countries.' When we saw entrances of caves, our caravaners told us,

'Long ago people lived there; now they have gone inside; they have found a subterranean passage to the subterranean kingdom. Only rarely do some of them appear again on earth. . . .'

Great is the belief in the Kingdom of the subterranean people. Through all Asia, through the space of all deserts, from the Pacific to the Urals, you can hear the same wondrous tale of the vanished holy people. And even far beyond the Ural Mountains, the echo of the same tale will reach you. [2]

There is rumoured to be a vast underground network of caves and tunnels under the whole of Central Asia, with many passages radiating out from the spiritual hub of Shambhala [3]. According to popular belief, there are numerous secret subterranean passages beneath India, whose entrances are guarded by elementals which assume the shape of rocks or other natural features. For instance, Varanasi (Benares), whose ancient name is Kashi, is said to be connected by a tunnel to Gupta Kashi ('gupta' = secret, hidden), an underground city in the Himalayas, about 50 miles from Badrinath [4].

Mesoamerica and South America have long been rumoured to be honeycombed with long, mysterious tunnels, some of them running for hundreds of miles, from Columbia in the north through Peru and Bolivia to Chile in the south, and to the Amazon jungle in the east. Only a few sections of these tunnels have so far been discovered [5]. H.P. Blavatsky mentions an immense tunnel running from Cuzco to Lima in Peru, and then extending south into Bolivia [6]. In Egypt, a vast subterranean world is traditionally believed to extend from the catacombs of Alexandria to Thebes' Valley of the Kings. The subterranean crypts of Thebes were known as the serpent's catacombs, the serpent being a symbol of wisdom and immortality [7].

Many Native American peoples believe that their ancestors originated in a joyous subterranean realm, or took refuge in caverns to escape past cataclysms. The Cherokee Indians speak of a subterranean world much like our own, with mountains, rivers, trees, and people [8]. The Aztecs said their ancestors came from a land called Aztlan, and that after escaping its destruction they ended up in a cavern called Chicomoztoc, or the Seven Cavern Cities of Gold, where they lived before emerging to the surface world [9]. The Mexican demi-god Votan describes a subterranean passage, a 'snake's hole', which runs underground and terminates at the root of the heavens; he himself was allowed to enter it because he was a 'son of the snakes' [10].

The Hopi Indians hold their rituals in an underground chamber known as the kiva.

In the center of the kiva, on the altar level and directly below the roof opening, is the sunken fire pit in which a fire is lighted in the New Fire Ceremony . . . , for life began with fire. Next to it is the small hole in the floor called the *sipapuni*. Etymologically derived from the two words for 'navel' and 'path from,' the *sipapuni* thus denotes the umbilical cord leading from Mother Earth and symbolizes the path of man's Emergence from the previous underworld. . . . The ladder represents the reed up which man climbed during his Emergence . . . [11]

The Hopis believe there has been a succession of four worlds. The first world was destroyed by fire, the second by a poleshift, and the third by flooding. Some chosen people were saved from the disasters that destroyed the first two worlds by taking refuge underground, and some survived the destruction of the third world by being sealed inside hollow reeds. The Pima Indians speak of the emergence into our world being effected through a spiral hole that was bored up to the earth's surface [12].

Legends of ancestral origins in subterranean lands are also found in Africa and Australia. Australian aborigines believe their ancestors came up out of the ground, travelled about the country and created new tribes, then 'ultimately journeyed away beyond the confines of their territory, or went down into the ground again'. According to the native traditions of the Caroline Islands, Papua New Guinea, and Malaysia, a subterranean race of giants went underground in ancient times. Once inhabitants of the lost continent of Chamat, they will one day 'emerge and remake the world'. Natives of the Trobiand Islands believe that their ancestors emerged from a subterranean existence through a special hole. Tribes in Bengal and Burma also believe their ancestors emerged from a subterranean world [13].

In Hindu mythology there are many tales of the Nagas, a race of semi-divine serpent-people, who ruled a subterranean kingdom, Patala, filled with incredible wealth. Patala was said to be the lowest of the seven regions of the Indian underworld. These regions are collectively called Bila-svarga, the 'subterranean heaven', which is described as a place of great beauty. The sun and moon cannot be seen there, but the jewels decorating the hoods of the Nagas are said to emit an effulgence that illuminates the entire region of Bila-svarga. Few mortals were ever allowed to enter the lower world, but there were said to be many hidden entrances in the mountains of India and Kashmir [14]. In Tibet there is a major mystical shrine called Patala, which is said to lie above an ancient cavern and tunnel system, extending throughout the Asian continent and possibly beyond. The Nagas are related to the Rakshasas, an underworld race of 'demons', who possess a 'magical stone' or 'third eye' in the middle of the forehead.

In China, the Lung Wang (dragon kings) closely resemble the Nagas in many respects. They are said to dwell either in the 'celestial realm', i.e. the stars and planets, or beneath the surface of the earth. They, too, possess a 'magical pearl' in their foreheads, a mystical or divine eye or source of power. Like the Nagas, some of the entrances to their palaces or kingdoms can be found beneath lakes and rivers or behind waterfalls [15]. According to an ancient Chinese record, the Twelve Branches, all things began to germinate in the hidden recesses of the underworld. In the Ten Stems, it is said that at the ninth stem, light begins to nourish all things in the recesses below [16].

The Egyptian underworld or kingdom of the dead was called the Duat (or Tuat), ruled by Osiris [17]. Within the Duat were the Fields of Peace, which the Greeks equated with the Elysian Fields. In Old Kingdom times the Duat was

commonly supposed to be situated somewhere under the earth. In this airless, waterless, and lightless place dwelt both the blessed and the damned. The kingdom of Osiris was also placed in the west, where the dead sun-god of the day passed at night. In addition, the Duat denoted the sky region dominated by the constellations of Orion, Taurus, and Leo, and divided by the 'winding waterway' or Milky Way.

The Duat is sometimes described as the 'reversed world' or 'inverted precinct' [18], and in the Pyramid Texts we read: 'O Osiris the King, I am Isis; I have come into the middle of this earth, into the place where you are' [19]. Osiris was the Egyptian phoenix, which was 'the bringer of the life-giving essence, the *hiké*, a concept akin to our idea of magic, which the great cosmic bird carried to Egypt from a distant and magical land beyond the earthly world.' This was the 'Isle of Fire', 'the place of everlasting light beyond the limits of the world, where the gods were born or revived and whence they were sent into the world'. This is a reference to the Duat [20].

The Duat, or Hidden Place, was sometimes conceived as a completely enclosed Circle of the Gods, formed by the body of Osiris. At the head-point there was an opening to the skies symbolized by the goddess Nut, through which the imperishable star (symbolized by the celestial disk) could be reached (see below) [21].



**Figure.** The Duat.

The Egyptian god Aker was the 'chief of the gate of the Abyss', of Aker, which was the netherworld but also the 'realm of the sun' [22].

The Celtic Otherworld was variously known as the Land of the Dead, the Land of the Living, the Land of Many Colours, the Promised Land, the Delightful Plain, the Land of Youth, the Land of Summer, and the Land under the Wave. In most

of the stories, it was viewed as a pleasant land located somewhere beneath the sea, but in others it was to be found beneath the hills or entered via ancient burial mounds [23]. As in other traditions, the Celtic underworld is associated with cauldrons. In the Mabinogion, the land of Annwn ('unplumbed' or 'bottomless'), the Welsh underworld, contains a mystical cauldron which can restore the dead to life once more if they are submerged in it and brought out again [24].

In the *Critias* (120), Plato says that the 'holy habitation of Zeus' is situated 'in the centre of the world' [25]. In *The Republic* (part 4), he says that Apollo, the traditional interpreter of religious matters, delivers his interpretation 'from his seat at the earth's centre' [26]. He also writes:

Apollo's real home is among the Hyperboreans, in a land of perpetual life, where mythology tells us two doves flying from the two opposite ends of the world met in this fair region, the home of Apollo. Indeed, according to Hecataeus, Leto, the mother of Apollo, was born on an island in the Arctic Ocean far beyond the North Wind. [27]

In the *Phaedo* Plato speaks of many cavities and 'wonderful regions' in the earth, and of subterranean flows of water, mud, and fire.

One of the cavities in the earth is not only larger than the rest, but pierces right through from one side to the other. It is of this that Homer speaks when he says 'Far, far away, where lies earth's deepest chasm'; while elsewhere both he and many other poets refer to it as Tartarus. [28]

In the Greek view, the lands of the living were divided from Tartarus, the land of the dead, by fierce obstacles, rivers, and bodies of water or fire. The greatest of these was Oceanus, which not only comprised all the seas of the world, but was also the largest of the 'rivers' which the Greeks believed swept into and through Tartarus, to emerge from the underworld on the opposite side of the earth. Other subterranean torrents included Lethe, the river of forgetfulness, and the Styx, the river of death. Tartarus was said to 'sink twice as far below the earth as the earth was beneath the sky', and to be bounded by many perils. As well as being the home of the dethroned gods called the Titans, it contained a variety of regions or kingdoms, ranging from the Elysian Fields to the many grottoes, caverns, and pits of torment reserved for the damned [29].

The 1st-century Roman philosopher Seneca spoke of people who 'forced their way into the caverns' and entered the bowels of the earth, 'penetrating to the deepest hiding places', where they saw 'great rushing rivers, and vast still lakes', a world where 'the whole of nature was reversed. The land hung above their heads, while winds whistled hollowly in the shadows, while in the depths, frightful rivers led nowhere into perpetual and alien night' [30]. He also wrote: 'A time will come in later years when the Ocean will unloosen the bands of things, when the immeasurable earth will lie open, and Thule will no longer be the extreme point among the lands' [31]. Clearly nothing on the earth's surface could lie further north than Ultima Thule (the Land of the Ultimate North).

The Scandinavian and Germanic peoples envisioned the world as an immense yew or ash tree, the limbs and roots of which spread into a variety of realms or planes of existence. The World Tree, Yggdrasil, plunged its deep roots into several subterranean kingdoms, which all bordered a vast primordial void called Ginnungagap. One root of Yggdrasil led into Niflheim, the land of the dead. As in the Greek underworld, many waters flowed out from the depths and into the human world; in Niflheim it was the spring/river Hvergelmir (meaning 'roaring cauldron'), which boiled and churned relentlessly. The 11 tributaries of the Hvergelmir emptied into the central void of Ginnungagap. The second of Yggdrasil's roots found its way into the lands of the gods, Asgard and Vanaheim. While often pictured as a land high in Yggdrasil's branches, this realm was a subterranean one as well. In fact, the only world of Norse cosmology that is not in some sense subterranean is that of Midgard (middle earth), the surface world. Bifrost, the 'rainbow bridge', stretched from Midgard across Ginnungagap into Asgard [32].

In the Elder Edda, Odin says: 'No one has ever known or will ever know the vastness of the roots of that ancient tree.' This is a reference not only to the created world and heavens, but also to the root-like cavern system beneath the surface world. Also issuing from the depths of the World Tree was the titanic world-serpent or ouroboros which encircled the earth and held its tail in its teeth. It was called 'the girdle of the world', and its writhings beneath the sea were one of the sources of storms and earthquakes. The main entrance to the subterranean realms lay in the north. Similarly, the Greeks believed that one of the entrances to Tartarus lay beyond Hyperborea, and the entrance to the Finnish underworld lay north of Lapland, where the earth and sky met.

In the Sumerian epic of Gilgamesh, the underworld or 'Great Below' was a place of immense size and great terror, filled with a wide range of beings, including spirits, the undead, humanoids, and savage guardians. In his search for everlasting life, Gilgamesh first had to reach the mountain of Mashu, connected with the heavens above and the netherworld below. Having been allowed to enter the 'gate', he descended into the bowels of the earth through 12 double-hours of darkness before reaching 'an enclosure as of the gods', filled with brilliance, where there was a garden made entirely of precious stones [33]. According to Diodorus Siculus, the Chaldees, imagined the earth to have the form of a round boat turned upside down and to be hollow underneath [34].

The Bible describes the underworld or hell as a 'bottomless pit' (Revelation 9:1-2) and 'the abyss' (Romans 10:7), a place of punishment and misery, the abode of Satan and his demons. Other references to subterranean realms and life include the following:

. . . at the name of Jesus every knee should bow, in heaven and on earth and under the earth . . . (Philippians 2:10, Revised Standard Version)

And no one in heaven or on earth or under the earth was able to open the scroll or look into it . . . (Revelation 5:3)

In saying, 'He [Christ] ascended,' what does it mean but that he had also descended into the lower parts of the earth? (Ephesians 4:9)

For as Jonah was three days and three nights in the belly of the whale, so will the son of man be three days and three nights in the heart of the earth. (Matthew 12:40)

Jesus refers to this place as 'Eden' or paradise. Some hollow-earthers have read into the following quotation a reference to the alleged polar hole in the Arctic: He stretches out the north over the void, and hangs the earth upon nothing. (Job 26:7)

In the apocryphal Book of Enoch [35], Enoch speaks of proceeding to 'the middle of the earth', where he beheld a 'blessed land', 'happy and fertile' (25:1, 26:1). An angel shows him 'the first and last secrets in heaven above, and in the depths of the earth: In the extremities of heaven, and in the foundations of it, and in the receptacle of the winds' (59:2-3). There are said to be cavities in the earth and 'mighty waters' under it (65:1, 87:5, 95:2). Enoch sees an abyss 'opened in the midst of the earth, which was full of fire' (89:34); the abyss is said to be 'on the right side of the earth', which, according to Blavatsky, can mean in the north [36]. There is also a reference to seven great rivers, four of which 'take their course in the cavity of the north' (76:6-7).

Finally, the following passage from *The Secret Doctrine* contains several enigmatic statements referring to the far north and possibly to the inner earth. Speaking of the Kaf mountains of Persian legend, Blavatsky writes:

Whatever they may be in their geographical status, whether they are the Caucasian or Central Asian mountains, it is far beyond these mountains to the North, that legend places the Daevas [giants] and Peris; the latter the remote ancestors of the Parsis or Farsis. Oriental tradition is ever referring to an unknown glacial, gloomy sea, and to a dark region, within which, nevertheless, are situated *the Fortunate Islands*, wherein bubbles, from the beginning of life on earth, the *fountain of life*. But the legend asserts, moreover, that a portion of the first *dry* island (continent), having detached itself from the main body, has remained, since then, beyond the mountains of Koh-Kaf, 'the stony girdle that surrounds the world.' A journey of seven months' duration will bring him who is possessed of 'Sulayman's ring' to that 'fountain,' if he keeps on journeying North straight before him as the bird flies. Journeying therefore from Persia *straight north*, will bring one along the sixtieth degree of longitude, holding to the west, to Novaya Zemlya; and from the Caucasus to the eternal ice beyond the Arctic circle would land one between 60 and 45 degrees of longitude, or between Novaya Zemlya and Spitzbergen. This, of course, if one has the dodecapedian horse of [King] Hoshang or the winged Simurgh [a marvellous bird, the Persian phoenix] of Tahmurath (or Taimuraz) [third king of Persia], upon which to cross over the Arctic Ocean.\*

\*[The Caucasian bards] say that it requires seven months for a swift horse to reach the 'dry land' beyond Kaf, holding north without ever deviating from one's way.

Nevertheless, the wandering songsters of Persia and the Caucasus will maintain, to this day, that far beyond the snow-capped summits of Kap, or Caucasus, *there is a great continent now concealed from all*. That it is reached by those who can secure the services of the twelve-legged progeny of the crocodile and the female hippopotamus, whose legs become at will *twelve wings\**; or by those who have the patience to wait for the good pleasure of *Simurgh-anke*, who promised that before she dies she will reveal the hidden continent to all, and make it once more visible and within easy reach, by means of a bridge, which the Ocean Daevas will build between that portion of the 'dry island' and its severed parts.\*\* This relates, of course, to the seventh race, Simurgh being the Manvantaric cycle.

\*Bailly thought he saw in this horse a twelve-oared ship. . . . But the 'horse' [has] a more occult primitive meaning. The crocodile and the hippopotamus . . . represented divine symbols . . . Poseidon is, in Homer, the God of the Horse, and assumes that form himself to please Ceres. Arion, their progeny, is one of the aspects of that 'horse,' which is a cycle.

\*\*The severed parts must be Norway and other lands in the neighbourhood of the Arctic Circle.

It is very curious that Cosmas Indicopleustes, who lived in the sixth century A.D., should have always maintained that man was born, and dwelt at first in a country *beyond the Ocean*, a proof of which had been given him in India, by a learned Chaldean . . . He says: '*The lands we live in are surrounded by the ocean, but beyond that ocean there is another land which touches the walls of the sky; and it is in this land that man was created and lived in paradise. During the Deluge, Noah was carried in his ark into the land his posterity now inhabits.*' The twelve-legged horse of Hoshang was found on that continent named the *dry island*.

The 'Christian topography' of Cosmas Indicopleustes and its merits are well known; but here the good father repeats a universal tradition, now, moreover, corroborated by facts. Every arctic traveller suspects a continent or a 'dry island' beyond the line of eternal ice. [37]

Yet no such island or continent in the far north has been discovered -- on the earth's outer surface.

## References

### 1. The Imperishable Sacred Land

[1] See [Theosophy and the seven continents](http://ourworld.compuserve.com/homepages/dp5/continents.htm),  
<http://ourworld.compuserve.com/homepages/dp5/continents.htm>.

[2] H.P. Blavatsky, *The secret doctrine* (1888), Pasadena, CA: Theosophical University Press, 1977, 2:6.

[3] *Ibid.*, 2:400fn.

[4] Ibid., 2:401.

[5] G. de Purucker, *Studies in occult philosophy*, Pasadena, CA: Theosophical University Press, 1973, p. 555.

[6] *The secret doctrine*, 2:11-12; H.P. Blavatsky, *The theosophical glossary* (1892), Los Angeles, CA: Theosophy Company, 1973, p. 186.

## **2. Shambhala**

[1] Victoria LePage, *Shambhala: The fascinating truth behind the myth of Shangri-La*, Wheaton, IL: Quest, 1996, pp. 6-8.

[2] Edwin Bernbaum, *The way to shambhala*, Los Angeles, CA: Jeremy P. Tarcher, 1980, p. 207.

[3] Ibid., pp. 36-7.

[4] Ibid., p. 37.

[5] Nicholas Roerich, *Shambhala: In search of the new era*, Rochester, VE: Inner Traditions, 1990, pp. 1-33.

[6] G. de Purucker, *Occult glossary*, 2nd ed., Pasadena, CA: Theosophical University Press, 1996, pp. 155-6.

[7] *Dialogues of G. de Purucker*, Pasadena, CA: Theosophical University Press, 1948, 1:146-7.

[8] G. de Purucker, *Esoteric teachings*, San Diego, CA: Point Loma Publications, 1987, 2:9.

[9] H.P. Blavatsky, *Isis unveiled* (1877), Pasadena, CA: Theosophical University Press, 1972, 1:589-90; H.P. Blavatsky, *The secret doctrine* (1888), Pasadena, CA: Theosophical University Press, 1977, 2:220, 319, 502-3, 636-7; A.T. Barker (comp.), *The mahatma letters to A.P. Sinnett*, 2nd ed., Pasadena, CA: Theosophical University Press, 1975, p. 155.

[10] G. de Purucker, *Fountain-source of occultism*, Pasadena, CA: Theosophical University Press, 1974, p. 530.

## **3. A northern paradise**

[1] Richard L. Thompson, *Mysteries of the sacred universe: The cosmology of the Bhagavata Purana*, Alachua, FL: Govardhan Hill Publishing, 2000, pp. 132-55.

[2] Ibid., p. 136.

[3] Victoria LePage, *Shambhala: The fascinating truth behind the myth of Shangri-La*, Wheaton, IL: Quest, 1996, p. 31.

- [4] H.P. Blavatsky, *The secret doctrine* (1888), Pasadena, CA: Theosophical University Press, 1977, 1:126-7; H.P. Blavatsky, *The theosophical glossary* (1892), Los Angeles, CA: Theosophy Company, 1973, p. 213.
- [5] *The secret doctrine*, 2:404.
- [6] *Ibid.*, 2:401fn.
- [7] LePage, *Shambhala*, pp. 73, 89.
- [8] *The secret doctrine*, 2:400fn.
- [9] LePage, *Shambhala*, p. 73.
- [10] *Ibid.*, pp. 84, 130.
- [11] G. Smith, *The Chaldean account of genesis* (1876), San Diego, CA: Wizards Bookshelf, 1977, p. 103; *The secret doctrine*, 2:2.
- [12] William F. Warren, *Paradise found: The cradle of the human race at the north pole* (1885), Mokelumne Hill, CA: Health Research, 1964, p. 240.
- [13] *Paradise found*, pp. 141, 143, 244, 208.
- [14] Marshall B. Gardner, *A journey to the earth's interior or Have the poles really been discovered* (2nd ed., 1920), Mokelumne Hill, CA: Health Research, 1964, pp. 302, 309-10.
- [15] *Paradise found*, p. 234.
- [16] LePage, *Shambhala*, p. 78.
- [17] *The secret doctrine*, 2:408fn.
- [18] LePage, *Shambhala*, pp. 45-6.
- [19] W.T.S. Thackara, 'Our spiritual home', *Sunrise*, April/May 1990, pp. 103-10.
- [20] LePage, *Shambhala*, p. 198.
- [21] Henry Corbin, *The man of light in Iranian Sufism*, New York: Omega Publications, 1994, pp. 57-8.
- [22] *Ibid.*, pp. 39-40.
- [23] Arthur Cotterell, *A dictionary of world mythology*, London: Book Club Associates, p. 53; *The secret doctrine*, 2:290-2, 609-10.
- [24] *The theosophical glossary*, p. 12; *The secret doctrine*, 2:6; *H.P. Blavatsky collected writings*, Wheaton, IL: Theosophical Publishing House, 1950-91, 4:526-7.

[25] *Blavatsky collected writings*, 4:526.

[26] H.P. Blavatsky, *The secret doctrine*, edited by Boris de Zirkoff, Adyar, Madras: Theosophical Publishing House, 1979, 2:291.

#### 4. Inner kingdoms

[1] Nicholas Roerich, *Shambhala: In search of the new era*, Rochester, VE: Inner Traditions, 1990, p. 213.

[2] *Ibid.*, p. 215.

[3] Victoria LePage, *Shambhala: The fascinating truth behind the myth of Shangri-La*, Wheaton, IL: Quest, 1996, pp. 14, 41, 48-9.

[4] *The Theosophist*, September 1888, pp. 757-8; *H.P. Blavatsky collected writings*, Wheaton, IL: Theosophical Publishing House, 1950-91, 2:120; H.P. Blavatsky, *From the caves and jungles of Hindostan*, Wheaton, IL: Theosophical Publishing House, 1983, pp. 20fn, 77, 253-6, 342, 381-2, 392; H.P. Blavatsky, *The secret doctrine* (1888), Pasadena, CA: Theosophical University Press, 1977, 2: 220-1.

[5] David Hatcher Childress, *Lost cities & ancient mysteries of South America*, Stelle, IL: Adventures Unlimited Press, 1986, pp. 63-7, 72, 172-5; David Hatcher Childress, *Lost cities of North & Central America*, Stelle, IL: Adventures Unlimited Press, 1992, pp. 83-4, 200-1, 213-4, 256-7, 302-3, 316-20, 390-1.

[6] H.P. Blavatsky, *Isis unveiled* (1877), Pasadena, CA: Theosophical University Press, 1972, 1:547, 595-8; *Blavatsky collected writings*, 2:339-43, and diagram facing p. 336.

[7] *Blavatsky collected writings*, 11:5-7; *Isis unveiled*, 1:553.

[8] Bruce A. Walton, *A guide to the inner earth*, Mokelumne Hill, CA: Health Research, 1985, pp. 15, 41, 43, 48, 53, 67, 69, 80.

[9] Wm. Michael Mott, *Caverns, cauldrons, and concealed creatures: A study of subterranean mysteries in history, folklore, and myth*, 2000, p. 6, <http://www.hiddenmysteries.com/redirect/index111.html>.

[10] *Isis unveiled*, 1:553.

[11] Frank Waters, *Book of the Hopi*, New York: Penguin, 1977, p. 129.

[12] *Ibid.*, p. 24.

[13] *A guide to the inner earth*, pp. 15, 34, 42, 76.

[14] Walter Kafton-Minkel, *Subterranean worlds: 100,000 years of dragons, dwarfs, the dead, lost races & UFOs from inside the earth*, Port Townsend, WA: Loompanics Unlimited, 1989, p. 41; Richard L. Thompson, *Mysteries of the*

*sacred universe: The cosmology of the Bhagavata Purana*, Alachua, FL: Govardhan Hill Publishing, 2000, pp. 178-80, 295-6.

[15] *Caverns, cauldrons, and concealed creatures*, p. 2.

[16] D.S. Allan and J.B. Delair, *When the earth nearly died: Compelling evidence of a world cataclysm 11,500 years ago*, Bath: Gateway Books, 1995, pp. 330, 332.

[17] E.A. Wallis Budge, *From fetish to god in ancient Egypt*, New York: Dover, 1988, pp. 271-2.

[18] William F. Warren, *Paradise found: The cradle of the human race at the north pole* (1885), Mokelumne Hill, CA: Health Research, 1964, p. 484.

[19] Alan Alford, *The phoenix solution: Secrets of a lost civilisation*, London: Hodder and Stoughton, 1999, p. 294.

[20] Robert Bauval and Adrian Gilbert, *The Orion mystery*, London: Heinemann, 1994, p. 198.

[21] Zecharia Sitchin, *The stairway to heaven*, New York: Avon Books, 1980, p. 49; John Anthony West, *The traveler's key to ancient Egypt*, Wheaton, IL: Quest, 1995, pp. 304-5.

[22] *The secret doctrine*, 2:588fn; H.P. Blavatsky, *The theosophical glossary* (1892), Los Angeles, CA: Theosophy Company, 1973, p. 13.

[23] Paul Dunbavin, *The Atlantis researches*, Nottingham: Third Millennium Publishing, 1992, p. 189.

[24] *Caverns, cauldrons, and concealed creatures*, p. 71.

[25] *Paradise found*, p. 213.

[26] Plato, *The republic*, 2nd ed., Harmondsworth, Middlesex: Penguin Books, 1978, p. 195.

[27] Quoted in Willis George Emerson, *The smoky god* (1908), Mokelumne Hill, CA: Health Research, 1965, p. 14.

[28] Plato, *Phaedo*, in: *The last days of Socrates*, Harmondsworth, Middlesex: Penguin Books, 1979, p. 175.

[29] *Caverns, cauldrons, and concealed creatures*, pp. 64-5.

[30] *A guide to the inner earth*, pp. 31, 76.

[31] Fridtjof Nansen, *Farthest north*, London: George Newnes Ltd., 1898, vol. 1, p. 3.

[32] *Caverns, cauldrons, and concealed creatures*, pp. 65-7.

[33] *The stairway to heaven*, pp. 136-8; W.T.S. Thackara, 'The epic of Gilgamesh: a spiritual biography', part 3, *Sunrise*, February/March 2000, pp. 86-94.

[34] *Paradise found*, pp. 163-6.

[35] *The Book of Enoch the prophet* (1883), San Diego, CA: Wizards Bookshelf, 1983.

[36] *The secret doctrine*, 2:400fn.

[37] H.P. Blavatsky, *The secret doctrine*, edited by Boris de Zirkoff, Adyar, Madras: Theosophical Publishing House, 1979, 2:398-9, 396-7, 617-8.

# *Subterranean Worlds*

## *The Old Ones Structured Their Environment Under the Surface*

### **Underground Bases Of The Star Gods & The Controversial Shaver Mystery** by Brad Steiger

Excerpt From: STAR GODS:  
Clone Masters Of The Universe 1997

There are persistent legends in nearly every known Earth culture that tell of the Old Ones, an ancient race who populated the surface of our planet thousands, if not millions, of years ago. According to these ancient legends, the Old Ones are an immensely intelligent and scientifically advanced race, who, eons ago, chose to structure their own environment under the surface of the planet and manufacture all their necessities.

The Old Ones are human in appearance, extremely long-lived, and pre-date Homo sapiens by at least a million years. They generally remain aloof from the surface dwellers, but from time to time they have been known to appear and to offer constructive criticism--and it has been often charged that they kidnap human children to tutor and rear as their own.

In virtually all of the legends, the Old Ones have gone underground to escape natural catastrophes or the hidden death that paradoxically exist in the life-giving rays of our Sun.

Some researchers believe that the Old Ones, the mysterious Teachers from the Caves, represent those Atlanteans who survived the great cataclysm and learned to perpetuate themselves in underground caverns.

In this version of the destruction of the fabled continent, Atlantis shattered into the ocean because of a tremendous nuclear blast that had been ignited by a self-destructive super science. The need to find underground accommodations was thus compounded by the deadly radiation on the surface and by the knowledge that an existence with limited exposure to the normal radioactivity of the Sun is a healthier one.

An alternate theory to explain the ancient legends of the Old Ones is that the Cave Masters are surviving colonies of extraterrestrials, who, after walking the surface of Earth as Star Gods, grew disgusted with humankind and retreated to underground bases from which they might continue to watch over the primitive species' intellectual and cultural development.

A Subterranean Empire of Supermen and Gods

Buddhists have incorporated Agharta, a subterranean empire, into their theology, and they fervently believe in its existence and in the reality of underworld supermen, who periodically surface to oversee the progress of the human race.

Among the Native American tribes, Navajo legends teach that the forerunners of humankind came from beneath the surface of the planet.

These ancient ones were possessed of supernatural powers and were driven from their caverns by a great flood (another echo of the Atlantis myths). Once on the surface, these protohumans passed along great knowledge to the tribes before they once again sought secret sanctuary.

The cosmology of the Pueblo tribe places their gods' origin in an inner world that is connected to the surface people by a hole in the north. Mesewa, the chief of the gods, was succeeded as leader by his brother Oyoyewa, which some researchers have pointed out is quite similar to the Hebrew Yahweh.

### The Three Basic Arguments Regarding an Underground World

For centuries now, scholars and priests, scientists and explorers, have argued about the actual existence of an advanced and very ancient civilization beneath the surface of our planet.

The essential arguments have boded down to three main points of contention:

- 1.) An ancient hominid race, antedating Homo sapiens by at least a million years, withdrew from the surface world to exist in subterranean eaves. Such an extensive withdrawal of a people gave birth to the legend of Atlantis in the memories of emerging humankind.
- 2.) The superscience of fabled Atlantis was created by a prehistoric race of Earth-evolved hominids that achieved its apex only to blow itself to bits. Its survivors sought refuge under the crust of the Earth and remain there, emerging only to monitor the planet's current dominant species.
- 3.) Extraterrestrial beings planted a colony on Earth as long as 250 million years ago. These Star Gods made a decision to give evolving Homo a boost up the evolutionary ladder about a million years ago, then, after greatly accelerating humankind's brain approximately 100,000 years ago, then again, about 20,000 years ago, grew increasingly aghast at Homo sapiens' lapses into complete savagery and barbarism. Deciding to withdraw to a more aloof position in regard to their genetically engineered species, the Star Gods, the Old Ones, created underground bases from which to continue to monitor their prodigal sons and daughters.

### THE CONTROVERSIAL SHAVER MYSTERY

In the March, 1945, issue of Amazing Stories Editor Ray Palmer introduced the Shaver Mystery, an alleged "racial memory" of a young welder named Richard Shaver, who first claimed to have remembered a life in the caves, then, later, maintained that he had in

actuality returned from a recent visit to the vast underground civilization of the ancient cave-dwellers.

In its May 21, 1951 issue, Life magazine decreed the Shaver Mystery to be "...the most celebrated rumpus that ever racked the science fiction world."

Richard Shaver, however, never called his accounts anything other than factual reportage.

### A Race of Cosmic Superbeings

It was Richard Shaver's contention that in prehistoric times, when our solar system was very young, Earth was inhabited by a race of cosmic superbeings who had come to our planet from another solar system.

Although the members of the Elder Race were not truly immortals, they had discovered secrets of incredible longevity. Later, when Homo had developed into a sentient being, such physical attributes of the Elder Race, together with their highly developed scientific technology, caused the extraterrestrials to be regarded as gods by the primitive and unsophisticated humans.

The Elder Race possessed fantastic mechanical devices, which Shaver called "mech," capable of projecting three-dimensional images, extracting or implanting thoughts into others' minds, scanning over great distances, curing diseases, producing food and clothing--and killing and destroying life when deemed necessary.

### The Extraterrestrial Race Discovers the Sun's Detrimental Rays

After a time, the Elder Race, the Titans, began to notice that the once beneficent Sun now seemed to contain detrimental rays which were shortening their life-span by causing premature aging. While they had achieved near-immortality on their native planet, Earth's Sun, over the many centuries that their alien race had dwelt on its surface, had begun to take a toll on their physical bodies.

But now they were no longer extraterrestrials. They had become citizens of Earth and were subject to its unique physical laws.

In order to escape from the harmful rays of the Sun, the Elder Race entered deep underground caverns and began carving out a fantastic subterranean kingdom, using their powerful ray guns to disintegrate rock.

Soon they had constructed awesome machines which could duplicate the health-giving rays of the Sun while excluding the detrimental radioactivity.

Meanwhile, beings of the developing Homo species continued to evolve in the Sun, ignorant of the rays which would shorten their life-span--and puzzled by the withdrawal of their gods.

### The Myriad Activities of the Elder Race Become Our Cultural Myths

Shaver informed his readers that the Elder Race was not without its sensualists, and

certain of its members, particularly, the lesser ones, varied greatly in morality and intelligence.

Perhaps the majority of the Elder Race regarded their lesser evolved human cousins with a feeling of superiority and ill-concealed contempt.

Others may have exploited the females of Homo sapiens and may even have set the barbaric tribes of humans against one another for their own perverse pleasure, rooting for and assisting their favorite tribes and warriors.

The more humane among the Elder Race did their best to assist primitive humankind to develop a more functional culture and serviceable technology.

According to Richard Shaver, the ancient myths and legends of such cultures as the Egyptians, Greeks, and Romans were the unsophisticated surface dwellers' interpretation of the myriad activities of the Elder Race.

An Exodus from Earth of the Few Leaves Many Titans to Degenerate

After a time, the Shaver Mystery has it, the Elder Race became so dissatisfied with life on Earth that a space mission was sent to find a more suitable world where they could live on the surface without fearing negative rays from the Sun.

When the scouts finally returned with word of a planet with a beneficial Sun, a mass exodus was set in motion at once.

Because of the great distance involved in the interstellar travel and the limited number of spacecraft large enough to serve as transports, a good many of the Titans were forced to remain on Earth, sealed in underground caverns with their marvelous machines of super science.

Centuries passed, and a series of desperate experiments with the "mech" brought about certain radiation that began to destroy a portion of the brain of many of the underpeople and produced a dangerous form of hereditary insanity.

Vast numbers of the cave people began to degenerate into physically stunted near-idiots, incapable of constructive reasoning. Shaver told his readers that such beings were the "Dero," that is, detrimental or degenerate robots. "Robot," as Shaver used the word, doesn't refer to a mechanical representation of a human being, but is rather a designation for those cave people who became controlled, or obsessed, by degenerative forces.

The Deros, due to their hereditary brain damage, are completely devoid of any moral sense or humane instincts. They do harm at every opportunity, and they gain immense satisfaction from the sufferings of others. They have mastered the use of certain of the "mech," and they take great pleasure in directing negative rays at Earth's surface dwellers whenever possible.

The greatest delight of the Dero comes when they are able to lure or to kidnap humans into the caverns and set about debasing them in sadistic orgies. Such abductions usually result in death or enslavement for the unfortunate captive.

Throughout the centuries, Shaver stated, the horrid details of some of these grotesque debaucheries reached the surface world and established the foundations for the accounts of devils, demons, and the underworld hells of religion.

#### The Tero Alone Can Keep the Demonic Dero at Bay

Standing between the degenerate Dero and the complete annihilation of the surface people are the "Tero" (The Elder Race used T as a symbol of their religious philosophy, so the "T" in Tero stands for good). The Tero have devised a means of staving off many of the degenerative effects of their poisonous partial science by use of machines and chemicals and the direction of beneficial rays.

Through centuries of experimentation, the Tero have nearly mastered manipulation of the "mech" left by the leaders who deserted their ancestors. They are able to defend themselves from the Dero and are able to keep them from swarming up to the surface world en masse.

Although many of the Tero harbor friendly sentiments toward their human cousins above the caverns, they still consider humankind too barbaric to be entrusted with the secrets of the " mech. "

In ancient times, an extensive trade and exchange was carried on between the Tero and the surface peoples, but as humans became more sophisticated and their communications became more efficient, the Tero have almost completely withdrawn from open intercourse with the surface world. The surviving remnant of the Elder Race is determined to keep its Inner World a secret from the surface people until humankind has matured enough to share the marvels of the "mech," which remain operable and fully functional after millions of years.

#### A Warning To Future Man

Richard Shaver had originally entitled his manuscript, " A Warning to Future Man," because, according to his observations during his alleged sojourn in the eaves, he perceived that the Dero were becoming more numerous and had begun to weaken the more pacifistic Tero with their constant attacks.

Shaver believed that the greatest danger to humankind lay in the uncomfortable fact that the Dero had access to the "mech" of the Elder Race's super science, but they did not have the requisite intelligence or the highly developed moral sense needed to handle the powerful machines responsibly.

Shaver went on to declare that the Dero were little more than sadistic idiots who have taken enormous delight in precipitating many of our surface wars, arranging terrible accidents for select members of humankind, and even in creating nightmares, as they train "dream mech " on unsuspecting humans as they sleep.

Over the passing centuries, both the Tero and the Dero have learned to master -- Vision ray machines that can penetrate solid rock and view scenes all over the planet; Teleportation units that can effect instant transport from one point to another; Bizarre "

mech " that can create " solid " illusions, dreams, and compulsions; The aerial craft that humans refer to as flying saucers or UFOS; Death rays; "Stim " machines to revitalize the reproductive organs; "Ben" rays that heal and restore the physical body.

Because these fantastic products of a technology not yet equaled by the surface dwellers are still in perfect working order due to the high degree of scientific craftsmanship with which they were constructed, the remnants of the Elder Race could still appear almost god-like even in our nuclear age.

### The Mystery of the Old Ones Continues

Ray Palmer claimed that the issue of *Amazing Stories* (March, 1945) that carried the first Shaver fact-fiction piece brought in an unprecedented mail response, all of which was from readers who swore that "...Shaver spoke the truth, there actually were eaves, and Dero, and rays, and stim, and contrived train wrecks, and mental control, and thought records, and Titans, and ancient spaceships, and radioactive death raining down on us from the Sun."

By Palmer's own account:

Although I added all the trimmings, I did not alter the factual basis of Mr. Shaver's manuscript--except in one instance. Here, perhaps, I made a grave mistake. However, I could not bring myself to believe that Mr. Shaver had actually gotten his alphabet and his 'Warning to Future Man,' and all the "science" he propounded from actual underground people. Instead, I translated his thought- records into 'racial memory" and felt sure this would be more believable to my readers....

After all, Palmer reasoned, if all of Shaver's incredible claims were actually based on fact, then a reasonable explanation was that these fantastic underground people and their prehistoric science existed in Shaver's memories--or in his mind-- Which is where I felt it really was going on, and not in any caves or via any telaud rays or telesolidograph projections of illusions from the cavern ray operators.

Ray Palmer kept the Shaver mystery and the resultant controversy going in his magazines for four years, in more than fifty consecutive issues of *Amazing Stories*, *Fantastic Adventures*, *Mammoth Adventures*, and even *South Sea Stories*.

Although both Palmer and Shaver have passed away, the furor the Shaver Mystery set off among the science fiction and Fortean buffs continues today to break out in periodic brush fires.

From our present perspective, we might suggest that the super science of the Old Ones and their retreat into the underground eaves is yet another human attempt to describe and to explain the incredible history that our species shares with the Star Gods.

[Back To The Underworlds](http://www.geocities.com/Area51/Shadowlands/6583/under002.html)

<http://www.geocities.com/Area51/Shadowlands/6583/under002.html>

# *Subterranean Worlds*

## *Discovered at the Bottom of an Old Mine Shaft Near Wingate Pass*

---

### **Ancient Civilization Beneath Death Valley?**

Author unknown

Bourke Lee, in his book 'DEATH VALLEY MEN' (MacMillan Co., N.Y. 1932), chapter: "Old Gold", describes a conversation which he had several years ago with a small group of Death valley residents. The conversation had eventually turned to the subject of Paihute Indian legends. At one point two of the men, Jack and Bill, described their experience with an 'underground city' which they claimed to have discovered after one of them had fallen through the bottom of an old mine shaft near Wingate Pass.

They found themselves in a natural underground cavern which they claimed to have followed about 20 miles north into the heart of the Panamint Mountains. To their amazement, they allegedly found themselves in an huge, ancient, underground cavern city. They claimed that they discovered within the city several perfectly preserved 'mummies', which wore thick arm bands, wielded gold spears, etc. The city had apparently been abandoned for ages, except for the mummies, and the entire underground system looked very ancient. It was formerly lit, they found out by accident, by an ingenious system of lights fed by subterranean gases. They claimed to have seen a large, polished round table which looked as if it may have been part of an ancient council chamber, giant statues of solid gold, stone vaults and drawers full of gold bars and gemstones of all kinds, heavy stone wheelbarrows which were perfectly balanced and scientifically-constructed so that a child could use them, huge stone doors which were almost perfectly balanced by counter-weights, and other incredible sights. They also claimed to have followed the caverns upwards to a higher level which ultimately opened out onto the face of the Panamints, about half-way up the eastern slope, in the form of a few ancient tunnel-like quays. They realized that the valley below was once under water and they eventually came to the conclusion that the arched openings were ancient 'docks' for sea vessels. They could allegedly see Furnace Creek Ranch and Wash far below them.

They told Bourke Lee that they had brought some of the treasure out of the caverns and tried to set up a deal with certain people, including scientists associated with the Smithsonian Institute, in order to gain help to explore and publicize the city as one of the 'wonders of the world'. These efforts ended in disappointment however when a 'friend' of theirs stole the treasure (which was also the evidence) and they were scoffed at and rejected by the scientists when they went to show them the 'mine' entrance and could not find it. A recent cloud-burst, they claimed, had altered and rearranged the entire countryside and the landscape did not look like it had been before.

When Lee last heard from the two men, Bill and Jack, they were preparing to climb the east face of the Panamints to locate the ancient tunnel openings or quays high up the side of the steep slope. Bourke Lee never did see or hear from his friends ever again.

In 1946 a man calling himself Dr. F. Bruce Russell, and claiming to be a retired physician, told a similar story about finding strange underground rooms in the Death Valley area in 1931. He told of a large room with several tunnels leading off in different directions. One of these tunnels led to another large room that contained three mummies. Artifacts found in the room appeared to be a combination of Egyptian and American Indian design. The most amazing thing about the mummies though was the fact that they were more than eight feet tall.

Dr. Russell and a group of investors formed "Amazing Explorations, Inc" to handle the release, and profit, from this remarkable find. But, as stories of this type usually go, Russell disappeared, and the investigators were never able to find the caverns and tunnels again, even though Russell had personally taken them there. The desert can be very deceiving to anyone not used to traveling it. Month's later, Russell's car was found abandoned, with a burst radiator, in a remote area of Death Valley. His suitcase was still in the car.

The old TV series Death Valley Days once ran a short story about western pioneers also finding mummies in the desert. Since one of the script writers stated that "there had never been a script without a solid basis in fact", it would be interesting to find out what their source had been.

For now, these stories will have to be shrouded in mystery, along with the 21,000 year old bones found in California's Imperial Valley, also rumored to have been spirited off by the Smithsonian.

[Back To The Underworlds](#)

<http://www.geocities.com/Area51/Shadowlands/6583/under004.html>

## *Subterranean Worlds*

### *Complex and Labyrinthine Underground Systems*

---

#### **Ground-Penetrating Radar Showing Ancient Civilizations**

by Paul White

Since the declassification of the new ground-penetrating radar 2 years ago, the most staggering data has emerged of complex and labyrinthine underground systems in various parts of the world. At places like Guatemala in the South Americas, tunnels have been mapped under the Mayan pyramid complex at Tikal, which extend a full 800 kilometres to the opposite side of the country. Investigators remarked, it was possible to understand how half a million Mayan Indians escaped the decimation of their culture.

In similar fashion, the SIRA radar was deployed in Egypt as early as 1978, mapping an extraordinary subterranean complex beneath the Egyptian pyramids. Arrangements made with President Sadat of Egypt, resulted in three decades of top secret excavations to penetrate the system. At a recent meeting in Australia, one of the key scientists on the Giza project, Dr. Jim Hurtak, showed film footage of work in progress called, **CHAMBERS OF THE DEEP**, due to be released at the end of the century.

The film reveals the discovery of a vast megalithic metropolis, 15,000 years old, reaching several levels below the Giza plateau. While the rest of the Nu-Age speculates about a hidden chamber under the left paw of the Sphinx, the legendary "City Of The Gods", lays sprawled beneath. Complete with hydraulic underground waterways, the film shows massive chambers, the proportions of our largest cathedrals, with enormous statues, the size of the Valley of the Nile, carved in-situ. Researchers, risking their lives with lights and cameras, carefully negotiated rubber dinghies across subterranean rivers and kilometer-wide lakes, to penetrate sealed chambers beyond. Already, remarkable caches of records and artifacts have been found.

\*Just after the Deluge, at the dawn of the present time cycle, an era the Egyptians called ZEP TEPI, "The First Times", a mysterious group of "gods" appeared, to initiate the survivors in the rudiments of civilisation. From Thoth and Osiris in Egypt, to Quetzacoatal and Viracocha in the Americas, traditions worldwide subscribe the origins of contemporary civilisation to this sophisticated group\*.

Despite the misleading popularity of Von Danikan journalism, evidence from around the world, indicates these people were the hi-tech survivors of the previous civilization. Like the nuclear survival bunkers and secret research facilities of our own civilization, there were those who arose from the underground "cities of the Gods", after the dust settled. They were the "prediluvian patriarchs", like Enoch and Methuselah, the "giants and heroes of old", mentioned in Genesis. The enigmatic gods of ancient Summer, Egypt and India, all hail from the fabulous times before the Flood.

It is the legacy of a civilisation and a technology way beyond our own. A technology capable of creating a vast underground city, of which the sphinx and pyramids are merely the surface markers. The project scientist, Dr. Hurtak, likens it to the impact of contact with an advanced extraterrestrial culture. He described it as the discovery of the Fourth Root culture, the so-called Atlantean civilization, destroyed by the last earth tumble. It presents unequivocal evidence that all languages, cultures and religions trace back to a single common source, which Dr. Hurtak refers to as the "Parent Civilization".

The technology unearthed is way beyond machine technology, as we know it. As Arthur C. Clark once joked, "any technology beyond our own would seem like magic to us." According to Dr. Hurtak, this was a culture who cracked the genetic code and possessed the keys of the physical spectrum, the "Higher Light Physics" of the ancients... everything old Gilgamesh went searching for in his famous trek to the lost "City of the Gods" to search the tunnels beneath "Mt. Mashu" in the desert lands.

Hurtak refers to a "language of light" and a great priest-scientist of the previous time cycle, named ENOCH, who is associated with the building of the Great Pyramid

complex. Hurtak alludes to a grand spiritual science, a science which describes a genetic stairway to the stars.

The priest-scientist ENOCH, is a prediluvian patriarch, one of the most famous and seminal characters of the previous time cycle. Father of Methuselah and great grandfather of Noah, Enoch is credited in the Bible as architect of the original Zion, the legendary "City of Yahweh", as well as inventor of the alphabet and calendar. Enoch is also history's first astronaut, who "is taken aloft by the Lord" and shown "the secrets of earth and heaven". He returns to earth with the "weights and measures" for all humankind.

Known to the Egyptians as THOTH, the "Lord of Magic and Time" and to the Greeks as HERMES, "messenger of the gods", he is even remembered in the Celtic tradition as the enigmatic wizard Merlin, who disappears up an apple tree to mythic Avalon, seeking the secret of immortality and vowing to return.

As one who attained immortality, the secret of how we "might become as gods", Thoth/Enoch promises to return at the end of time "with the keys to the gates of the sacred land." In the controversial Dead Sea Scrolls, revealing the lost Books Of Enoch removed from the Bible by early religious leaders, Enoch describes a wondrous civilization in the past, who misused the keys of higher knowledge and were unable to save themselves from the last cataclysm. Both literally and figuratively they lost the "keys", they lost all higher knowledge.

Yet, Enoch, along with many traditions, even the Mayan legend of Quetzalcoatl, promises a return of this knowledge at "The end of time", the end of the present time cycle. Biblical Revelations promise "all will be revealed" at the end of the present world. The extraordinary discoveries in Egypt and other parts of the world, describe not just an advanced technology but, evolutionary path beyond our present state.

Careful scientific examination of the world's key pyramid sites, reveal them to be sophisticated harmonic structures, not only mirroring positions of the planets and stellar systems but, designed to mimic the chakras and harmonic cavities of the human body. Even each stone within the Great Pyramid is harmonically tuned to a specific frequency or musical tone. The sarcophagus in the centre of the Great Pyramid is tuned to the frequency of the human heart beat.

Astonishing experiments, conducted by Dr. Hurtak and colleagues at the Great Pyramid and other sites in the South Americas, demonstrate the **pyramids to be voice-activated "geophysical computers."** Intoning specific ancient sounds, the scientific team produced visible standing waves of light, above and within the pyramids and were even able to penetrate, hitherto, inaccessible chambers. Subsequent discoveries indicate the ancient priest-scientists employed some sort of harmonic sound technology within the temple structures.

The lost Enochian knowledge reveals the mother tongue as a "language of Light". Known to the ancients as **HIBURU**, it is the primal seed language, introduced at the beginning of this time cycle. Modern research confirms, **the most ancient form Hebrew to be a natural language, the alphabetic forms emerging from the phosphene flare patterns**

**of the brain. The same shapes, in fact, born of a spinning vortex. It is a true language of light, coursing through our very nervous system.**

Encoding the natural waveform geometries of the physical world, Hiburū is a harmonic language, mimicking the waveform properties of light. **The "keys" Enoch speaks of, turn out to be sound keys, keys to be vibratory matrix of reality itself, the mythic "Power of the World"**. The Enochian knowledge describes sonic equations, encoded within the ancient mantras and god names, capable of directly affect the nervous system and producing profound effect of healing and higher consciousness states.

As the ancient texts declare, "If you would speak with the gods you must first learn the language of the gods." DNA, the ancient cabalistic "Tree Of Life" portrayed in the Biblical Torah, is now coming to be viewed as a live vibrating structure, rather than a fixed tape recording. Many modern scientists, regard DNA as a shimmering, waveform configuration, able to be modified by light, radiation, magnetic fields or sonic pulses. The legacy of Thoth/Enoch suggests this "language of Light", the harmonic science of the ancients, could actually affect DNA.

The evidence in Egypt, indicates this was the grand 6,000 year genetic experiment attempted by the Egyptians, the quest for immortality and the stars, a quest described by the great ones of old, a quest initiated by Gilgamesh so very long ago. The Egyptians were not fixated on the afterlife, as thought by early Christian translators but, focused on creating a higher type of human. Along with many ancient cultures, they believed DNA came from the stars and was destined to return.

The knowledge of Thoth/Enoch implies humans are meant to evolve beyond our present terrestrial form, as the Bible tells us, "**we may become greater than angels**". The Egyptians record stories of the "**Star Walkers**", occasional individuals who, like Enoch, travelled "beyond the Great Eye of Orion" and returned, to walk like gods amongst men. Despite the bleaching of semi-divine beings from modern consciousness, could it be possible, as the ancient texts insist, we are destined to "become as gods"? are the Mayan "Lords of Light" and the Egyptian/Tibetan "Shining Ones" really a higher form of human?

According to many earth legends, such beings are supposed to return regularly, at the beginning and end of each time cycle, the 13,000 year half-point of our solar system's 26,000 year zodiacal orbit around galaxy centre. Because of conditions on our galactic orbit, these 13,000 year intervals or "worlds", seem to be separated by cataclysmic upheaval.

According to the "calendar in stone" of the Great Pyramid, which describes the so-called "Phoenix Cycle" of our galactic orbit, the present time period ends (converted to our present calendar) in the year 2012 AD. The Greek word PHOENIX, derived from the Egyptian word, PA-HANOK, actually means, "The House of Enoch".

The Enochian knowledge suggests, these regular cataclysmic changes act as an evolutionary agent provocateur, to quicken the resident life forms to the next evolutionary phase, prior to exodus from the womb planet. Human evolution may

proceed more rapidly than previously thought. The evidence now appearing, records civilisations before us, who mastered the physical continuum and progressed beyond this world. There were also those who failed. We, too, have equal opportunity to make it or break it.

The discoveries emerging from Egypt, describe the existence of a world wide pyramid temple system in prehistory, mounted like antennae on the key energy meridians, which were employed by ancient priest-scientists as a musical system to stabilize the tectonic plates of the planet... cataclysmic geology at it's finest. From the mother tongue word JEDAI AH, meaning "the way of the Word" or "the power of the Word", the ancient JEDAI priests used the language of Light to tune the planet like a giant harmonic bell. Much is being rediscovered in the last days of this time cycle. In the words of Dr. Jay Franz, of the Omega Foundation, "even if we don't dare to name it, there is a universal feeling of something impending on the world stage."

[Back To The Underworlds](#)

<http://www.geocities.com/Area51/Shadowlands/6583/under008.html>

## *Subterranean Worlds*

### *'Serpent' Races Which Exist Within Subterranean Areas*

---

#### **Casualties of a Cosmic War**

Crim-Ram Series FILE NO. 011

by Branton

There are many indications suggesting that certain humans have, in one way or another, been brought under the mental, technical or occult control of the 'reptilians' over the years, whether they are fully aware of this manipulation or not. Could the 'being' referred to in this account, which appeared on pp. 1136-1137 of Raymond A. Palmer's 'HIDDEN WORLD' publication for Summer, 1962, be the type of subterranean-dwelling creature which at least one account referred to as a creature that goes by the description of a 'dragon-worm'? Could this creature (supposing it does in fact exist and is not the result of one man's deluded and misguided fantasy experience) be one of the MANY and VARIED branches or mutations of the 'serpent' races, which many accounts such as those given in earlier files tend to confirm exist within subterranean areas? We are afraid that accounts such as this one might raise more questions than they answer. Remember that this letter appeared years before the advent of the famous 'Star Wars' trilogy which depicted a creature very similar to that described in the following letter. Again one might wonder if George Lucas himself might not have been inspired subconsciously by certain evident realities, and portrayed some of these, although in a rather corrupted, embellished and 'occultized' manner, in his movies. The following account was submitted by a reader who chose to remain anonymous. He states:

"Dear Ray:

"This happened about 12 or 13 years ago. I was in my late teens, I think, but perhaps the time is not as important as the incident.

"In the late night hours I awoke, got out of bed, walked out of the house and was met by a group of men (?) who drove me out into the country to an old farmhouse. I don't know the location any more than the people involved; maybe I was drugged, I don't know. At the farmhouse we went immediately to the potato cellar and through a trapdoor in the floor down a long inclining tunnel. We arrived into a room, fantastically decorated, bizarre, like Hades - how can I describe it? It was of good size; and others were present. Some one asked: 'Is he ready?' and the answer: 'Yes, he is.' Two 'others' - one on each side of me escorted me into a room? Tunnel? (again beyond my description) the worm, or whoever or whatever he or it was, was huge, long, round, knobby. An immense head and mouth (which swayed back and forth) spoke to me. I don't remember what it said or my answer, but one of them put a syringe into it, and then into me! I swear the language spoken by them and myself was not English, but somehow I seemed to know, yet but not know. After some kind of warning and benediction from this being I was escorted out. Once again the car, the return trip, and home in bed. Since that time I have once in awhile visited the caves quite unhindered... in dreams and the like (since 'suppressed' memories of experiences with UFO's, etc. often surface in 'dreams' or impressions, could these be actual memories of other visits to the nether regions which were suppressed from his memory? There is also the small chance that ray-induced visions or even 'astral' interaction might be involved as well - Branton). I can only comment that the knowledge of, and use of the mechs, the architecture, the philosophies in the pictures (or whatever they are), would enable man to live like gods in comparison to how they now live. However the areas of horror beyond comprehension would have to be removed before this can be done (Note: Is he referring to the so-called super-human abilities brought about through the manipulation of powerful electromagnetic occult technologies? We must remind the reader that 'power' has NOTHING to do with righteousness nor benevolence, or as the old saying goes: 'Might does not make right!' Such abilities to manipulate the forces of nature via occult technologies, such as those which were developed and utilized by the pre-deluvians - which by the way IN PART played a role in their destruction - and which is now being used by many of the inhabitants of the nether 'cavern' regions, could be extremely destructive if placed in the wrong hands - Branton).

"An interesting sequel to this (dream or reality?) is that I have prayed, hard, that this wouldn't affect my life. I believe in some ways it hasn't, but my wife feels that something, as I also have felt, is not allowing me to live as I want to. Of course I want to know, was it dream or reality? (Name deleted by request)."

The following letter appeared in the July, 1964 issue of 'SEARCH' Magazine, and was written by a Mr. Ervin M. Scott of (at the time) 536 12th St., Denver, Colorado:

"Dear Ray:

"Congratulations on another excellent issue of 'SEARCH' Magazine.

"I was especially interested in your article, 'Faces in Your Dreams.'

"Having had many strange, puzzling dreams over the last few years, I have become quite interested in any clues that might point towards origin and cause of dreams. I recognize a good many as probably having the subconscious as the source. However, there is an occasional dream, that is so vivid and unusual that it causes one to wonder.

"I have no connection one way or the other, on the Shaver Mystery, but, I will briefly describe two dreams that are interesting in relation to that subject.

"On Nov. 30, 1963 while in a light sleep I heard a woman's voice coming as if from a distance and she spoke urgently as follows: 'This is from a stolen farm beneath the Salt Lake flats in Utah. (I was living in Wichita, Kansas at the time.) There was a woman abducted almost three weeks ago in Boston, Mass. and taken underground. Reports indicate that an abbey in North section of the city is being used and that cellars underneath the abbey connect with tunnels leading up from caverns below. This is a continuation of the Evil one's War against Mankind.'

"Another voice broke in, 'Don't believe her. Don't you see this is a lie - a trick? (Then, warningly) Keep quiet about this.'

"I have never been in Utah nor have had no thoughts about or desire to visit, so if this was caused by subconscious, it is certainly puzzling, as is the reference to 'a stolen farm'..."

This letter suggests that a conflict of sorts has been and is taking place in cavernous levels below Utah, as in other states.

In earlier files we revealed an incident which was originally described by 'Commander X', from a source in Dulce, N.M., stating that a certain chemical was secretly (through certain 'doctors' tied in with the aliens) being injected into individuals via sulfa drugs which in turn lodge in the bone- structure of the victim. **This chemical allegedly makes their bodies extremely sensitive to ELF (Extremely Low Frequency) radio waves, which can be 'tuned in' to the encephalographic wave band of the human brain, and could apparently be used to subliminally control human minds from a distance.**

Perhaps some individuals, such as the writer of the letter just quoted, are naturally sensitive to these extremely low frequency waves, in that their brains to some extent act as an electromagnetic biological ELF radio receiver. Certain accounts suggest that some subterranean groups utilize ELF radio transceivers capable of penetrating miles of solid rock.

The letter just quoted suggests that another group, more malevolent, utilize a similar form (of ELF radio wave transceivers) such as the one through which the woman apparently sent out the 'distress call'.

Could this 'other' voice be tied-in with a subterranean group similar to the group that some refer to as the 'Horlocks'? Or could it have originated from the Reptilians? The 'Horlocks' are as we've suggested earlier allegedly a dero-like group of human slaves who are manipulated and kept under reptilian control via implantation, technosis, etc.

The Salt Lake Valley subnet has been a MAJOR area from where reports of Reptilians or Sauroids have emerged, so this would strongly suggest that the Serpent Race fits intricately into the scenario taking place below the Salt Lake 'flats' as well. Also, Dougway Military 'Proving' grounds which lies on the Salt Flats has been another source of some very strange activities according to certain sources, including high-tech research in 'subspace teleportation' similar to that involved in the so-called 'Philadelphia Experiment' as it is described in Charles Berlitz' book of the same name; sightings of UFO's and 'para-humans'; much Top Secret activity; underground tunnels, etc. According to Thomas C., the former Dulce Base security officer who 'defected' from the underground empire, Dougway is a definite 'entrance' to the U.S. subnet. Some have even suggested that due to the high publicity that the Nevada Military Complex is receiving as a result of exposition of 'joint' activity and infiltration of the complex by alien forms, much of the reptilian and reptilian-controlled underground activity may be moving across the border into western Utah.

From what we've been able to gather (from different sources, including a Salt Lake physicist who had experienced her own abductions; a man who worked in top secret positions at Dougway Proving Ground; a Salt Lake security officer who is knowledgeable of the Salt Lake Police Departments own awareness of the underground systems; as well as others) the following subterranean related accounts may very well be true.

The first settlers of the Salt Lake Valley, our sources indicate, after they first entered the area, discovered a network of ancient tunnels below the ground that seemed to converge beneath what is now downtown Salt Lake City. Some of these tunnels, it was found, led east and connected with 'Huge' cavern networks DEEP beneath the Wasatch Range of the Western Rockies.

Some indications seem to suggest that a human civilization, possibly pre-dating the American 'Indians', were encountered in these caverns and that a loose 'alliance' might have resulted between this society and certain Federal 'officials' (FBI, etc.) in the city above. There are also indications that some of these may have a connection with the subterranean group known as the Telosians, based largely beneath Mt. Shasta, California. Some years ago the 'Telosian' Bonnie (Sharula), who was mentioned in an earlier File, informed one researcher that the tunnels below Salt Lake do exist and that some Telosians live and work in the surface society along the Wasatch front, as well as other areas around the U.S. This was a few years before certain people who claimed to have actually been inside these tunnels themselves began to relate their experiences, thus confirming Bonnie's or Sharula's claims.

'Bonnie' also stated that her people maintain a huge underground base in the mountains adjacent to Big Cottonwood Canyon just east of Salt Lake.

An Air Force pilot who was involved in top secret Air Force photo-recon flights several years ago, who referred to himself as 'Mel Noel', claimed to have seen and photographed numerous UFO's over the ROCKY MOUNTAINS of Utah, Idaho, etc. on several occasions, the first encounter involving 16 disks which broke formation and went into an incredible display of aerial acrobatics. Their commanding general claimed to have had personal contact with the HUMAN occupants of these craft, who he described as being

very attractive physically, and benevolent although very secretive. They claimed to hail from underground cities beneath other planetary bodies in this solar system as well as underground cities BELOW the surface of the earth (i.e. the Rockies, etc.?). They also told this Air Force general that their 'Tribunal', based on one of the Saturnian moons, ties this interplanetary 'Solar' alliance together. Another man, Guy Kirkwood, came forward in the early 1990's describing an almost identical experience as Mel Noel's. Some even believe that Kirkwood is none other than the notorious 'Mel Noel' who caused such a stir among early UFOlogists during the 'contactee' waves of the 1950's and '60's.

In order to protect the privacy of our 'sources' we will identify them only by their initials.

K.S. has related many accounts concerning alien-type encounters in Utah, including the Salt Lake Valley area. These stories range from encounters with Nordic-type blond humans walking incognito among the inhabitants of the valley (K.S. was allegedly visited by a group of blondes claiming to be from the Pleiades who left with her a very interesting crystal-powered 'communicating' device), confrontations with sinister MIB-like beings of both human and 'androidal' configurations who have also been seen infiltrating the upper city, and at least one incident involving apparent conflict between the 'Blond' (?) and MIB groups. This involved a UFOlogist who was rather outspoken in his search for underground bases, UFO landing strips and the like. One day while talking to an employee of a place which sold topographical maps--asking about some strange circular markings and roads that seemed to dead-end in cliffs, etc. in maps of the Nevada military--he noticed that he was being closely monitored by two 'Blondes' (?) or a another group possibly connected with the government. Suddenly a 'man' dressed in black came into the place and immediately noticed the people who were observing the UFOlogist. When this man saw these people he seemed to recognize them or their kind and he turned in terror and almost ran from the place. One has to wonder what that was all about.

K.S. has described several areas in the state of Utah which have had definite connections with UFO's, possibly being 'base' sites. These include the La Sal mountains and Monroe mountain in southern Utah and mountains east of Salt Lake and Ogden where reports of strange underground bases, UFO encounters, hidden caverns and hidden 'landing strips' for 'alien' craft abound, as well as the MAJOR subnet beneath Salt Lake City itself.

She described one incident during which she experienced a considerable amount of 'missing time'. This took place after she and a friend of hers, knowing her interest in UFO's, offered to show her a place where she could observe 'UFO's taking off and landing.' They subsequently traveled in a dune buggy to the southeast, several miles up the 'Nebo Loop' road into the mountains behind Payson, Utah, in the general direction of Mt. Nebo. Some miles up the canyon her friend suddenly left the road and for the next hour or so they traveled along rough terrain until they suddenly emerged over the lip of an ENCLOSED valley surrounded by mountains on all sides. At the bottom of the valley were several deer drinking from a small swampy-like lake or pond. She claimed that she experienced several hours of missing time. After the incident her watch would not operate. She described a feeling of 'fear' that permeated the valley and she alleged that she could actually 'feel' something, or several 'somethings' watching her. Since the greys are often described as instilling fear or body terror in their victims, along with other indications, it might be possible that this particular 'base' area is now largely under

reptilian control. We admit that this is just a supposition. Whether or not this 'base' has been taken over in part or in full by the malevolents, there may be indications that this might not always have been the case. This 'hidden valley' is supposedly some miles east of the area of Salem and Payson, Utah and MAY be one of the STANDOFF areas between humans and reptilians such as were described by various sources connected with the Nevada Test Site. This area of activity seems to move southward into the La Sal mountain range.

This account is very similar to another incident which was related several years ago by a German national who we will refer to as T.S. Just east of the small town of Salem, Utah there is an area known as water canyon. According to local legend, this was the site of an ancient gold mine which had been excavated by a pre-Columbian race of native Americans who lived in the valley, perhaps when it was still part of the ancient Lake Bonneville which connected the Salt and Utah valleys and generally filled the entire Great Basin area. Today one can still see the **ancient pictographs above what is believed to be one of the collapsed entrances to this ancient mine.** These include pictograms depicting 'llama-like' animals entering a tunnel bare-backed while another line of animals is seen emerging from the ground fully laden - supposedly with gold. The pictograms have been vandalized over the years but are still observable to some extent. Many people have attempted to enter this alleged mine through digging, but have been frightened away by some (sinister?) supernatural force.

T.S. had stayed in this area after World War II and had heard rumors of a 'hidden' or 'forbidden' valley in the mountains to the southeast of Spanish Fork. With permission, he and a friend drove their truck up the dirt road which winds it's way up Water Canyon and then south into the mountains (the entrance of this road is on private property, and is usually closed).

They traveled a considerable distance up the mountain. Eventually they made their way southward for some time, possibly leaving their car and traveling the rest of the way on foot. (The entire journey to and from the area, he claimed, lasted 3 days, although he did not say how much of this time was spent traveling). Finally, they came to the lip of a 'hidden valley', which they were told earlier was situated between or behind the peaks (the same one described by K.S.?), where they immediately saw some weird copper-like coils strewn over the ground, as well as some kind of bluish dust. Just then a silvery disk emerged from the valley below and hovered near them. Out of it emerged a creature which T.S. could only describe as being robot-like. The next thing they remembered the object was gone and approximately 1 1/2 hours of their time was missing and unaccounted for, although T.S. did faintly recall something about an underground installation. T.S. had his watch, but his friend soon realized that his own watch was missing. Strangely enough, this watch turned up a few days later in an unmarked package in his mailbox.

This incident took place in the mid-1940's or a little later, and the fact that the watch was returned suggests that humans might have been largely involved with this 'base' at that time. One of our researchers personally investigated this story by traveling up this particular road, which eventually turns south and ends at the top of a peak south of water canyon where a transmitter tower is located. A large trail proceeds from a 'fenced' area

adjacent to the road just east of this tower and continues towards a ridge to the south. Once at the top of this ridge one can see a box-like canyon to the northwest which eventually meanders down to the Utah Valley floor, and on the other side the now abandoned town of Thistle and the Spanish Fork river to the east and southeast, but no hidden or enclosed valley. There is however a much higher ridge south of this one which would take a good deal of hiking to get to, and from the top of which one MIGHT be able to see the alleged hidden valley. This researcher did not continue as it was becoming dark and he was not equipped to spend the night.

The later event described by K.S. suggests that reptilian entities might have been involved in her experiences. This may substantiate a suspicion we have had that the caverns beneath the Wasatch Mountains were at one time largely controlled by humans, and that within recent decades (whether through covert manipulation or overt invasion) the Reptilians have taken possession of many of these underground systems in what some might refer to as a Tero-Dero like conflict.

As for the Salem-Payson, Utah 'base', other people have described UFO sightings in the mountains behind and southeast of this area as well.

The researcher mentioned earlier recently tried an experiment. He assumed that if there were people living in the area who had INTIMATE knowledge of this particular 'base', that they might eventually peruse through the 'UFO section' of the local library for one reason or another (in this case the Spanish Fork library, adjacent to Salem). He deposited some information (concerning recent revelations about the growing human-saurian conflict, etc., which had surfaced in the UFO research community) inside one of the UFO books there. He returned a couple of weeks later to see if the 'bait' had been taken. The data was gone, but in its place he was surprised to find a written 'warning' which was signed by the 'REPTILES'. Either this was a prank on the part of a skeptic who had gotten their hands on the information he deposited, or the 'Reptiles' really did 'have his number'. Whatever may be involved here, which we do suspect has something to do with a 'standoff' between humans and Reptilians, we are certain that there are humans involved who are sincerely interested in defending our society from these infernal alien creatures. The warning stated: 'WE KNOW YOUR SECRET. WATCH OUT! FURTHER PUBLICATIONS WILL BE LIFE THREATENING. - REPTILES.'

This event, compared with the one which T.S. experienced almost 45 years earlier, suggests that the 'human forces' in this area might still be engaged in a 'stand-off' and that the Reptilians had apparently gained some ground there to the point of being able to operate in surface society. The only explanations we have of how the 'Reptiles' might have been able to deposit the 'warning' in a library book would be that the chameleons, MIB, or possibly even a 'tranced' and implanted human being under their control was responsible.

Those who receive such threats should not be concerned, however, as there is much evidence that the reptilians are more afraid of humanity than we are of them. True, it's easy for these useless vermin to kidnap children, mutilate animals and human beings, and perform horrible genetic experiments while all the time hiding courageously in their

protected subterranean lairs. But will these unnatural abominations against nature dare to take on mankind out in the open?

R.W. is another correspondent of ours who was at one time a worker at the Dougway Proving Grounds where he was a courier with a high-level security clearance. While there he allegedly encountered 'people' that he was convinced 'were not human'. He wasn't sure what they were but he suggested that the government WAS involved in advanced robotics and they might have been androids. He was also privy to top-secret experiments involving electromagnetic transmission or transporting of physical objects from one area to another.

R.W. told of one experience he had in his younger days. This took place while he and a friend were exploring a cavern in the foothills some miles northeast of the capital building in Salt Lake, east of an area known as the 'pots' where they used to mix asphalt for the roads several years ago. Back in this cavern, which was some distance behind and (not to be confused with) a 'mine' that was located in the same area, he and his friend saw a scaly-reptilian hominoid creature, orangish in color, emerging from behind a rock. Needless to say they didn't stay around there for very long and even to this day R.W. refuses even to go near that cave. He apparently sensed something very evil about it.

Also, a security officer in Salt Lake informed one researcher of an entrance to a tunnel system which had been broken into several years ago by construction workers. This was in an area known as the 'Cinemas', in the lowest level of the Crossroads mall-plaza in downtown Salt Lake. This is the lowest part of the mall, located in a step-down area about 10 or 15 feet below the rest of the stores. This entrance is allegedly covered by a metal 'water meter' covering, according to the security officer. The same informant claimed that another security worker (in the mall) had told him that several people had attempted to explore these tunnels over the years and never returned. Some sources suggest that the FBI in the area is aware of these tunnels. After all, any incident involving missing persons would inevitably come under their jurisdiction. Perhaps they are keeping a lid on the whole situation in order to prevent widespread panic? There are also indications that the FBI is also aware of human & grey-reptilian controlled 'bases' throughout the state as well. The informant, K.S., stated that some years ago she knew an FBI agent in the area who confided that he was involved in secret government surveillance of UFO base locations in southern Utah, and showed her an entire table- map setup in his basement complete with marked maps, and so on (Monroe mountain in southern Utah was apparently a 'hot-spot' of activity. Whether it was 'benevolent' or 'malevolent' activity is uncertain.)

Also, there are some indications that Federal officials may have actually encountered the human inhabitants of some of these bases and/or caverns, and that as we've said some type of agreement may exist which involves FBI/Federal interaction in protecting the 'national security' of the HUMAN subterranean by discouraging intruders into 'sensitive' areas, etc. The human inhabitants of the underground bases are apparently in an uncomfortable position of protecting their own security from possible human intruders from above while at the same time on the defensive against the reptilian threat below. The 20/20 group (3463 State St., Suite 264., Santa Barbara, CA 93105) has gathered some interesting testimonies concerning apparent cooperation between Federal agents in

Utah and a high-tech race of humans based beneath the southern part of that state, who may be tied-in with ancient Native American groups who were driven underground by the Anglo-Saxon invasion of the American continent, perhaps explaining their extreme vigilance in defending their own national security. One of the human groups involved are allegedly 8 foot tall, muscular humans who would put Arnold Schwarzenegger to shame!

**As for the tunnel systems beneath Salt Lake City, the Police have allegedly placed silent alarms on most of the known entrances,** possibly due in part to the fact of the many disappearances that have taken place in the tunnels in the past. If unauthorized personnel happened to trip the alarms, the SLC police dept. would instantly be notified. When the security officer who related this expressed his interest in exploring these tunnels himself, he was warned by another against doing so. He was told that he might encounter the 'Lizard People' (exact wording) down there, and that if he did so he might not return alive. This security officer however did not take the threat seriously and doubts the existence of the alleged reptilians, but the references to reptilian hominoids should not be ignored, especially in light of the many HUNDREDS of similar reports which have come from widely diversified sources.

R.W. also recalls that when he was a young man he had entered a roped-off area in the mall (now Crossroads) where construction workers were employed. He went into the restricted area and noticed a very deep hole which descended into the ground and seemed to curve off in a horizontal direction lower down. This was long before the cinemas were constructed. After the workers confronted him and asked why he was there, he turned their attention to the hole, at which point they calmed down. They told him that 5 days previously a fellow construction worker had gone down the hole into some tunnels below. They were still in the area waiting for him to return. They made, he recalls, some comment about 'monsters' in the tunnel, and R.W. got the impression that they might have been half joking and half serious, and that they were somewhat scared themselves.

Another entrance to this underground system is said to be in the lowest level of the multi-leveled parking lot adjacent to the mall. The entrance to this particular tunnel is allegedly closed most of the time, but R.W.'s son just happened to be there one day when it was opened, he claims. He entered the tunnel and went some distance until it started getting dark and he saw 'men in suits' in the distance. He became frightened and left the scene quickly. Is it possible that a similar scenario is taking place in Salt Lake City as in Dulce, New Mexico and Madigan Hospital, Washington? - that is, a subtle infiltration of society by non-human beings? True, no actual accounts directly suggesting that this is taking place in Salt Lake have come our way, but if New Mexico, California and Washington State are areas where para-humans are arriving on the scene through a type of infestation or infiltration of human society, then is it not possible that other areas might be involved as well?

Another opening allegedly connected an underground lavatory which once existed several years ago below the sidewalk located on the southeast corner of the block just to the north of the mall. This entrance, however, was apparently filled in several years ago.

One branch of this system (according to one man who accidentally entered a 'door' to a 'janitors room' adjacent to the underground lavatory, a door which was usually locked)

said that he passed through into a tunnel area. Two tunnels, one leading east and one leading 'over two miles' to the south, were gated-off. Suddenly he was approached by a 'janitor' who seemed as if he was very disturbed by his presence and explained to him in a distressed and warning tone that that area was off limits and no one but no one was supposed to be in there.

One branch of the tunnel system that converges below the Crossroads mall, a system which according to some 'goes all over' beneath the city, is said to run eastward, connecting with A MASONIC LODGE some blocks away. This tunnel system or subnet is apparently not entirely controlled by either humans or reptilians, BUT SEEMS TO BE AN AREA OF CONFLICT AND/OR INTERACTION BETWEEN THE TWO GROUPS. Also, another subterranean 'convergence' is said to exist below Trolley Square elsewhere in the city, where early construction workers had allegedly broken- in to a system of ancient underground 'catacombs' and tunnels. It is uncertain whether or not these connect with those below the Crossroads mall. Up to this point it seems as if this conflict has been rather one-sided in favor of the reptilians or the serpent race.

There are also accounts to the effect that huge cavities exist beneath the Salt Flats, according to research conducted by certain geologist. This was confirmed by two sources, one of whom was a military reservist. He was told that a large underground lake lies deep below the Great Salt Lake (The Great Salt Lake has no exit to either the Atlantic or the Pacific oceans). A certain type of earthquake, it is believed, could conceivably create a fracture which theoretically could empty the entire contents of the Great Salt Lake into these large cavities below, they are that extensive. There are other accounts stating that a subterranean river runs from the Wasatch mountains, below the valley floor traveling west, and connects with an underground lake deep beneath the Great Salt Lake itself.

There are indications that both human and sauroid entities have been fighting over these underground systems for many years, and that as in installations below other states, the reptilian activity here involves abductions (both aerial and subsurface - and there are indications that sub terrain based 'aliens' have temporarily or permanently abducted humans from their basements or other underground enclosures, and in the case of the temporary abductions, erasing their memories of the event). This activity, if we are to believe certain accounts, also seems to involve kidnappings, genetic experimentation, 'hybrid' experiments, abductions of fetus' from female abductees, and God knows what else. There are also indications that some 'inner-planetary' human inhabitants may have taken refuge on the surface in the face of invading reptilian forces, and integrated themselves into surface society. There is also as we've suggested the possibility of 'chameleon' entities, or reptilians genetically engineered or through other means capable of appearing in outwardly human-like form that are capable of infiltrating our society (as in similar scenarios described in earlier files involving California, New Mexico, Washington State, etc.).

**IT IS ALSO CERTAIN THAT MANY, MANY PEOPLE ARE BEING HELD IN CAPTIVITY WITHIN REPTILIAN-CONTROLLED CAVERNS OR INSTALLATIONS BELOW THIS AREA!**

This possibility was confirmed by Val Valerian in 'THE LEADING EDGE' Newsletter, in which he stated:

"Scores of underground installations hold citizens of virtually every country on the planet in captivity."

In other words a "**Hidden Holocaust**" seems to be involved which is so horrifying that it staggers the human mind. Possibly the "holocaust" thrives as a result of the very (no doubt draconian-inspired) skepticism and ignorance of those on the surface who cannot bring themselves to believe that something like this is actually taking place. If something like this WAS taking place, then the public ignorance of the masses would ENSURE that such activity could continue. Humanity as a whole WILL NOT act upon anything unless they are convinced that their actions are based on real needs.

Even if countless numbers of humans are being held against their will in underground installations as many suggest, these are the more fortunate one's, for numerous CONFIRMING accounts state that others are the less fortunate victims of human mutilation, sources for biological 'secretions', and so on. Such subterranean 'abductions' apparently have occurred in areas which point to a definite subterranean influence, and we can assume that the infernal influence behind such abductions are connected to underground installations inhabited by the 'aliens' or 'greys', etc.

One possible subterranean 'abduction' was described by researcher John Grant. In his book '**GREAT MYSTERIES**' (Chartwell Books., Secaucus, NJ., 1988), Grant records the following frightening incident: "...In 1975 Mr. and Mrs. Jackson Wright were driving to New York through blinding snow; in the Lincoln Tunnel they agreed to pause and wipe snow from the front and rear windows. Jackson Wright never saw his wife, Martha, again."

People just don't 'disappear' without a trace, never to be heard from again, in a place like this unless SOMETHING intentionally causes such a disappearance to take place. There have, incidentally, been reports of 'UFO' like objects and/or alien creatures seen in connection with 'abductions' which took place in underground tunnels, some 'deserted' by our standards and others not. One case involved a teenage boy who claimed that his abductors took him underground in Europe via a long-abandoned World War II railway tunnel.

It is uncertain just how many human casualties have resulted in the Da'ath or Da'yath wars over the centuries, yet based on the various accounts which we have covered in these Files we can assume that the victims have been in the tens of thousands AT THE VERY LEAST.

In the meantime, the abductions of humans, an integral part of the 'evil ones' warfare against God and men's souls, are still taking place. Whether the victims are taken to underground or off-planet areas is difficult to tell in any individual case, although there is reason to believe that both possibilities are a reality. There have, believe it or not, been abductions which have occurred in connection with 'UFO' activity which have involved not a few, not dozens, nor hundreds but **THOUSANDS of people who have**

**disappeared, or been abducted, en masse without a trace.** Such is the case with the following well known and documented incident which has baffled several researchers who have mentioned it in their writings:

"In the Winter of 1930 a profoundly disturbing incident took place in Canada. Trapper Arnaud Lauret and his son observed a strange light crossing the northern sky. It appeared to be headed for the Lake Anjikuni area. The two trappers described it as being alternately bullet-shaped and cylinder-shaped...

"Another trapper named Joe LaBelle had snowshoed into the village of the Lake Anjikuni people, and been chilled to discover that the normally bustling community was silent, and not a soul was moving in the streets. Even the sled dogs, which would normally have bayed welcome, were silent. The shanties were choked with snow, and not a chimney showed smoke.

"The trapper found the village kayaks tied up on the shore of the lake. Inside the shanties the trapper found a further surprise: there were meals left hanging over fires, long grown old and moldy, apparently abandoned as they were being cooked. The men's rifles were still standing by the doors. This really frightened the trapper, because he knew that these people would never leave their precious weapons behind.

"He reported his discovery to the Royal Canadian Mounted Police, who investigated further. They discovered that the town's dogs died of hunger, chained beneath a tree and covered by a snowdrift. More disturbingly, the town graveyard had been emptied. The graves were now yawning pits. Despite the frozen ground, the graves had been opened and the dead removed..."

When we consider the possible infernal implications behind many of these abductions, we find here that the Lake Anjikuni incident is mockingly similar to a prophecy described in Christian revelation. In 1st Thessalonians, ch. 4 we read of a prophecy of a physical 'catching up' of Christian believers into the aerial realm, which will prophetically mark the beginning of the 7-year period during which the majority of the apocalyptic 'judgments' of the book of Revelation will take place. However, this prophecy also states that accompanying this miracle there would be another one involving the emptying of the graves of earlier believers who would be regenerated or 'translated' into incorruptible bodies. We know that the *Draconians often attempt to COUNTERFEIT divine working, as in their claims to have created man, or created Christ, their claim that man's evolution is in 'their' hands, their often unfulfilled prophecies of the future, their attempts to pass themselves off as 'gods', as well as the false 'miracles' of Fatima, etc.* If this is the case then one might expect them to counterfeit this miracle which some refer to as the 'rapture' as well. Could this have been a type of 'dry run' for a possible future counterfeit 'rapture'? We must remember that BOTH divinely-initiated interventions AS WELL AS their 'counterfeit' counterparts do occur. We should not ignore the reality of one at the expense of the other.

Whitley Strieber, who claimed to have had several abduction-type experiences since a young age involving different types of beings - both apparently physical and parapsychical, does not hold to the idea that these creatures are originally from deep space.

He believes that they MAY come from the nether regions of the earth, and may have been here for millennia, being part of an ancient conspiracy to occultically control or manipulate the human race. He is not certain exactly what the creatures were behind his abductions, but he did suggest that the ancient (fallen?) 'elementals' might be involved. Strieber had some comments of his own concerning the strange mass abduction near the Lake Anjikuni area, in his book 'MAJESTIC', he stated:

"The RCMP continues the case opened to this day. A check with the records department indicated that the matter remains unsolved, and despite a search of the whole of Canada and inquiries throughout the world, **not a single trace of the MISSING TWELVE HUNDRED MEN, WOMEN AND CHILDREN were ever found.**" Strieber related still another incident in this same book, of a mysterious abduction (apparently) to underground regions:

"...The first seemingly related case of disappearance in the U.S. history (that is, 'related' to cases given by Strieber earlier in his book, concerning people who were allegedly pursued by unknown objects and experienced NEAR abductions yet managed to escape - and others who were captured and never seen again, except for a few who managed to witness the abductions taking place - Branton)... took place on 23 September 1880 near the town of Gallatin, Tennessee. At approximately three-thirty on that sunny afternoon, Mr. David Lang, a farmer, dematerialized in front of five witnesses, including his wife, his two children, his father-in-law and a local judge.

"The father-in-law and the judge had just pulled up in a carriage. Mr. Lang moved toward them across a field followed by his family. Without warning, he simply ceased to exist. There was no cry, no sign of distress. Mrs. Lang, distraught, rushed up and pounded the ground where he had been walking. All that afternoon, and into the night the field was searched. Subsequently the county surveyor determined that there were no hidden caves or sinkholes in the area of the disappearance.

"The subsequent April, seven months later, the children heard their father crying distantly UNDERNEATH the field. He seemed desperate and tortured, and was begging for help. His voice gradually died away and was not heard again. Where he was last seen, there was a circle of WITHERED yellow grass twenty feet in diameter.

"The family moved away from the farm.

"It can be surmised that Mr. Lang was not removed above ground, but rather was taken into the earth and kept alive there for some months," Strieber continues, "judging from the cries that were heard the next April. What the poor man suffered during that time, and what finally put him out of his misery, can scarcely be imagined..."

"He was apparently left to languish in some subterranean prison, presumably dying when his food and water ran out."

Tennessee incidentally, HAS been known as an area which is profusely undermined with natural underground caverns; for instance, the GUINNESS BOOK OF WORLD RECORDS shows a photograph of a large underground lake called the 'LOST SEA', which lies 300 ft. underground in the Craighead Caverns, near Sweetwater, Tennessee.

This underground lake is one of the largest officially recognized and was discovered in 1905 and covers an area of 4 1/2 acres. The fact that subsurface features such as sinkholes, etc., were not 'apparent' beneath the field where Mr. Lang disappeared, does not necessarily mean that such underground chambers (whether natural or artificial) do not exist, since geological and environmental changes might have covered up such natural openings long ago. Also, researcher David A. Lewis described an account of an Indian chief who allegedly led his tribe to a giant flora and fauna filled cavern called the 'Grand God's Tepee' through a small cave north of Sweetwater, Tenn. Leaving the surface to escape the violence of the civil war, many or most of them allegedly returned after it ended.

British UFOlogist Timothy Good, in his book 'UFO REPORT' (Avon Books., N.Y., 1989), describes the unfortunate fate of several scientists who assisted in the development of the 'Star Wars' defense system. Apparently, they were either eliminated by those they worked for so that they would not reveal what they knew, or someone or something 'else' that was displeased with the ultimate product of their efforts was responsible for their tragic deaths. Certainly, all of these scientists dying at once cannot be explained in coincidental terms, whatever the case:

"...Reports of suspicious deaths, darkly and deeply linked to UFO's, persist, however, and continue to cause speculation. Word comes from Gordon Creighton, editor of the informative FLYING SAUCER REVIEW, who notes a possible deathly tie in with the U.S. 'Star Wars' program. He wrote to me in Nov. 1988 as follows:

"...here in Britain 22 scientists have reportedly either taken their own lives or died in very strange or mysterious circumstances. And it seems that most... were engaged in British work on behalf of, or related to the U.S. 'Star Wars' program. The British government, it seems, was trying to hush it up. But press statements here say that the U.S. government had put our government on the spot and demanded a full inquiry. So, quite clearly, it is either the Russians or THEM..."

"As many researchers have surmised, 'Star Wars', ostensibly conceived as a defensive system against Russian missile attack, may have had from it's beginning a 'defensive' UFO connection. Whatever the case, a 'mock test' in September, 1988, of an earth-shattering warhead - much like 'Star Wars' in reverse - was conducted at the Tonopah Test Range in Nevada. Announced as a proposed super-weapon designed to destroy Russian underground command centers dug in solid rock down to 1,000 (feet), some UFO analysts believe that the real target is not Russian but another adversary deep down in cavernous installations IN NEVADA AND NEW MEXICO.

"According to the Pentagon, the proposed earth-penetrating warhead is 'urgently needed'. According to rumor-mills, an alien race - the 'grays' - in their fortified underground laboratories, are genetically experimenting with the human race. Even more ominous, rumors say that their intransigence today may lead to new perils tomorrow."

Evidence is beginning to mount that many of the human and animal organs from mutilation victims are being used by an entirely different 'alien' group than the reptilians-saurians, although the sauroids are apparently assisting in the construction of physical-

biological 'forms' which can be 'possessed' by an insidious group of SPIRIT or SUPERNATURAL non- physical entities, the 'infernals'. The LEADING EDGE Magazine for March, 1990, quoted one 'inside' source as saying that: "These beings... have a physical presence generate biological structures that function as containers for them... the aliens manufacture containers for themselves... fabricate their own bodies - using biologicals gained from humans and cattle..."

A publication titled 'AMERICA'S MISSING & EXPLOITED CHILDREN' (published by the U.S. Department of Justice, Office of Juvenile Justice and Delinquency Prevention, Washington D.C.) made the following statement: "Even the most conservative estimates suggest that several hundred thousand children are missing within the course of the year." (in the United States). Also: "...In 1983, the U.S. Dept. of Health and Human Services put the number at 1.5 million a year -- a figure that has been widely circulated by private organizations. But experts say roughly 95 percent of these are runaways -- many of whom return home within days and are counted repeatedly if they run away more than once a year." This would apparently put the number of those who are 'abducted' in one way or another at around 75,000 per year...

STILL A CONSIDERABLY LARGE NUMBER.

'Commander X', from his apparent though guarded vantage-point within the Intelligence Community, claims to be privy to much 'deep-level' inside information, as we have seen in earlier writings. One of the reports that crossed his desk involved an experience of a woman who was 'abducted' and taken over 1000 miles to the underground facility below Dulce, New Mexico:

"...One woman I have spoken with was abducted from the roof of a New York City apartment building and apparently held underground at the Dulce facility. She was taken to a cabin in the desert which was being used as a camouflaged entrance to the 'alien' base. She was eventually escorted to the laboratories to be used as a test subject, but at the last minute managed to escape thanks to the aid of one of the Nordic-type, tall aliens, who befriended her and showed her a secret way out, down an unguarded shaft.

"Back in the desert, she was rescued by members of the Blue Berets, and eventually flown back to Manhattan. During a de-briefing session with the military, she was warned to remain silent about her experiences. Anyone hearing such a bizarre tale would certainly think she had gone insane. **It was inferred she could be committed to a mental institution at any time should she refuse to go along with the cover-up conspiracy,** which she was told was being conducted 'for the sake of the country, and the sake of the world!'" (right!!! - Branton)

William Cooper has stated at a MUFON symposium in Las Vegas that over 3,000 children disappear yearly in one section of Manhattan alone. Could there be some connection!?

The accounts of disappearances around underground tunnels and caverns are seemingly endless, as we see in the following account from Harold T. Wilkins' book 'FLYING SAUCERS UNCENSORED', p. 47:

"June 7, 1954: Three German tourists who entered the vast Lamprecht Cave, near Lofer, in the Salzburg mountain region of Austria have never been found. Their automobile was left locked outside the cave.

"...The above may very well be merely a case of amateur speleologists getting lost in labyrinthine caves, although it is unusual for THREE men to vanish in this fashion. But I must risk the charge of being accused of fancy and moonshine, when I say that both in England and the United States, there are regions of limestone caverns and mountains from which... queer phenomena associated with white lights descending to ground level from great altitudes have been reported!"

And then we have the following cases as revealed by John Keel in his book 'OUR HAUNTED PLANET', pp. 202-208:

"There are periodic waves of disappearances which create brief sensations in the newspapers and are quickly forgotten. No one ever manages to find out where these people have gone. In 1912 five men, all unrelated, disappeared unaccountably in a single week in Buffalo, New York. Montreal, Canada, had a wave of missing persons in July, 1883, and again in July, 1892.

"Children vanish more frequently than any other group. We're not talking about ordinary runaways. In August, 1869, thirteen children vanished in Cork, Ireland. No sign of kidnapping or foul play. The same month there was a wave of disappearing children in Brussels, Belgium. Another group of youngsters melted away in Belfast in August, 1895. And again in August, 1920, eight girls (all under twelve years of age) disappeared forever in Belfast...

"Actually, children have been disappearing in large numbers for centuries all over the world, and most of these cases have remained unsolved. In the Middle Ages it was popularly believed that fairies and leprechauns frequently stole children away. The Indians of North and South America also have many myths and stories about children being kidnapped by little people. The notion that parahumans kidnap children is deeply entrenched in every culture..."

"The celebrated Pied Piper of Hameln, Germany, is more than just a charming children's story. A stranger actually did appear in Hameln in the Middle Ages, and he lured away 150 children never to be seen again. The event is still commemorated with an annual festival in Hameln (one of the old accounts says that the children were taken to a subterranean cavern - Branton).

*"In A.D. 1212 a teenage boy in France, Stephen of Cloyes, BEGAN TO HEAR VOICES which inspired him to collect together fifty thousand children for the pathetic Children's Crusade. They marched off to do battle with the infidels and disappeared EN MASSE. The popular explanation is that they were all seized by slavers.*

"...Ufologist Jerome Clark uncovered an extraordinary item from an old 1939 newspaper. 'On a day in the late summer, 1939, a military transport left the Marine Naval Air Station in San Diego, California, for routine flight to Honolulu,' Clark wrote in FLYING SAUCER REVIEW. 'About three hours afterwards several urgent distress signals

sounded from the plane and then silence. Later the craft came limping back to execute an emergency landing. When Air Station personnel entered the plane, they found every man of the crew, including the copilot who had lived long enough to pilot the craft back to its base, dead of unknown causes (researcher Charles Berlitz related elsewhere that they had been mutilated - Branton).

Keel continues quoting from the old article: "Each of the bodies carried large, gaping wounds, and the outside of the ship was similarly marked. Air Station men who touched parts of the craft came down with a mysterious skin infection.

**"One of the most puzzling aspects of the whole affair was that the .45 automatics carried by the pilot and copilot as service pieces HAD BEEN EMPTIED, AND THE SHELLS LAY ON THE FLOOR.** A smell of rotten eggs pervaded the atmosphere inside the plane...Mysterious skin infections and rotten egg odors (hydrogen sulfide) are phenomena familiar to all UFO researchers. It would seem that the transport was attacked--apparently without provocation--by some sort of strange aerial intruder."

The following account, taken from the May, 1946 issue of AMAZING STORIES (pp. 171-173) seems to contain information which would explain many of the 'missing pieces' of the overall 'Men In Black' phenomena. At least some of the 'MIB' have been variously described as 'androidal' like beings, although as John Keel has stated some seem to portray reptilian aspects, and in a few cases obviously human entities have been described. Christa Tilton allegedly encountered some 'MIB' in a black auto near Boynton Canyon, near Sedona, Arizona. She described them as follows: "The men did not look right. Their faces had no expression on them whatsoever. They looked like they were wearing chalky tan makeup. Their movements were robot-like and unearthly." The AMAZING STORIES letter, which was quite lengthy and excerpts of which we quote below, was submitted by a Mr. Edward John of (at the time) 475 Fell St., San Francisco, CA.:

"Sirs... I have enjoyed your stories for many years as I have read AMAZING since the first issue back in 1928 if I remember right.

"...I think I can show you an entrance to this subterranean city that he (Shaver) has written about several issues back. Here is what happened to me and you may judge for yourself. In 1931 my mother and I took up a section of land as a cattle raising homestead from the U.S. Government and naturally it was not a choice piece... a person who turned out to be our nearest neighbor gave us some hints and as the place was only six miles from his we stayed at his ranch until we built our house. Then we moved into our own and all in all we stayed there about two years before we quit; and now I will relate the things that caused us to quit, which at the time I did not know much about, but since Mr. Shaver wrote, now I know and marvel that we managed to stand two years without getting killed by these things from below.

"As a note of interest I have had to use 30,000 rounds of ammunition in the period and perhaps that is why we are still here. At night I would sit up fully dressed all night with a rifle in my hands, ready, and an extra one by my side. In about five hours after dark I would hear things moving outside the house and after a while something would try to

open the door quietly and I would wait until I saw the knob turn, then let go a clip right through the door and then pull it open and look around outside and there was nothing to be seen. After a couple of nights like that, that performance would stop and something new would be tried.

"There are too many incidents to be told in one letter, the best one was the two disappearing automobiles, which happened at about ten at night over at the neighbor's place. It was as follows: the neighbor and we were sitting on the porch after supper when he saw headlights come over the hill to the fence then along the fence for about half a mile, then go out and that was all that night. So next morning we went to the trail along the fence and there were tire tracks of seven inch width tires *and they went along the fence into the box canyon and right up against a smooth boulder about 20 feet in diameter and ended there.* Now the car could not turn around anywhere in that place because the road is a trail five feet wide and one side is against our neighbor's fence, which was not damaged and the other was a steep hill that no car could even make in compound low. You know, we have a few mountains here, and as far as backing out I tried that myself in the daytime with help and I could not steer a straight enough path without crossing my other marks so they did not back out or we would have trailed them as my neighbor has lived around there since 1848 and he sure knew his tracking. We never did get an answer to the question of where did the cars go.

"The cars were very large and black and very heavy and now that I compare them they were about twenty years ahead of anything I have ever seen anywhere and I had worked in the auto business for about five years before we took up the land. They were silent, smooth, no wavering of the lights and the trail is extremely rough; in places it has hollows a yard deep, but these cars went through at about 25 mph, and it would even wreck a jeep to do that, so you figure it out and let me know the answer if you can. By wavering of lights, I mean that the beams were steady and not flashing up and down as an ordinary car would do when a rough road is traveled.

"I have been away from there since 1933, but just about three months ago, I drove through with a friend for safety and my place is razed to the ground and everything that was made by human hands has been carried off even the old tin cans, and the place would not be noticed unless you knew where it was. The Coast and Geodetic survey had a marker near my house in the front yard and even that is gone; who would want to take a concrete marker and carry it away?

"...after two weeks, you can hear insects running on the ground, (also) forest fires will not burn there. They burnt 250,000 acres, then burnt all around this area; and that stopped the forest rangers. They never could understand because most of it is on the slope of a mountain and it should have gone, but they saw that the wind came down and blew from the top down and blew North, South, East and West at once and that was the only time that the wind ever blew there.

"Also you can detect an atmosphere of fear within 30 miles of the area and you will not get a statement from anyone who lives around there and the people in the valleys are afraid of the people in the hills. One farmer erected 20 foot barbed wire fences and a

heavy gate across the road that leads to my old place. The gate would take a tank to knock down, so maybe there is something there, after all.

"It is located 110 miles north of San Francisco in Mendocino county and is directly on the old Pieta toll road that ran between Hopland and Lakeport in Lake county of which Clear Lake is quite a summer resort. If you care to look it up on a map get a good auto road map and look due south off the road midway between towns and you will note an area with no roads bounded by Sonoma Lake and lower Mendocino counties and there is it. If you wish to go there, be sure that enough people know where you went. Maybe they will be able to find you. There have been several disappearances along that stretch of road, even trucks have vanished. All the U.S. Government's.

"The U.S. Government has noted the area as rough, unsurveyable and UNEXPLORED...

"Personally I do not care to go near the place, but if there is some way of driving the things out I would help if I can so that someone else could live there safely.

"...Also I forgot to mention there is a cave on the property that has steps leading down and there is no sound when a rock is thrown in. I have never seen it, but I understand that it is there... Also, several people have died of heart failure and some have gone insane, I found out later.

"I think the thing that saved us was the fact that I am not surprised at anything and that I am quick to shoot and I can shoot without sighting and by ear and not having the thought of shooting fixed so that the things would be warned. After **that place, I was able to outshoot U.S. Marine sharpshooters.** I tried competing in a match and I just never missed any target at any range. If I could see it, I could hit it, 5 out of 5. I have tried practice machine guns at plane models and I hit 3 out of 5 at speeds up to 700 mph scale without using the sights. So the old ranch gave me something worthwhile after all.

"Due to my physical condition, I cannot get into any armed forces, so that talent is wasted, for you see I have a bad leg and cannot walk more than a mile at a time. Since I left the ranch I have been in the radio business and have not owned a gun since '34, because as long as I stay away from there I don't need one..."

### **Casualties Of A Cosmic War** - Part 3 of 3

The 'I.N.F.O. JOURNAL' (box 367., Arlington, VA, 22210), publication devoted to 'Fortean' research, Vol. IV, No. 2 issue, related one of the most frightening and disturbing accounts of subterranean abduction that we have come across yet. The article, titled 'MOUNTAIN OF DEATH' and written by David D. Browne, originally appeared in the June 1972 issue of WALKABOUT, published in Sydney, Australia:

"**Black Mountain** comes almost as a shock when you see it first.

"Traveling by bus just south of Cooktown, North Queensland (Australia), a bend in the road suddenly discloses it and the visual impact can bring an involuntary exclamation, as you see it -- black, bare and sinister, a 1,000 ft. high pile of enormous boulders two miles long, rearing out of the rain-forest.

"This is 'the Mountain of Death.' Aborigines will not go near it. An ancient legend warns them of danger. White men fear it too, because of the numbers of men who have gone there and disappeared without a trace, as if the earth -- or the mountain -- had swallowed them. Birds and animals shun the area.

"The rocks give off a curious metallic ring when struck, and the only sound is the croaking of countless frogs sheltered in the depths where the great granite boulders lie against each other.

"In Brisbane's Public Library, a yellowing newspaper cutting tells some of the story:

"Grim tragedy has been associated with the mountain ever since it has been known to white man.

"Three men with horses completely disappeared at the mountain. They vanished as if the earth had opened and swallowed them up, for absolutely no trace of them has ever been discovered, although police and backtrackers and hundreds of local residents scoured the mountain and surrounding country.'

"Then following the names and occupations of several others who disappeared, and the dates of their disappearance. The cutting continues:

"This constitutes one of the most amazing stories in the police history of the far north, for not one of the mysteries has been solved and probably never will be.'

"Another newspaper cutting, signed Nancy Francis, reads:

"The formation of these mountains is unique; their appearance grotesque. They are mountains of huge boulders full of chasms that go down to unsounded depths. Only a few rock wallabies and a few turkeys live near these grim, forbidding hills. The Aborigines regard the Black Mountains with dread.'

"In the files of the Cooktown police, dating back 25 years, there is a report made by a Sergeant of Police who discussed the mountain with a man whom he refers to as Mac. Mac began:

"Know anything about Black Mountain, or so-called 'Mountain of Death'? Its aboriginal name is Kalcajagga.'

"What does it look like at close quarters?' I asked.

"Just a mass of tumbled granite blocks; hardly any vegetation. The only living things there are black rock wallabies and enormous pythons 16 feet or more long and able to swallow a wallaby whole. The ridge is honeycombed with caves, nearly all unexplored. They dip down below ground level but nobody knows their extent or what they contain.'

"The latest fatalities, he reported, had occurred only a few years earlier when two young men set out to solve the riddle of earlier disappearances in the caves. They were never heard of again. Two black trackers who tried to trace them disappeared too.

"Then Mac went back to the beginning of the mountain's grim story.

"The first-known fatality was that of a carrier named Grayner, in 1977. He had been searching on horseback for strayed bullocks when he, with his horse and bullocks, vanished without a trace. Thirteen years later, Constable Ryan, stationed at Cooktown, tracked a 'wanted' man to the scrub at the foot of the mountain. Other trackers followed his trail to the entrance of one of the caves, but he was never seen again. Nor was the 'wanted' man.

"More recently a gold prospector named Renn was added to the list of mysterious disappearances.

"Well-organized police teams with trackers combed the whole area for weeks without finding him.

"Then there was the case of Harry Owens, a station owner from Oakley Creek. One Sunday morning he rode over towards Black Mountain looking for strayed cattle. When he didn't return on time his partner, George Hawkins, alerted the police then went out to look for him himself. But by the time the police joined in the search, Hawkins had also disappeared. Two of the native police trackers entered one of the caves. **ONLY ONE OF THEM CAME OUT.** He was so unnerved by what seemed to have been an experience of terror that he could give no clear account of what happened to them both.

"Mac even knew a white man who had penetrated the caves and lived to tell the tale, and produced a newspaper cutting of his story. It read:

"Armed with a revolver and a strong electric torch I stepped into the opening. Like other Black Mountain caverns it dipped steeply downwards, narrowing as it went.

"Suddenly I found myself facing a solid wall of rock, but to the right there was a passageway just large enough for me to enter in a stooping position. I moved along it carefully for several yards. The floor was fairly level, the walls of very smooth granite. The passage twisted this way and that, always sloping deeper into the earth.

"Presently I began to feel uneasy. A huge bat beat its wings against me as it passed, but I forced myself to push on. Soon my nostrils were filled **WITH A SICKLY, MUSTY STENCH. THEN MY TORCH WENT OUT.**

"I was in total darkness. It was inky black. From somewhere that seemed like the bowels of the earth I could hear faint moaning of bats.

"I began to get panicky and I groped and floundered back the way I thought I had come. My arms and legs bleeding from bumps with unseen rocks. My outstretched hands clawed at space where I expected solid wall and floor. At one stage where I wandered into a side passage I came to what was undoubtedly the brink of a precipice, judging by the echoes.

"The air was **FOUL** and I felt increasing **DIZZINESS.**

"Terrifying thoughts were racing through my mind about giant rock pythons I have often seen around Black Mountain.

"As I crawled along, getting weaker and losing all hope of ever getting out alive, I saw a tiny streak of light. It gave me super strength to worm my way towards a small cave mouth half a mile from the one I had entered.

"Reaching the open air, I gulped in lungfulls of it and fell down exhausted.

"I found I had been underground for five hours, most of the time on my hands and knees. A king's ransom would not induce me to enter those caves again...'

"Such are some of the weird stories told of the mountain.

"These and the extraordinary structure of the mountain itself give rise to many questions, scientific and otherwise.

"On the scientific aspect, the following comments come from a member of the staff of the James Cook University of North Queensland, Dept. of Geology, Associate Professor P.J. Stephenson.

"He says, 'I have visited and climbed the mountain concerned. It is composed of huge granite boulders covered with black lichen. The complete black surface coating may be uncommon but the boulder pile is less so. Near Chillagoe and at several other localities in north Queensland similar phenomena exist.

"The occurrences are somewhat puzzling because of their relative rarity. However, they must have been produced by rapid erosion of the 'skeletal' soil profile. Many soil profiles contain fresh rock 'kernels' in them and removal of the soil component would produce a boulder pile. But such removal takes place so slowly the 'kernels' also weather completely...'

"There are still some practical questions to ask, however.

"What really did happen to those people who at various times in the last hundred years, have been said to disappear, vanish without a trace?

"...Any party that decides to unravel the mystery of the mountain will need to be very carefully organized and equipped to meet any hazard, likely or unlikely -- not forgetting the possibility of meeting a very real python. CR: Simpson."

In apparent relation to William Cooper's allegations concerning the connections between the Kennedy assassination, MJ-12, UFO's and so on we have the following very interesting yet very disturbing 'connection' which was related by John Keel in his book '**OUR HAUNTED PLANET**' (1968., Fawcett Crest., Greenwich, Conn.):

"In his detailed report on the Maury Island UFO (incident) of 1947, Kenneth Arnold also describes meeting a small, dark foreign looking man who was tinkering with the motor on a beat-up boat in TACOMA HARBOR. Ray Palmer, editor of 'AMAZING STORIES' in Chicago, had commissioned Arnold to investigate the puzzling Maury Island affair,

which began when a 'donut-shaped object' had rained 'slag' onto a boat near Maury Island. Pieces of that slag had killed a dog aboard the boat and slightly injured a boy, the son of Harold Dahl, who was piloting it. Early the next morning, according to Dahl's story, a 1947 Buick drove up to his home and a black-suited man of medium height visited him. This man, Dahl said, recited in detail everything that had happened the day before AS IF HE HAD BEEN THERE. Then he warned Dahl not to discuss his sighting to anyone, hinting that if he did there might be unpleasant repercussions which would affect him and his family. Since Dahl and the others had not yet told anyone of their sighting, and since UFOs were still publicly unknown (Arnold's sighting over Mount Rainier and the attendant publicity did not occur until three days later), Dahl was naturally nonplussed by his strange visitor. This was the first modern MIB report.

"Dahl's boss, FRED L. CRISMAN (he also owned the boat), became a central figure in the mystery. DAHL HIMSELF VANISHED SOON AFTER HIS INTERVIEW WITH ARNOLD, and the efforts by later investigators (such as Harold T. Wilkins, a British author) have failed to locate him. Crisman had been A FLIER IN WORLD WAR II, and he was suddenly RECALLED into the service in 1947, FLOWN TO ALASKA, and later stationed in Greenland. In recent years amateur sleuths engaged in investigating the alleged conspiracy to assassinate President John F. Kennedy have tried to implicate CRISMAN. District Attorney JAMES GARRISON of New Orleans subpoenaed one FRED LEE CRISMAN of TACOMA, WASHINGTON, to testify before the Grand Jury listening to Garrison's evidence against Clay Shaw (as is portrayed in the best-selling movie 'JFK' - Branton), according to wire service stories in November, 1968. Crisman was identified as a radio announcer, but Garrison's investigations implied that HE WAS EITHER A MEMBER OF THE CIA OR HAD BEEN 'ENGAGED IN UNDERCOVER ACTIVITY FOR A PART OF THE INDUSTRIAL WARFARE COMPLEX.' He allegedly operated under a cover as a preacher and was 'engaged in work to help Gypsies.' These stories caused a chain reaction in UFO circles, since UFO believers have long accused the CIA of being somehow connected with the flying saucer mystery. Of course, the CIA was in its infancy in 1947 at the time of the Maury Island case and was then largely staffed by NAVAL personnel from World War II intelligence units.

"Clay Shaw was tried early in 1969, accused by Garrison of having conspired to murder President Kennedy. He was found innocent and freed. The exact nature of Crisman's testimony before the Grand Jury IS NOT KNOWN. He did not testify at the actual trial...

"The Maury Island case fell apart in Arnold's hands. The slag samples given to him by Dahl and Crisman *WERE SWITCHED BY SOMEONE*; *two investigating Air Force officers, Brown and Davidson, WERE KILLED WHEN THEIR PLANE CRASHED shortly after leaving Tacoma*; DAHL VANISHED; Crisman was literally exiled to Greenland for two years; Tacoma newsman Paul Lance, who helped Arnold in his investigation, DIED SUDDENLY A SHORT TIME LATER. Palmer claims that a cigar box filled with original slag samples WAS STOLEN from his Chicago office soon afterwards.

"At one point Ted Morello of the United Press took Arnold aside and told him:

"You're involved in something that is beyond our power here to find out anything about... We tried to find out information at McChord Field (the Tacoma Air Force base) and drew a blank, and we have informants there who practically smell the runaways for news... We've exhausted every avenue attempting to piece what has happened together so it makes some sense... I'm just going to give you some sound advice. Get out of this town until whatever it is blows over.'

"Arnold got into his private plane and headed for home. He stopped in Pendleton, Oregon, to refuel, and shortly after he took off again, HIS ENGINE STOPPED COLD. Only quick thinking and expert flying saved him from a serious crash..."

The following locations are areas where, according to various sources, actual conflicts have taken place between humans and, in most cases, sauroid-reptilian beings. Most of these conflicts have taken place within or near entrances to underlying artificial tunnels or natural cavern systems.

Each site will be NAMED, followed by the TYPE of conflict (ranging from abductions or mutilations against humans by the saurians-reptilians; to battles or attacks upon the saurians by human forces); Next, the specific SITE of the 'conflict'; followed by a DESCRIPTION of the human and alien beings involved in the conflict; And finally the SOURCE of the information. Although many such conflicts have allegedly taken place in other countries, the highest concentrations seem to have occurred in the U.S., which will be the major focus of this list. These sites are as follows:

- 1) DIXONVILLE, PA - (abduction-murder/Dixonville mine tunnel/miners vs. saurian-reptoids) - source: Patrick O'Connel.
- 2) Lincoln Tunnel, New York state - (abduction- disappearance/road tunnel/ humans vs. unknown) - source: John Grant.
- 3) Hopland-Lakeport, CA - (abductions/mountain road between towns-underground caverns/U.S. Govt. vs. MIB & possibly Reptilians - MIB vehicles seen to disappear into cliff) - source: Raymond A. Palmer.
- 4) Superstition Mts. east of Phoenix, AZ - (abductions-murders/mountains-Boyton Canyon also-underground bases/miners & explorers vs. MIB & sauroid reptilians) - source: 'Commander X'.
- 5) Nellis Range & Military complex, southern NV - (abductions-murders/underground bases: S-4, Groom Lake, Dreamland, Blue Diamond, Indian Springs, Mercury, Test Site, etc.,/loyal U.S. Govt. vs. Reptilians of various types, MIB & 'controlled' secret govt.) - source: Michael Lindemann.
- 6) Dulce, M.M. - (battles-abductions-mutilations- murders/underground bases surrounding Dulce/scientists, locals & special forces vs. Reptilians of various types & 'implanted' CIA- secret govt.) - source: Paul Bennewitz.
- 7) Salt Lake City, UT - (abductions-murder/tunnels beneath Crossroads cinemas & caverns below Wasatch Mts./explorers, workers & subsurface humans vs. Reptilians of

various types & MIB; also possible growing conflict & dissension between 'hu-brid slaves' and sauroid reptilians) - source: S.L. security workers.

8) Gallatin, TN - (abduction/subterranean chambers/farmers vs. unknown) - source: Whitley Strieber.

9) Manhattan, N.Y. - (abductions/tunnels-underground bases/missing persons vs. saurian grays, etc.) - source: 'Commander X'.

10) Boston, Mass. - (abduction/from basement & sub-basements to tunnels-caverns/missing persons vs. unknown) - source: Raymond A. Palmer.

11) Between Helvetia & Newville, W VA. - (abduction/caverns & tunnels/explorers-surface workers & subterranean humans vs. unknown) - source: Joan Howard.

12) Fort Wayne, CO - (abduction-captivity/underground base/former Dulce worker & others vs. Reptoid saurians & MIB) - source: Val Valerian.

13) Redwood Falls, Minn. - (battles & subterranean woman rescued/small opening outside of town leading to tunnels-caverns/surface U.S. soldier & subsurface humans vs. Reptilian 'dero'!?) - source: Raymond A. Palmer.

14) Cushman, ARK - (battles/tunnels-cavern systems west & northwest of town/surface & subsurface human alliance vs. saurian-serpents; also human-Sasquatch vs. saurian-serpents) - source: Charles A. Marcoux.

15) Burley, ID - (psychic attack-murder/tunnel about 6 mi. west of town to underlying caverns/human victim-explorer vs. unknown) - source: Raymond A. Palmer.

16) McCallester, OK - (battle-conflict, shots fired/cavern & artificial tunnels beneath mound/armed human explorers vs. unknown) - source: Charles A. Marcoux.

17) Kansas City, MO - (battle-conflict-human escapes/cave hidden in cliff on shore of Missouri River/human explorer vs. Reptoid!?) - source: Charles A. Marcoux.

18) New Kensington, PA - (chase-escape/sewer tunnel near town/local children vs. infant 'sauroid' which was chased back into a 'sewer' opening from where it emerged) - source: Lucius Farish.

19) Loveland, OH - (attack, shots fired/Little Miami & Ohio rivers/farmers & armed police officers vs. semi-aquatic or subterranean 'lizard' like sauroid encounter on road & which escaped back to the river) - source: Loren Coleman.

Still another apparent 'casualty' of this cosmic warfare between Man-kind and the serpent race(!?) was described in a letter addressed to SEARCH Magazine, which appeared in it's September, 1960 issue:

"Dear Rap (i.e. Raymond A. Palmer):

"I have been following your pursuits of UFO(s)... through your magazines for some time with consuming interest, especially the Shaver Mystery. There's an item or two

concerning this that I have been intending to write you about for some time. Sometimes during the year about 1946 to 1947 I heard that **Dr. William Beebee** wrote an article published in the 'Atlantic Monthly' in which he made a remark about 'the coming invasion of the earth by the underground race.' When I remarked on this to a fellow worker of mine he said 'Isn't he the scientist - oceanographer who disappeared?' I was startled by his sudden question and said that I didn't know, and asked if he knew anything of the circumstances surrounding his disappearance. He said he understood or heard that on one of Dr. Beebee's descents to the ocean floor OFF THE COAST OF FLORIDA, he was missing from the inside the diving bell when it was brought up! Do you have anything on this? I had been wanting to look for some corroboration of this to see if it could be true or if the present whereabouts of William Beebee is known. Then I am reminded of the disappearance of another prominent person, the world traveler and explorer **Richard Halliburton**. I am sure I read only a few years ago that he was presumed to be lost at Sea in a storm...."

The number of 'casualties' keep pouring in...

<http://www.geocities.com/Area51/Shadowlands/6583/under006.html>

## *Subterranean Worlds*

### *Interview with Al Bielek - 1991*

---

#### **Underground Cities of Mars**

Source: The Sovereign Scribe  
[http://www.freezone.org/mc/e\\_conv06.htm](http://www.freezone.org/mc/e_conv06.htm)

Interview provided courtesy of QUANTUM COMMUNICATIONS.

This is a collection of Material from the book "Matrix III" (The Psocho-Social, Chemical, Biological, and Electronic Manipulation of Human Consciousness), from Valdamar Valerian, First Edition Printing May 1992, Copyright 1992 Valdamar Valerian. Adress: Leading Edge Research, P.O. Box 7530, Yelm, Washington State 98597.

Interview with Al Bielek 1991

Al Bielek, noted lecturer on the famous "Philadelphia Experiment" and the time travel/mind control experiments of the "Montauk Project," recently spoke with The Scribe interview team in Yelm.

Bielek gave an update on the current use of mind control and psychic warfare, and also offered a more detailed account of his experience in the Montauk Project. Montauk, also known as the Phoenix Project, used Bielek and his brother Duncan Cameron, to explore the underground cities of Mars.

SS: Sovereign Scribe - AB: Al Bielek

SS: Regarding your experience on Mars you walked through the time tunnel, you take a step and you're on Mars: What did you see?

AB: Well I was not on the surface of Mars. We were in the underground. The story goes back to the Alternative 3 book, the TV production in England outlining the fact that we have Mars bases, one or more, Provided by a joint operation with the US. government. I do not know if the Russians are in on it - and aliens. They are on the surface bases It's a World Government operation really, that's not strictly the United States government.

After they were on the surface which was about 1969, they found that there where entrances to the underground sealed and they knew there was something down there. The rumors were that there was probably artifacts from an ancient civilization buried underground because there were a lot of remains above ground, ruined cities that have been there by NASA's estimates maybe 300,000 years, 250,000 years. But they found the entrances all blocked, all scaled off to any underground areas. So the word went back through communications (in the late 70's) to whomever back to the Montauk and Phoenix project, "Can you do anything about this for us? We can't get into the underground of Mars." They said, "Yes, I think we can. Give us some coordinates on the surface of the planet. We'll have to run astronomical computation." Which they did and plugged these all into the computer. They wanted two people to go and it happened to be Duncan and myself.

SS: Why two?

AB: To corroborate what the other one saw and also in case there was any problems in the underground. They didn't really know what was down there.

So they sent us and we went up there in the underground. [Using the Montauk Time-Space "Tunnel" device, developed as a result of the Philadelphia Experiment. (See Scribe issues 9,13 and 14.)] There was a problem with light. We had to take lighting with us at the time. Later on, if I remember, we found some of their light sources and turned those on. We found eventually that the last remnants of the Martians, if you wish to call them that, died in the underground between 10 and 20,000 years ago by estimate, and they left everything they had of their civilization underground. We found enormous amounts of statuary which appeared to be religious.

SS: What did they look like? How big were they?

AB: Typically 6,7,8 foot tall, stone, gems embedded in them and so forth.

SS. These were of human-like people?

AB: Yes. They were quite well preserved. Then we found archives. We found a lot of scientific equipment. We found electronic equipment down there; tons and tons of stuff. And the rumor was also later that ... I didn't recall until Duncan reminded me of it about a week ago. He said, "Don't forget the **17,000 metric tons of Martian gold they took out. According to his recollection of it, it was very strange gold. It was 5 times denser**

**than ours.** It was worth an unbelievable fortune. Where it went we have no idea, but it was returned to Montauk and from there it went somewhere. There were several authorized trips. And Duncan and I got the bright idea since everything was in the computer let's take a trip or two on our own and do our own exploring. So we did. After the second one it was found out and we were stopped. That was when he got into the archives and found enormous records of the civilization which was buried down there.

SS: What did you find out?

AB: He was the one that read them. I couldn't read them.

SS. He didn't tell you?

AB: No. Well he did at the time but I can't remember any of it now. It's a very strange memory. On again, off again, and that part of it was never made clear to me as to what he really found. Right after that we were removed.

But I do remember some of the other installations we saw down there. They had very odd, large generators of some type. If you did not see it, I recommend that you go see the movie Total Recall. In fact it was seeing that movie that reminded me of the fact that I had been there. Not the colonies but the shots of the underground where they showed these large, round canisters where the director said these were probably for oxygen generation. I'm not quite sure but we think so. I looked at them and said, "They're not round. They're hexagonal." And I asked myself, "how the hell did I know that?" So that was our view of Mars from the underground. We didn't see hardly a thing of it from the surface.

SS: Did you see ice under the surface like in Total Recall?

All: Ice? No.

SS: If I remember the Movie, that's what they melted a lot of ice to create the atmosphere.

AB: It was not ice under there. There were oxygen generators and they also had some storage. There was a generating system which apparently the ancients had left. I don't really know much about it. but it was activated before they moved the surface colonies in. They also melted down the polar caps. The rumors are that they used a hydrogen bomb or two for that. I don't know if that's true. But they did melt down a lot of the polar ice so they would have some water. It's still sparse but they have it. The atmosphere is thin but they have atmosphere. And the temperature is warm enough. In the equatorial region they have no problem surviving. It runs about 50o and of course the astronomers have known this for about 50 years or more. It's quite livable in terms of temperature.

SS: The lighting that you mentioned. What was that like?

AB: Unknown form of illumination, after we found out how to turn it on. Some of the power generators are still working. After we turned on the underground lighting we had no lack of light. Otherwise we had to carry our own and portable lighting was not all that effective because we were dealing with larger underground chambers, several hundred

feet across high ceiling and portable lights are not very good for a large chamber like that. Eventually we found where they had their own lighting. It was very bright.

SS: Have you any information on the face on Mars?

AB: Not that I remember in the underground. There's more than one face on Mars, by the way. They found several. But I remember the NASA announcements some years ago, about 2 years ago that they're receiving a low frequency radio transmission from Mars. It was about 50 kilohertz, if I remember correctly. Quite a low level indicating the equipment or whatever it was that was generating the **RF signal, and it was coded, was quite old and probably nearly worn out, so they were amazed there was anything still coming out of it but it was enough of a signal that they could pick it up and put it through the computer and transcribe it. It was a warning. A warning message to humans not to repeat the mistakes they made.**

SS: Do you have any feelings about being on Mars? What were your general impressions?

AB: We were digging in there remains of an old civilization that preceded ours and it felt very peculiar. To look at what was left at what was once a great civilization and realize that they literally died there and left everything behind and that eventually the thing shutdown. It was in the underground deliberately apparently was survival because the circle cities had long since been destroyed and they lived down there and stayed there.

From what I understand of it, a number of the Martians survived whatever the attack was on the surface eventually took off for Earth and others decided to stay behind on Mars in the underground. And quite literally their progeny eventually died out and the whole race that was left behind on Mars died out. It's rather a strange feeling to realize that the remnants of a race died out in the underground totally. They just left all their hardware behind.

The Sovereign Scribe  
P.O. BOX 350 McKENNA. WA. 98558

<http://www.geocities.com/Area51/Shadowlands/6583/under007.html>

## *Subterranean Worlds*

### *Chapter Two*

---

#### **Our Earth IS Hollow! -- The Scientific Evidence**

Source: Our Hollow Earth!  
<http://www.ourhollowearth.com/Chap2.htm>

Therefore, let us take the evidence of the scientific community as presented by John M. Prytz in his article, "The Hollow Earth Hoax," and see how well his evidence recorded in high school texts, even in elementary texts, stands up against the first-hand observations of trained observers.

Number One item of Prytz's "factual evidence explaining why the hollow earth (and it's polar openings) cannot exist," states:

"The North polar area is covered with water, commonly known as the Arctic Ocean. It has an area of 3,622,200 square miles and an average depth of 4,362 feet. This Arctic Ocean is the name for water North of the continental land masses in the region of the Arctic Circle, and is often covered with pack ice. If any polar opening were present, the water under the force of gravity would drain into the hole, like the water which drains into a sink drain. Therefore, either the hollow earth would be FLOODED TO CAPACITY, or else water would still be draining down the hole, not only causing a gigantic whirlpool, but also lowering the level of all the world's oceans--such a drop has not been noticed."

Our answer to Mr. Prytz is that the North Polar Opening does indeed exist. However, the Arctic Ocean does not "drain" into the "hole," because the earth's principal center of gravity is not at it's center, as would be the case if the earth were a solid sphere.

A look at my drawing of Our Hollow Earth which is a center section through the earth's polar axis, we see that the earth's shell is approximately 800 miles from the outer to the inner surface. The earth's atmosphere extends from the inner surface, as it does on the outer surface, upward 600 miles and 4,600 miles inside our earth is PURE SPACE--a vacuum. Any student of physics knows that gravity is caused by mass. Empty space alone does not produce the force of gravity.

Granted, an inner sun would contain some of the mass of the earth, but very little, in comparison to the shell. Because our earth is hollow and not a solid sphere, a small center of gravity is located in the inner sun, but because the preponderance of mass in a hollow earth is located in its shell, the primary center of gravity is located in the shell, somewhere between the outer and inner surfaces, and describes a sphere -- a central sphere of gravity. Because of higher density in the earth's crust toward the inner side of our planet, the central sphere of gravity is located 700 miles down in our 800 mile thick crust -- according to the Inner Earth guide in ETIDORPHA. (ETIDORPHA, p. 193) Explorer Olaf Jansen, who supposed the earth's crust to be 300 miles thick, explained the earth's center of gravity thus:

"Sir James Ross claimed to have discovered the magnetic pole at about seventy-four degrees latitude. This is wrong--the magnetic pole is exactly one-half the distance through the earth's crust. Thus, if the earth's crust is three hundred miles in thickness, which is the distance I estimate it to be, then the magnetic pole is undoubtedly one hundred and fifty miles below the surface of the earth, it matters not where the test is made. And at this particular point one hundred and fifty miles below the surface, gravity ceases, becomes neutralized; and when we pass beyond that point on toward the 'inside' surface of the earth, a reverse attraction geometrically increases in power, until the other

one hundred and fifty miles of distance is traversed, which would bring us out on the 'inside' of the earth."

"Thus, if a hole were bored down through the earth's crust at London, Paris, New York, Chicago, or Los Angeles, a distance of three hundred miles, it would connect the two surfaces. While the inertia and momentum of a weight dropped in from the 'outside' surface would carry it far past the magnetic center, yet, before reaching the 'inside' surface of the earth it would gradually diminish in speed, after passing the halfway point, finally pause and immediately fall back toward the 'outside' surface, and continue thus to oscillate like the swinging of a pendulum with the power removed, until it would finally rest at the magnetic center, or at that particular point exactly one-half the distance between the 'outside' surface and the 'inside' surface of the earth." (THE SMOKY GOD, pp. 160-162)

Therefore, if we were to go over **the 1200 mile curve** of the North Polar Opening, which is the semi circumference of a 800 mile estimate of the earth's crust, we would always be exerted toward the central sphere of gravity of earth's mass, which contrary to popular opinion is not primarily in the center of the earth but 700 miles below our feet.

As such the Arctic Ocean would no more empty into the "hole" than could the Australian Continent fall out into space.

Let us take Prytz's SECOND objection to the Hollow Earth Theory. He states, "No unknown land masses exist in the area attributed to where the North Polar Opening theoretically exists."

The orthodox scientific theory concerning the north pole is that the arctic region around the pole is an ocean covered by an ice-cap. With this mental picture in mind, *arctic explorers down through history have tried to "go to the pole." In their expeditions to reach the north pole nearly every explorer has admitted that when he got into the far north, his theories of what he should find did not hold and his methods of finding his positions failed to function as expected.* What good then, is a theory that fails to hold up under the facts? Prytz would have the reader believe that because no land is shown on north polar maps in high school texts, that such lands do not exist!

But the facts do not support the ice-cap-in-the-Arctic theory of orthodox scientific opinion. The observations of the polar explorers, on the other hand, do support the Hollow Earth Theory of lands inside the polar regions which have even a subtropical climate. Let us examine, therefore, the descriptions of polar explorers of what they observed in the polar region and then ask ourselves, does the evidence support a polar ice-cap theory or does it support the Hollow Earth Theory with polar openings leading to a land inside Our Hollow Earth?

Observations by north polar explorers indicate that there is indeed a land in the far north with a subtropical climate heated by a sister sun inside Our Hollow Earth. For example, Explorer's reports of abundant animal and bird life in the summer time in the far north indicates a homeland in the north from which they extend in the summer further south and to which they are seen to migrate in the fall.

Explorer Hays observed abundant insect life in the far north. When he was in latitude 78 degrees, 17 minutes in early July he said, "I secured a yellow-winged butterfly, and--who would believe it--a mosquito...ten moths, three spiders, two bees and two flies." (The Open Polar Sea, p. 413)

Notice the element of surprise that many explorers expressed resulting from the discovery of conditions which they weren't expecting.

Explorer Greely, in his book, *THREE YEARS OF ARCTIC SERVICE*, in Grinnell Land in June of 1881, reports birds of an unknown species, butterflies, bumblebees, so many flies they couldn't sleep at night, and temperatures of 47 and 50 degrees at latitude 81 degrees 49 minutes north. He also found plenty willow to make fire, and much driftwood, (Chapter 26, Vol. I)

A Swedish expedition under Otto Torell, found near Trurenberg Bay in the Arctic Sea, trees floating with green buds on them and among them was found the seed of the tropical Entada Bean which measured 2.25 inches across. (Gardner, p. 253)

Explorer Sverdrup at 81 degrees north found so many hares that they named one inlet, Hare Fiord. Also nearly all expedition parties found enough game to keep their exploring parties well fed with meat. These included herds of musk-oxen and reindeer. (Gardner p. 254)

Captain Beechey saw so many birds on the west coast of Spitzbergen that sometimes a single shot killed thirty of them. (Gardner p. 254)

All explorers observed that not all animals migrate south to escape the cold Arctic winds in winter, but many instead go north. Where do they go? Greely, surprised at the tremendous amount of wildlife in a supposed frozen north wrote, "Surely this presence of birds and flowers and beasts was a greeting on nature's part to our new home."

Explorer Kane reported seeing several groups of Brent Geese, which is an American migratory bird, flying **NORTHEAST** in their wedge-shaped line of flight at 80 degrees 50' north at Cape Jackson, near Grinnelland in late June 1854.

Explorer Greely makes this statement of the northward migration of bears, "Lieutenant Lockwood, in May, 1882, noticed bear tracks (going **NORTHEAST**) on the north coast of Greenland, near Cape Benet in 83 degrees 3' N.," and commented, "...I cannot understand why the bear ever leaves the rich hunting-field of the 'North Water' for the desolate shores of the northward." (*THREE YEARS*, p. 366)

Greely also wrote about the Ross Gull, "...the observations of Murdoch at Point Barrow show that this bird, in thousands, passes over that point to the **NORTHEAST** in October, none of which were seen to return." (*THREE YEARS*, p. 383)

Explorer Adolf Erick Nordenskiold, leader of a Swedish expedition, recorded in *THE ARCTIC VOYAGE OF 1858-1878*, that on May 23, they saw north of Amsterdam Island (by Spitzbergen), "great numbers of barnacle geese...flying towards the **NORTHWEST**, perhaps to some land more northerly than Spitzbergen. (There is no such land on our

present-day maps) **The existence of such a land," wrote Nordenskiöld, "is considered quite certain by the walrus-hunters,** who state that at the most northerly point hitherto reached, such flocks of birds are seen steering their course in rapid flight yet farther toward the north." (Gardner, p. 160)

Daines Barrington, in his book, ON THE POSSIBILITY OF APPROACHING THE NORTH POLE, wrote that observers in Spitzbergen have always noticed in spring, just before the hatching season, the wild ducks, geese, and other birds, fly in a northerly direction. There is also a heavy fall migration to the north.

In HEARNES JOURNAL, is told of observations around Hudson's Bay by Hearne of ten species of geese, particularly the snow goose, blue goose, brent goose, horned wavy goose, lay their eggs and raise their young in some country which to Hearne was unknown. Explorers, Indians and Eskimos could never tell where these fowl bred and it was well known that they never migrated to the south.

Epes Sargent in his WONDERS OF THE ARCTIC WORLD tells that Franklin's second expedition saw large numbers of laughing geese migrating to the unknown north--sure indication of land to the north. And this was observed on the north coast of Canada latitude 69 degrees 29" N., longitude 130 degrees 19 minutes W., on July 13. (Sargent, p. 163).

Newton in his ARCTIC MANUAL, wrote as follows concerning the migrations of the Knot, "The knot...in the spring seeks our island (England) in immense flocks, and after remaining on the coast for about a fortnight, can be traced proceeding gradually northwards, until finally, it takes leave of us. It has been noticed in Iceland and Greenland, but not to stay; the summer there would be too rigorous for its liking, and it goes further and further north. Whither? Where does it build its nest and hatch its young? We loose all trace of it for some weeks. What becomes of it?"

"Toward the end of summer back it comes to us in larger flocks than before, and both old birds and young birds remain upon our coasts until November, or, in mild seasons even later. Then it wings its flight to the south, and luxuriates in blue skies and balmy airs until the following spring, then it resumes the order of its migration." (Gardner pp. 259-260) Surely these migrations indicate a land further north than Greenland and Spitzbergen with an ideal climate for the breeding grounds of these migratory birds and animals.

Many explorers noticed a rise in temperature the farther north they went. For example, Nansen reported that a northwind in the winter is warmer than a south wind. On Jan. 18, 1894 at 79 degrees N., Nansen wrote, "It is curious that there is almost always a rise of thermometer with these stronger winds...A south wind of less velocity generally lowers the temperature, and a moderate north wind RAISES it." (FARTHEST NORTH, Vol. I, p. 197) Two months later on March 4th, Nansen also wrote, "It is curious that now the northerly winds bring cold and the southerly warmth. Earlier in the winter IT WAS JUST THE OPPOSITE." This obviously indicates the existence of a warmer land toward the north from which the warm wind blows in the winter.

In Roald Amundsen's FIRST CROSSING OF THE POLAR SEA, by dirigible, May 12, 1926, this rise in temperature toward the pole was also recorded. Upon leaving Spitzbergen the temperature was minus 8 degrees centigrade. Then the temperature at the altitude of flight sank steadily from 5 degrees below freezing over King's Bay to 12 degrees below zero on 88 degrees north on the European side of the pole. FROM THIS PLACE IT BEGAN TO RISE SLOWLY. The temperature at the pole was 2 degrees below zero. That is an increase of 10 degrees! (FIRST CROSSING, p. 230)

In the soviet flight of Mikhail Gromov, of the Soviet Air Force, in an article titled, "Across the North Pole to America," he recorded a similar increase of temperature at the pole. Flying above Franz Josef Land at 13,000 feet, the temperature was minus 16 degrees Centigrade. But at the pole at 8,850 feet the temperature was recorded at minus 8 degrees C--an 8 degree increase in temperature. Both Amundsen and Gromov changed direction after calculating with the sextant that they were at the pole.

It must be understood that when explorers say they have reached the pole, that this means that they have reached a point on the curvature of the earth in the Arctic or Antarctic where the angle of the sun over the horizon on their sextant readings indicates that they are farthest north for the north pole or farthest south for the south pole. Since it is difficult for explorers to measure distances in the Arctic or Antarctic directly, distances were measured by determining the latitude with the sextant. Explorers would travel a certain distance north, for example, take a reading with the sextant and based on that reading and the distance to the pole as shown on a map, they then calculated how many miles they had traveled.

Today, however, with the advent of navigational satellites, geographic determination of location is determined with the GPS, the Global Positioning System. With hand-held devices, anyone can receive the satellite signals from the GPS to determine their latitude and longitude. With overflights of the poles and submarines criss-crossing the Arctic, one would rightly wonder why the polar openings haven't been openly discovered and published to the world. Certainly such a discovery must world-shaking, mind shattering, and revolutionary to our sciences. Our physics books would have to be re-written. Certainly the poles have been attained. Which strongly suggests that any polar openings would have to be located to one side or other of the poles. Such discovery, however, is still World Top Secret.

Still, however strangely it might seem, there are indications that the polar openings do exist! Another evidence of the polar openings is found in the surprised comments of explorers upon finding the fog conditions at the poles. The May 1926, Amundsen dirigible expedition noted that from Spitzbergen, "For more than eleven hours we flew in brilliant sunshine. On 87 degrees latitude we met with fog, which, however, soon disappeared. Between 88 degrees and 89 degrees latitude we came into a new belt of fog. The fog lay, however, so low that we could fly over it by rising to 7,000 meters altitude."

From our theory, we obtain a ready answer concerning the origin of these belts of fog--they come as result of the warm moist air currents issuing from the polar opening, which as they meet the lower cold air next to the ice, condense into fog.

Continuing, Malmgren wrote, "At the Pole itself the fog thinned. The weather, as if for the occasion, at this longed-for spot on the earth's surface, can be described in a few words. The sky for the most part was covered with stratocumulus and altocumulus clouds. There was a complete cessation of wind. The temperature at about 300 meters altitude was 2 degrees below zero. From the pole we set our course towards Point Barrow. The journey from the Pole was, at the beginning, favored with good visibility, but between 86 and 85 degrees latitude we met with continuous fog." And notice was made of "...the temperature in the layer of air nearest the ice was from 3-4 degrees lower than that higher up..."

Commenting on this phenomenon, Malmgren, Amundsen's meteorologist on the expedition wrote, "One of the problems that the expedition has brought to life refers to the polar fog. Why is it that over the monotonous plain which is formed by the polar sea there occur regions, close to one another, with and without fog, often without any changes in atmospheric temperature being observable? Are the lowermost air-layers so conservative that they can still, in the polar sea, retain memories from their more southerly existence? Or is the phenomenon due--which, however, appears incredible--to the variations in the heat development between the air and the underlying ice?" (FIRST CROSSING OF THE POLAR SEA, pp. 272, 280, 281) Notice how Malmgren is puzzled by the temperature difference of the different layers of air suggesting currents from a more southerly or warmer climate.

In the book, POLAR AVIATION, by Lt. Col. C.V. Glines, USAF, is this comment about the temperature difference between the upper and lower air strata as a Douglas DC-3 transport descended in the first landing at the south pole: "Because of a polar phenomenon called inversion, the temperature dropped as the plane lost altitude." (p. 146) You see, it is called temperature inversion at the poles because normally in other parts of the world, air gets colder the higher up you go. Couldn't it be that higher layers of air are warmer at the poles because as warm air comes from the polar openings it rises above the colder, heavier air next to the ice?

Just where can heat and fog come from in the frozen polar "ice-caps"? Obviously, the answer is that they come from the warm, moist air currents emanating from the polar openings which are located farther and beyond the sextant located "poles."

Who then, are we to believe? Here are trained observers, explorers of the arctic and antarctic reporting phenomena indicating that there must be a warmer land to the north from which all kinds of wildlife come and return. Or are we to believe the theories of textbook writers who have never been there? Surely if we disbelieve the explorers observations, we could go into the arctic and see for ourselves that it gets warmer the farther north we go past 88 degrees latitude. We could observe for ourselves the wildlife migrating to the unknown northland.

However, not only does wildlife, and warm winds and fog come out of the north, but evidence points to the origin of icebergs in the far northland. The north polar sea is covered by ice which is frozen from fresh water and floats on a salty sea. The origin of so much ice that it covers thousands of square miles, has been a long-time puzzle to scientists. **The fact is that salty sea water does not freeze solid at temperatures found**

**at the poles. The ice that covers the Arctic Ocean is salt-less.** Explorer Nansen noticed that the icebergs in the Arctic Ocean are stratified and that they often contain driftwood, clay and rocks. This obviously indicates that these icebergs originate in rivers which have slowly frozen over causing the stratification layers of water freezing as it flowed over ice wedged between it's banks, where rocks and clay were scraped off when the bergs eventually were pushed out to sea. However, there are not enough rivers or even glaciers around the polar sea to give origin to so much ice. So where do the icebergs come from?

A writer named William Reed, wrote in his book, PHANTOM OF THE POLES, in 1906 of his theory that these icebergs that fill the Arctic Ocean actually come from inside Our Hollow Earth. And this, in fact, is what was reported by an explorer who claimed he reached the land within the polar openings in 1829. On April 3 of that year, Olaf Jansen and his father, Jens Jansen left their home in Stockholm, Sweden on a voyage that took them past the arctic ice through leads in the ice-flows, and into the ice-free land on the other side of the north polar opening. There they were taken in by the people and lived among this advanced race for two years, then returned to the outside world by way of the south polar opening in 1831. Olaf later had his epic voyage published and can be obtained from out-of-print publishers by the title, **THE SMOKY GOD.**

In his book, Olaf reports that, "...about three-fourths of the 'inner' surface of the earth is land and about one-fourth water. There are numerous rivers of tremendous size, some flowing in a northerly direction and others southerly. Some of these rivers are thirty miles in width, and it is out of these vast waterways, at the extreme northern and southern parts of the 'inside' surface of the earth, in regions where low temperatures are experienced that fresh water icebergs are formed. They are then pushed out to sea like huge tongues of ice, by the abnormal freshets of turbulent waters that twice every year, sweep everything before them." (THE SMOKY GOD, pp. 122, 123)

Because of the earth's 23½ degree inclination to the plane of its orbit about the sun, the sun's rays, once each year, strike the polar lip at right angles melting the ice loose at the mouths of the inner-earth rivers within the polar openings which then empty their fresh water icebergs into the Arctic and Antarctic oceans.

In connection with the origin of the icebergs is the origin of the remains of tropical wildlife which are found in the Arctic. Robert B. Cook, writing in the magazine KNOWLEDGE for 1884, **tells of the remains of not only mammoths but of hairy rhinoceros, reindeer, hippopotamus, lion, and hyena, found in the northern glacial deposits and cannot explain why the supposedly extinct prehistoric mammoth is lying side by side of the remains of present-day wildlife.** The truth of the matter is that all these animals were trapped in the frozen rivers in the interior and floated out in the icebergs many of which came to rest on the shores of Siberia and other northern coasts thereby depositing their trapped and preserved loads of frozen animals.

In fact, a mammoth was actually found encased in an iceberg. In J.W. Buel's, THE WORLD'S WONDER'S, we read that in 1799, a fisherman of Tongoose, named Schumachoff discovered a tremendous elephant preserved in a huge block of ice clear as crystal along the banks of the river Lena. The flesh was cut off for dog meat and fed upon by wolves until as a skeleton it was removed to St. Petersburg Museum of Natural

History. Other fresh frozen mammoths were later discovered and scientific banquets featuring ancient foods including the supposedly ancient frozen mammoth were held.

However, the mammoth's true place of origin is from within Our Hollow Earth. In Olaf Jansen's journeys inside Our Hollow Earth he reported, "One day we saw a great herd of elephants. There must have been five hundred of these thunder throated monsters, with their restlessly waving trunks. They were tearing huge boughs from the trees and trampling smaller growth into dust like so much hazel-brush. They would average over 100 feet in length and from 75 to 85 in height." (THE SMOKY GOD, p. 126)

Olaf further explains that from these vast herds many venture near the frozen river mouths in winter and fall into crevasses in the ice where they are instantly frozen and later when in the summer, our sun shines through the polar opening to thaw the ice loose, the rivers push the icebergs out to sea. The icebergs then, gradually make their way to arctic coasts of the outside world where vast graveyards of bone and even frozen animals have been discovered.

The claims of explorer Olaf Jansen are truly fantastic. However, he was not the only explorer we have record of who attained the land of Our Hollow Earth and returned to tell of it. Another account is given to us by **Dr. Nephi Cottom** of Los Angeles, in which he reported that one of his patients of Nordic descent told him the following account of his voyage into the land of Our Hollow Earth:

"I lived near the Arctic Circle in Norway. One summer my friend and I made up our minds to take a boat trip together, and go as far as we could into the north country. So we put one months' food provisions in a small fishing boat, and with sail and also a good engine in our boat, we set to sea."

"At the end of one month we had traveled far into the north, beyond the Pole and into a strange new country. We were much astonished at the weather there. Warm, and at times at night it was almost too warm to sleep. Then we saw something so strange that we both were astonished. Ahead of the warm open sea we were on was what looked like a great mountain. Into that mountain at a certain point the ocean seemed to be emptying. Mystified, we continued in that direction and found ourselves sailing into a vast canyon leading into the interior of the Earth. We kept sailing and then we saw what surprised us-- a sun shining inside the earth!"

"The ocean that had carried us into the hollow interior of the Earth gradually became a river. This river led, as we came to realize later, all through the inner surface of the world from one end to the other. **It can take you, if you follow it long enough, from the North Pole clear through to the South Pole.**"

"We saw that the inner surface of the earth was divided, as the other one is, into both land and water. There is plenty of sunshine and both animal and vegetable life abounds there. We sailed further and further into this fantastic country, fantastic because everything was huge in size as compared with things on the outside. Plants are big, trees gigantic and finally we came to GIANTS."

"They were dwelling in homes and towns, just as we do on the Earth's surface. And they used a type of electrical conveyance like a mono-rail car, to transport people. It ran along the river's edge from town to town."

"Several of the inner earth inhabitants--huge giants--detected our boat on the river, and were quite amazed. They were, however, quite friendly. We were invited to dine with them in their homes, and so my companion and I separated, he going with one giant to that giant's home and I going with another giant to his home."

"My gigantic friend brought me home to his family, and I was completely dismayed to see the huge size of all the objects in his home. The dinner table was colossal. A plate was put before me and filled with a portion of food so big it would have fed me abundantly an entire week. The giant offered me a cluster of grapes and each grape was as big as one of our peaches. I tasted one and found it far sweeter than any I had ever tasted 'outside.' **In the interior of the Earth all the fruits and vegetables taste far better and more flavorsome than those we have on the outer surface of the Earth.**"

"We stayed with the giants for one year, enjoying their companionship as much as they enjoyed knowing us. We observed many strange and unusual things during our visit with these remarkable people, and were continually amazed at their scientific progress and inventions. All of this time they were never unfriendly to us, and we were allowed to return to our own home in the same manner in which we came--in fact, they courteously offered their protection if we should need it for the return voyage." (**RAINBOW CITY AND THE INNER EARTH PEOPLE**, Michael X. pp. 17, 18)

These evidences of wildlife in the north from whence the icebergs, warm winds, fog, and frozen mammoths come, and these histories of actual explorers reaching that land, help to establish the fact that there does exist great land masses within the north polar opening.

John M. Prytz, in his article, "The Hollow Earth Hoax," states his third objection to the hollow earth theory: "Consider the U.S. Atomic submarines which have traveled under the ice in crossing the Arctic Ocean and going under the pole could never have been possible (if the polar opening exists)."

In the explorations of the Russians in the Arctic Ocean, it would seem that they already know about that land within Our Hollow Earth that Prytz says does not exist. From Scientific American, comes this revealing paragraph of the Russian discoveries: "Exploration and research have shown that an enormous region of the earth's surface and correspondingly large realms of the UNKNOWN may be brought within the compass of human understanding in a very few years. The data thus far amassed by expeditions and ice stations fill more than 120 volumes; the list of books, monographs and articles that is emerging from THAT data already exceeds 600 titles..." (SCIENTIFIC AMERICAN, "The Arctic Ocean," by P. A. Gordienko, May, 1961)

Since the discovery of Our Hollow Earth by Admiral Richard E. Byrd in 1929, there has been an international cover-up of this, the WORLD'S TOP SECRET. And the publicizing of the atomic submarine's passing under the pole was part of that cover-up. If there has not been a cover-up, then just WHERE are all those 120 volumes proving there are

"enormous regions of the earth's surface and correspondingly large realms of the UNKNOWN"? According to the textbooks, all large unknown regions of the earth's surface today are nonexistent! Especially in the Arctic Ocean, which supposedly has been crisscrossed thousands of times and completely mapped!

On February, 1947, Rear Admiral Richard E. Byrd of the United States Navy, before his seven-hour flight of 1,700 miles beyond the North Pole, said, "I'd like to see that LAND BEYOND THE POLE. That area beyond the Pole is the center of the great UNKNOWN." (WORLD'S BEYOND THE POLES, F. Amadeo Gianinni)

Consider the testimony of the late Ray Palmer, of SEARCH and FLYING SAUCERS magazines, in which he testifies of Byrd's discovery of Our Hollow Earth in 1929. Palmer lived in Amherst, Wisconsin. He wrote in his magazine, that about three miles away is the hometown of the late Lloyd K. Grenlie who was a friend of his. Grenlie "...was the radio-man on Admiral Byrd's expedition to the South Pole in 1926 and to both poles in 1929."

"It was emphatically denied that he made flights to BOTH poles in 1929." However, Palmer continued, "That year a newsreel could be seen in America's theaters which described BOTH flights, and also showed newsreel photographs of the 'land beyond the pole (north) with its mountains, trees, rivers, and a large animal identified as a mammoth."

"Today this newsreel apparently does not exist, although hundreds of my readers remember as I do, this movie short. Thus, I have it on my own personal viewing of this movie short, and from the radio-man who went with Byrd to that land beyond the pole and SAW the things recorded on that film, that this unknown, uncharted, and presently denied land exists!" (FLYING SAUCERS, Sept. 1970)

According to our theory, the original geographic poles of the earth were located in space—in the center of the polar openings, several miles directly above a person standing on the polar lip. Since the earth was created in rotation, centrifugal force would have thrown matter outward from the center leaving a mass in the earth's core that later became the central sun. On the first day of creation when the earth's core was "turned on" in the process of nuclear fusion, God said, "Let there be Light." At that time, the interior sun began to shine. Any matter further away from the central core would have been thrown outward away from the center by centrifugal force to form the earth's shell. This rotational centrifugal force would have resulted in a shell and a hollow interior with a core suspended in the center by the force of gravity acting on it from all directions. At the poles, centrifugal force would have formed the polar openings.

The guide in ETIDORPHA, explained that there is also a spiritual foundation to the earth, "The earth forming principle consists of an invisible sphere of energy that, spinning through space, supports the space dust which collects on it, as dust on a bubble. By gradual accumulation of substance on that sphere a hollow ball has resulted, on the outer surface of which you have hither to dwelt. The crust of the earth is comparatively thin, not more than eight hundred miles in average thickness, and is held in position by the

central sphere of energy (center of gravity, or central sphere of gravity) that now exists at a distance about seven hundred miles beneath the ocean level." (ETIDORPHA, p. 193)

However, later, perhaps at the time of the world-wide cataclysm that produced Noah's flood, the earth has been tipped on it's axis, perhaps even more than once, so that today, the polar openings are located off to the one side or other of the earth's axis. This would explain why the pole can be reached from some directions, but not another, such as the Soviet fliers that flew north from the Kara Sea and were lost when they flew into the polar opening. And yet Amundsen was able to fly over the pole in his dirigible when flying from Spitzbergen to Alaska.

There is a way to determine if someone has reached the pole or if he has only attained some point on the lip of the polar openings. If the earth were round, without polar openings, then at the geographic pole the sun should be the same distance above the horizon throughout any one arctic or antarctic day. But if there is a hole, the farthest north or south a person can go would be the rim of the polar opening when approaching the pole from the side of the pole that the opening is located on. If an explorer were located on the polar rim of the north polar opening, he would be unable to go any further north, and the sun would appear to rise and fall throughout each day as it makes its apparent round of the arctic sky indicating that he had not yet reached the polar axis of the earth. At the exact polar axis of the earth, the sun should remain the same distance above the horizons all day long.

Explorers use an instrument called a sextant to determine if they have reached the pole. It is a navigation instrument that determines latitude north and south of the equator by determining the height the sun should be above the horizon for any specific latitude. At different times of the year, the degrees the sun would be above the horizon at the theoretical geographic pole are different. On the summer solstice, the angle should be  $23\frac{1}{2}$  degrees, and if there are no polar openings, that angle should NEVER be greater than  $23\frac{1}{2}$  degrees, which is the maximum angle of the earth's axis to its orbital plane about the sun. An angle of greater than  $23\frac{1}{2}$  degrees could be obtained only on the lip of a polar opening. As one advanced into the polar opening, the sun would appear to swing from low above the horizon to very high up to 90% -- such as happens at the equator.

If an explorer would stay at the pole during an entire season that the sun is above the horizon, he would notice that as the summer advances, the sun will rise higher and higher above the horizon. On any one day, it will circle around the sky at the same distance above the horizon, if he is indeed located at the geographic polar axis of the earth. However, if the explorer discovers that the sun rises and falls throughout the day and angles greater than  $23\frac{1}{2}$  degrees are noticed, this would prove conclusively that he has not reached the geographic pole but instead has reached a point on the polar rim. This observation should be more accurate if taken at the south "pole" where the United States has a base, because observations there would not be subject to the movement of ocean currents as such a base would be at the north "pole." For further discussion of the location and size of the polar openings see Location and Size of the Polar Openings.

**The fact that the magnetic pole does not coincide with the geographic pole is an evidence that our earth is hollow.** Apparently, the earth has been tipped on its axis since

*creation leaving the interior sun in its original orientation. This caused the nonalignment of the earth's magnetic pole with its rotational axis. This is evidence that the earth is hollow with a central sun which gives rise to the earth's geomagnetic field. The earth's shell rotating about the nearly stationary interior sun, both having electrical charges, positive for the inner sun and negative for the shell, is what produces the earth's geomagnetic field and causes the compass to point north. If the earth were solid throughout, the geomagnetic pole would coincide with the earth's rotational axis. Instead, the magnetic poles revolve around the arctic/Antarctic in magnetic orbits indicating that the earth is hollow and has been tipped from its original orientation with a core that is rotating at a slower rate than the shell. The core most likely would have retained its original orientation.*

Raymond Bernard wrote concerning the revolving magnetic pole, "The first observation (of the magnetic declination) was made in London in 1580 and showed an easterly declination of 11 degrees. In 1814 the declination reached 24.3 degrees westerly maximum. This makes a difference of 35.3 degrees change in 235 years...The focal point, or the actual 'pinpoint' of the magnetic pole exists on only one portion of the circumference of that circle at a time, and moves progressively around the circle in a definite 'orbit'." (THE HOLLOW EARTH, pp. 57-58)

*Here also is the reason why some polar explorers say their compass needles dip down in the far north and others say that it dips up, each depending on which side of the polar opening they are located. When the Russians reported that their compass needle pointed down for a thousand miles across the Arctic Ocean, they were on the side of the polar opening in which the magnetic pole is located. Olaf Jansen, on the other hand was on the opposite side of the polar opening in 1829, northeast of Franz Josef Land when he noticed his compass needle to point upwards across the polar opening to the other side where the magnetic pole was then located.*

In the chapter of this book entitled, "A Proposal for an Expedition to Our Hollow Earth" is shown how gyroscopes and radar readings can also be used to prove the existence of the polar openings.

Prytz' fourth objection states: "The floor of the Arctic Ocean has been reasonably well charted and mapped -- no trace of any polar opening has been found."

From an article of Ray Palmer in his FLYING SAUCERS magazine we read of the difficulty there has been in mapping the polar regions: "More significant are the unfavorable references to former cartographers whose maps are now 'thick clouds congealed in the imagination of cartographers as land masses.' The Navy, as an example, feels a bit put out when the Army says their missing South Pole mountains were never there, because the Army cannot find them by their own confused reckoning based on a magnetic pole which 'isn't there at all.' We find now that new land areas are 'discovered' and old maps tossed out because the lands they show are not there anymore."

What is obviously taking place is that the map makers are not taking into account the expanded land area encompassing the polar openings but are trying to cram it all into a small area leading up to an imaginary physical pole end of the earth.

Arctic explorer Nansen was an expert navigator but frequently confessed that he could not find islands that had been previously mapped in the far north. In 1895, 82 degrees 8 minutes north on June 11th, Nansen confessed he was lost, "We do not know where we are, and we do not know when this will end." A few days later he wrote, "I have calculated and calculated and thought and thought, but can find no mistake of any importance, and the whole thing is a riddle to me." After finally returning to civilization, he commented on his journey in the arctic: "Where was Dove Glacier and the whole of Wilczek Land? Where were the islands which Payer had named Braun Island, Hoffman Island, and Freden Island?...I pondered for a long time over the question how such a mistake could have crept into a map by such a man as Payer -- an experienced topographer, whose maps, as a rule, bear the stamp of great accuracy and care, and a polar traveler for whose ability I have always entertained a high respect." (FARTHEST NORTH, Fridtjof Nansen, Vol. I., p. 579)

From Nansen's experience it is evident that any explorer's discovery of land in the far north is hard to be relocated with the conventional idea of the arctic's configuration. Actually *the reason for confusion comes because there is more surface of the earth in the Arctic because of the polar opening which explorers did not take into account on their maps.*

This difficulty in relocating land mapped in the arctic makes it doubtful that the arctic has been mapped to any degree of accuracy except if such mapping has been kept a secret in which the polar openings are taken into account. Certainly our textbooks contain no such maps.

In recent years, the deployment of the Landsat satellites have provided detailed coverage of the earth in photographs of the surface from space. With the near-polar orbits of Landsat satellites, permitting the acquisition of data over the entire globe, it is difficult to imagine why pictures of the polar regions are not available from NASA. (AVAILABILITY OF EARTH RESOURCES DATA, U.S. Department of the Interior Geological Survey, p. 4) My question is: What are they trying to hide?

In 1982, I sent an application to EROS Data Center for satellite pictures of the entire polar region north of 80 N. latitude. They sent me an inch thick computer printout listing thousands of Landsat photos. But not one photograph was north of 80 North. Why? Because they are "unavailable." Yet Landsat satellites are in near POLAR orbit. It has been rationalized that polar photos are unavailable for strategic-defense reasons. If such is the case, then why are photos of the south polar area also unavailable? What can be "strategic" about Antarctica? *Is it perhaps because the Internationalist's enemy is that nation inside Our Hollow Earth?*

On the other hand, one answer as to why satellites are not placed in exact polar orbit is that they would be crashing into each other if they all crossed a single point at the poles. Hence most polar orbiting satellites are placed in orbit off to the side of the polar axis of the earth to allow the placement of a greater number of satellites in polar orbit. But is that the whole reason? If polar openings exist, especially if the openings are not centered over the polar axis, then satellites would be placed in polar orbit farther south of the such openings so that the lack of gravity over the openings do not mess up the orbital pattern

of the satellite. Such would appear to be the case in the Landsat Satellites which go no further than about 81 degrees north or south latitude.

*If a satellite were placed in orbit over the polar openings at say a height of 300 miles and the openings are 600 miles in diameter, on the first pass the satellite would follow the earth's curvature through the opening and crash on the earth's interior. This apparently happened when the first satellites were put in polar orbit in the 1950's. More on this later.*

Objection Six:

"Consider all the commercial airline flights that have been made between North America and Europe via the polar region. Not once has there been any observation of any polar opening, although the entire area has been criss-crossed."

If we take a map and draw a straight line from any major city of North America to any major city of Europe, few if any go over the pole but to one side of it. This is, in fact, what all airlines do. Ray Palmer writes in his magazine, FLYING SAUCERS, "Many of the readers stated that commercial flights continually cross the Pole and fly to the opposite side of the Earth. This is not true, and though the Airline officials themselves, when asked, might say that they do, it is not literally true. They do make navigational maneuvers which automatically eliminate a flight beyond the Pole in a straight line, in every sense. Ask the pilots of these polar flights. And when they come to the exact point, name one trans-polar flight on which you can buy a ticket which actually crosses the North Pole."

**"Examining the route of flights across the North Polar area we always find that they go around the Pole or to the side of it and never directly across it. This is strange.**

Surely a flight advertised as passing directly over the North Pole would attract many passengers who would like to have that experience. Yet, strangely, no airline offers such a flight. Their air routes always pass on one side of the Pole. Why? Is it not possible that if they went straight across the Pole, instead of landing on the opposite side of the Earth, the plane would go to that land beyond the Pole, 'the center of the Great Unknown,' as Admiral Byrd called it?"

Prytz states that the polar airline flights have not seen any opening. My friend, Ivars Jaunakais, met an airline pilot at a UFO Conference in Phoenix, Arizona that told him that he has seen the north polar opening many times while on transpolar flights. **He said that all his airline pilot buddies know the polar opening exists.** Of course, they don't try to fly across it.

Objection Seven:

"Given that a North Polar opening exists, and that UFOs leave and enter there, why have they not been tracked by our D.E.W. line?"

Undoubtedly they have been. But since the U.S. government considers UFOs and Our Hollow Earth top secret, any military personnel who dares divulge such information is severely dealt with. **All such knowledge is considered too dangerous for common**

**citizens to know** by the International Illuminist Conspiracy which controls the U.S. military.

Objection Eight:

"There has never been any reported observations of polar openings by astronauts, in particular those with an Earth wide view such as Apollo 8, 10, and 11."

Air Force Regulation 200-2 penalizes military employees with a \$10,000 dollar fine and 10 years in prison if they publicize censored subjects such as UFOs. The astronauts undoubtedly were also under such strict regulations concerning their observations in space. However, the astronauts did take pictures which show the polar openings and these are available without comment from NASA.

Objection Nine:

"No deep space satellite (even those in polar orbits) with photo coverage of the Earth has ever recorded a polar opening."

Here, Prytz, you could say, really has one up one us. There definitely is a derth in polar opening photos from space. But that doesn't necessarily mean the polar openings don't exist. It could mean that NASA is covering them up by retouching any photographs of earth from space that might show a polar opening. **There are NASA workers who have admitted to retouching space photos to eliminate anomalous UFOs. Even one NASA scientist admitted that the polar openings exist, but that they retouch photographs of them to make them look like ice and snow.**

I have included some photos of Earth taken by several satellites. However, we recently have determined that ATS photo 67-HC-723, which for a long time hollow earth researchers (including me) thought might be showing the North Polar Opening -- is NOT. What appears at the top of the photo is the southern tip of Greenland AND an unusual cloud formation south of it that makes it look like it could be an opening. The included Apollo 17 photo of Africa and Antarctica shows what may be an elliptical view of the South Polar Opening at the bottom of the picture.

NASA photo #72-HC-928 taken by Apollo 17

Could the elliptical area at the bottom of this photo be Earth's South Polar Opening?

NASA RadarSat Image of Antarctica

Light areas reflect radar well, dark areas do not. Is that The South Polar Opening located approximately in the center of the image? It is located at about 84.4 S Latitude, 39 W Longitude, which is opposite the location of my best estimate of the North Polar Opening at 84.4 N Latitude, 141 E Longitude Taken in Spring of 1997 NASA ATS photo #67-HC-723

The indentation at the top of this ATS photo has been determined by Jan Lamprecht of South Africa to be a cloud anomaly, not the North Polar Opening

#### Objection Ten:

"The South Pole and surrounding area (5,300,000) square miles as opposed to the Arctic, is not ocean, but dry land covered, however, with an ice cap many thousands of feet thick. This area has been extensively surveyed by air by foot in particular in preparation for and during the IGY. Of course, no southern polar opening was ever discovered."

The scientists of the International Geophysical Year are controlled by the Conspiracy. Therefore we hear nothing of their discoveries of the land beyond the pole. But it is significant that it was just one year after Admiral Byrd's 1956 flight into the south polar opening, in 1957 that the International Geophysical Year convened upon Antarctica. F. Amadeo Giannini, in his book, *WORLDS BEYOND THE POLES*, commented, "The United States and more than thirty other nations prepared unprecedented polar expeditions for 1957-58 **to penetrate land now proved to extend beyond both Pole points.** My original disclosure of then unknown land beyond the Poles, in 1926-28, was captioned by the press as 'more daring than anything Jules Verne ever conceived.'"

"Then Giannini quoted the following statements by Admiral Byrd: "1947: February. 'I'd like to see that land BEYOND THE POLE. That area beyond the Pole is the CENTER OF THE GREAT UNKNOWN.'--Rear Admiral Richard E. Byrd, United States Navy, before his seven-hour flight over land beyond the North Pole."

"1956: January 13. 'On January 13, members of the United States expedition accomplished a flight of 2,700 miles from the base at McMurdo Sound, which is 400 miles beyond the Pole.'--Radio announcement, confirmed by press of February 5."

"Prior to his departure from San Francisco he delivered the momentous radio announcement, "This is the most important expedition in the history of the world."

And upon his return from the land beyond the South Pole, Byrd reported, "The present expedition has opened up A VAST NEW LAND." (*WORLD'S BEYOND THE POLES*, F. Amadeo Gianinni)

The Polar openings were discovered. But U.S. and the International Conspiracy intelligence clamped down on all further publication of that discovery.

#### Objection Eleven:

"No planet is naturally hollow--regardless of which theory one believes in as to how a planet forms, the basic building block is that a planet grows from the center outward--therefore, no planet can be naturally hollow."

On the contrary, since planets are formed in rotation, with a foundational spiritual bubble located at the central sphere of gravity, this causes the material to be thrown outward from the center of rotation by centrifugal force leaving a hollow shell precipitated on the central sphere of gravity with a hollow interior and central core. Space dust, rocks and gases also accumulate on the outside portion of the central sphere of gravity augmenting the thickness of the earth's hollow shell. Centrifugal force and gravity naturally makes all

planets hollow. Many astronomical observations indicate that all the planets are indeed hollow.

In 1962, Dr. Gordon McDonald of NASA, published a report in the July issue of *Astronautics*, in which he states that according to an analysis of the astronomical data, the Moon appears to be hollow: "If the astronomical data are reduced, it is found that the data require that the interior of the Moon be less dense than the outer parts. Indeed, it would seem that the Moon is more like a hollow than a homogeneous sphere."  
(ASTRONAUTICS, July 1962, pp. 14, 15)

Furthermore, astronomers have observed gleams from the inner suns of Mars, Venus and Mercury shining from their polar openings. In fact, our own Aurora Borealis and Australis are caused by the electron and proton beam of highly charged radiation from the sun within Our Hollow Earth emanating through the polar openings, colliding with atmospheric atoms and thereby causing these wonderful "Northern" and "Southern Lights." (See chapters nine and ten for further details on the auroras)

Objection Twelve:

"The density of the Earth is 5.52 (on a scale of water equals 1) but the average density of the earth's crust is 2.7. Therefore, the interior of the earth must consist of a far greater density than the crust in order to get the overall average density of the earth. A hollow Earth would not be near compatible with these facts."

Here is where Prytz might have had something as proof of his side of the argument. Since surface rocks have a density of 2.7 times an equal volume of water, for the earth to have an overall density of 5.52, the interior would have to be in the range of 10 or greater. But would such densities preclude the earth from being hollow? Actually, it does not. Nevertheless, discovery that all planets, moons, and stars are hollow bodies is bound to have a profound effect on our theory of gravity and how planets are formed. Perhaps this may even require a correction in the gravitation formula and gravitation constant. Let's review gravity theory as it is today and see where changes might be made and if present gravity theory is consistent with a hollow planet.

Gravity and Our Hollow Earth

Retired physicist Al Snyder wrote several books back in the 70's disputing the claims of Newtonian scientists. In his *NEWTON'S LAWS ARE FULL OF FLAWS*, Snyder shows how illogical the gravitation formula attributed to Isaac Newton is. When Newton proposed in 1687 in his *PRINCIPIA* that "there is a power of gravity pertaining to all bodies, proportional to the several quantities of matter which they obtain" and that the "force of gravity towards the several particles of any body is inversely as the square of the distances of places from the particles," he never actually stated the law of gravitation with its now-familier equation containing the gravitational constant G.

In fact, **Newton never stated that gravity is a pull. It could be a push.** In his time, scientists believed that space was full of an etheric matter through which light propagated. If space is full of an etheric matter, it could be the source of that push. **Gravity could consist of the ether of space flowing into all particles of matter.** *As the*

*ether of space flows through matter, it would exert a pressure on that matter in the direction where most of the mass is located. Since most of the earth's mass is located inside it, the ether flowing towards the earth from space passes through us and keeps our feet firmly planted on the earth's surface.*

Newton did not even say that gravity increases to the center of the earth, which scientists today claim. They also claim that anywhere inside a hollow sphere everything would be weightless. If such was the case, any people living inside the hollow earth would be floating around.

And there are other incongruities in the Newtonian orthodox science, such as the equal gravisphere distances between bodies in space -- that place where a rocket after its initial burn in a trajectory coasting away from one body will begin to accelerate towards the other. For example, Newtonians place the equal gravisphere distance between the earth and the sun at 160,000 miles from Earth, and yet the moon is located at over 250,000 miles from earth. How then could the equal gravisphere distance between the Earth and the Sun be located BETWEEN the earth and the moon? If it, in fact, was, the sun's gravity would cause the moon to fall out of earth orbit towards the sun. The same goes for the equal gravisphere distance between the Earth and the Moon. Prior to the Apollo missions which **discovered by radar the distance of 54,828.7 nautical miles from the earth that the rocket stopped decelerating away from earth and started to accelerate towards the moon**, Newtonians believed that the equal gravisphere distance between the earth and the moon was 1/81th of the distance from the moon to the earth, or about 3000 miles from the moon. That is why the first probes sent to the moon missed it altogether or crashed into the moon -- mission control was aiming at passing the equal gravisphere distance thought to be only 3000 miles from the moon instead of the 63,107.8 miles from the moon that it was later located at.

The tides as calculated by Newtonian scientists is even more incongruent. They even had to "mickey mouse" their Newtonian gravity formula to make it fit the observed tidal forces by cubing the distance between the earth and the moon instead of using the "square of the distances" as established by Isaac Newton in his PRINCIPIA. That is because, if you use the standard Newtonian gravitation formula of,

$$F = GmM/R^2$$

the sun by this formula exerts 99.5% of the gravity force on earth's tides and the moon only .05%. However, it has been known for millennia that the moon exerts the greater gravitation force on earth's tides, because the tides come up when the moon comes up, even when the sun is down. **The moon comes up 50 minutes later every day and so also do the tides.** We KNOW the moon exerts the greater gravity force on the tides, yet the Newtonian gravity formula says it does not. For further details and calculations see my gravity paper [The Origin, Cause and Control of Gravity -- Found!](#)

There is a definite need to revise our physics and gravity theories to resolve these and other incongruities with the current physics. The physics of hollow planets will need to be included in the revision. Perhaps we can even achieve realization of the illusive United Field Theory while we're about it.

Since before the days of Albert Einstein, there have been those who have noticed similarities between the different force formulas. This has led to the belief in the possibility of a United Field Theory in which perhaps one formula would describe all forces of nature. The underlying existence of an all pervasive etheric substance that would contribute to development of all forces of nature would definitely be the beginning. The ether that fills the immensity of space must be accepted as a reality. The next step would be looking for similarities between the forces and the formulas describing those forces for a reconciliation of the formulas into one United Field Theory formula that would apply to all the forces of nature. For example, notice the similarity between the above mentioned Newtonian gravitation formula and the electrostatic formula,

$$F = k Qq/d^2$$

Both have constants, both have two bodies and both are separated by a distance squared. The differences are that the electrostatic bodies are quantified with charges of opposite sign where as the gravitation bodies are quantified by mass, and the distance between electrostatic bodies is measured from their surfaces, but the gravitation bodies from their centers. If we were to unify these formulas into one, the differences would have to be resolved.

Let's start with the distances that separate them. Both are varied as to their distances squared. The only difference here is the starting point of the measurement one from the center, the other from the surface of the interacting bodies.

Remember that Newton stated in his PRINCIPIA that, the "force of gravity towards the several particles of any body is inversely as the square of the distances of places from the particles." Nothing is mentioned of measuring the distance from the center of the particles. Similar to the electrostatic forces between two bodies, the gravity force from the gravitational formula can only be applied to two bodies separated by a distance. It does not describe the gravity force within a body.

One of the definite flaws of Newtonian gravity theory is its assumption that the center of gravity is located in the center of the earth. Although gravity (ether) does flow into the central sun suspended in the hollow of the earth, it also flows towards the inner surface, thus allowing inner earth inhabitants to have their feet firmly planted on the inner surface instead of floating about as Newtonians maintain. The flaw in their theory of gravity is they assume that all gravity inside the earth flows towards the center of the planet.

**However, a closer reading of Newton's above statement on gravity indicates that the gravity force varies "inversely as the square of the distances" between all "particles" of matter in the earth.**

Gravity flows towards the greatest concentrations of matter. In a hollow planet, there are two concentrations of matter, the hollow shell and the interior sun. Therefore, gravity will flow towards the shell from without and from within, AND towards the inner sun keeping it suspended in the hollow of the planet. *This means that the center of gravity in a hollow planet's shell would be in its shell, not in the central sun.* The guide in ETIDORPHA asserted that the center of gravity in the earth's 800 mile thick shell is 700

miles down from the outer surface. This indicates a greater concentration of denser matter towards the inner surface than towards the outer surface of the shell. In fact, the center of gravity in the shell would actually be a sphere, a central sphere of gravity where ether flowing from the outside surfaces meet. The resultant gravitational flow of the ether would be at this depth flowing in all directions. A person located at the central sphere of gravity would float as if he were in space, only he would be surrounded by air and the matter of the earth's shell.

Newtonian theory maintains that the acceleration of gravity increases to the center of the planet resulting in tremendous pressures that create great heat that causes their "outer core" to be molten. The inner earth explorer that called himself I-AM-THE-MAN in ETIDORPHA, reported that as he and his guide descended through communicating caverns they gradually lost weight until at the central sphere of gravity they weighed zero. At a depth of around 200 miles from the outer surface he was able to walk with leaps and bounds like as if he were on the moon at 1/6th gravity requiring very little effort to move. At 700 miles from the outer surface they were floating in the air. Pressures increase for a short distance from either surface as the acceleration of gravity into the mass of the earth decreases, but then pressure decreases towards the central sphere of gravity. Resultant gravitational flow gradually cancels out and weight decreases to 0 as the central sphere of gravity is approached. There is NO molten "outer core." The outer core is actually the hollow of the earth through which NO earthquake waves pass. See Chapter Eleven, Earthquakes Prove Our Earth is Hollow! for further detail on earthquakes.

Al Snyder pointed out another incongruity in the Newtonian gravitation formula. He did this by comparing two sets of magnets, one set 10 times more power than the first. Using the Newtonian formula, he showed that for the first set of magnets of power 1,

$$F = m * M / R^2$$

$$1 = 1 * 1 / 1^2$$

But for the second set of magnets 10 times more powerful than the first,

$$100 = 10 * 10 / 1^2$$

Newtonians would maintain that the second set of magnets are 100 times more powerful than the first set, instead of the actual 10 times more powerful that we KNOW they are. Therefore, Snyder concluded that in the Newtonian gravitation formula, F is actually squared,

$$F^2 = m * M / R^2$$

For the second set of magnets 10 times more powerful,

$$10^2 = 10 * 10 / 1^2$$

$$F = 10$$

**Could this mean that the force we attribute to gravity is exerted by a much less quantity of matter than previously thought to be the case? And could this much less quantity of matter in a hollow earth exert the gravity force we observe the earth to have? Newtonians have presumed a much more massive and dense earth than a hollow planet would seem to have.**

However, even if we assume that the Newtonian mass and density for the earth are correct, this does not preclude the earth being hollow. It could still be hollow even with a density of 5.5 gm/cc. Let's review how the mass and density of the earth are determined.

Newtonians assume, by Newton's Second Law, that the momentum of a small mass accelerating towards the earth near its surface is equal to the earth's gravitational force acting on that small mass:

$$F = m * a$$

The Momentum Formula (Newton's Second Law)

$$F = GmM/R^2$$

The Newtonian Gravitation Formula

$$m * a = GmM/R^2$$

Solving for a, the mass m's cancel out,

$$a = GM/R^2$$

We can now solve for M, the mass of earth,

$$M = a * R^2 / G$$

using the Newtonian Gravitational Constant,

$$980.665 * 4.0678884 \times 10^{17} / 6.67259 \times 10^{-8} = 5.978541732 \times 10^{27} \text{ gms}$$

The Newtonian mass of the Earth

From the Density formula

$$D = M/V$$

we obtain the Newtonian density of the earth.

From the volume of a sphere formula,

$$V = \text{Pi}D^3/6$$

The volume of the earth is  $1.082 * 10^{27}$  cc.

The Newtonian density of the earth then is:

$$5.978541732 \times 10^{27} \text{ gms} / 1.082 * 10^{27} \text{ cc} = 5.525 \text{ gm/cc}$$

Since surface rocks have a density of 2.7 on average, the interior of the earth would have to be at least as dense as steel (about 8 times more dense than water, water = 1) to arrive at the Newtonian average earth density of 5.5 ( $8.3 + 2.7 / 2 = 5.5$ ).

Now let's ask ourselves some questions. For example, how dense would a hollow earth be? Would it necessarily be less massive than Newtonians claim? How would gravity theory need to be revised to allow for a hollow planet? And if the gravitation formula and gravitation constant need to be revised, what would they be?

These are questions that need answering if hollow planets are a reality. For an ongoing review of gravity and how it may affect the hollow earth, see my study *The Origin, Cause and Control of Gravity -- Found!*

For now, let's visit the idea of whether an earth density of 5.525 gm/cc could be hollow.

Assuming the thickness of earth's shell at 800 mi or 1,287.48 km,

Diameter of Earth's hollow: Thickness of Earth's shell x 2 - Diameter of Earth

$$800 \text{ mi} \times 2 - 8000 = 6400 \text{ mi}$$

Or

$$1,287.48 \text{ km} \times 2 - 12,756 = 10,181 \text{ km} \text{ Or } 1.018104445 \times 10^9 \text{ cm}$$

Volume of Hollow:

$$3.14159265 \times (1.018104445 \times 10^9)^3 / 6 = 5.525551394 \times 10^{26} \text{ cc} \text{ Volume of Earth - Volume of Hollow} = \text{Volume of Shell: } 1.086781293 \times 10^{27} \text{ cc} - 5.525551394 \times 10^{26} \text{ cc} = 5.342261531 \times 10^{26}$$

Density of Shell = Mass of Earth/Volume of Shell:

$$5.978541732 \times 10^{27} \text{ gms} / 5.342261531 \times 10^{26} \text{ cc} = 11.19 \text{ gm/cc}$$

This assumes that most of the earth's mass is located in its shell. As you can see, Newtonian physics would require an average shell density almost as dense as lead (11.3). And since surface rocks are 2.7, then the interior of the shell would have to be greater than the average density.

The interior density using the Newtonian mass of the earth requires that the interior of the shell would have a density of  $2 * 11.19 - 2.7 = 19.68$ , which is denser than gold (19.3). Platinum is 21.4, so an inner shell density of 19.68 is not beyond the realm of possibility. In fact, if the earth is hollow as we maintain, the inner shell would necessarily need to be of a greater density to give the hollow planet enough strength to keep its hollow shape.

So we can say that a shell density of 11.19 gm/cc could be in the realm of possibility. After all, the earth DOES ring like a bell after a rather large earthquake. A bell is hollow and is made of metal, just as a hollow earth may be.

We might ask how much of the earth's mass would be contained by the interior sun? Actually, an interior sun of the estimated diameter of 600 miles would contain very little of the mass of the earth.

Assuming the interior sun has a density of glass which I claim all stars are actually crystals instead of burning gas, it's mass would be only .01% of the mass of the Newtonian mass of the earth.

$$V = \pi D^3 / 6$$

$$\pi * (600 \text{ mi} * 1.60934722 \text{ km} * 100,000 \text{ cm})^3 / 6 = 4.714130881 \times 10^{23} \text{ cc}$$

Volume of inner sun

Let's assume that the inner sun is also hollow and has a shell 10% of it's diameter, or 60 miles. This would give the sun's hollow a volume of  $2.413635011 \times 10^{23}$  cc. So the volume of it's shell would be  $2.30049587 \times 10^{23}$  cc multiplied by 2.6, the density of glass gives,

$$\text{Mass} = \text{Volume} * \text{Density}$$

$$= 5.981289262 \times 10^{23} \text{ gms, Mass of inner sun}$$

$$\text{divided by mass of earth of } 5.978541732 \times 10^{27} \text{ gms}$$

$$= .000100046 * 100 = .01\%$$

If the interior sun is composed of gas as orthodox science maintains stars consist of, then that percentage would be much less. By far, most of a hollow earth's mass would be located in its shell.

Another possibility, you may say, is that the earth's shell is thicker than 800 miles which would give it a lower average shell density. This also, could be a possibility. Some method of determining the shell's thickness needs to be devised. This could easily be determined by entering the hollow of the earth through a polar opening and bouncing radar waves off the opposite side of the hollow interior.

In all, actually, I see nothing in the Newtonian mass and density of the earth that would completely exclude the earth from being hollow. Earthquake waves have been noticed to bend as they descend into the earth causing them to curve back up to the surface before hitting the discontinuity inside the earth that scientists claim is the outer core. This indicates the earth does increase in density with depth which is consistent with a hollow shell using the Newtonian mass of the earth. In fact, if the earth is hollow and the Newtonian mass of the earth requiring an increased density with depth is correct, then that in itself would exclude their claim to a molten interior. That discontinuity inside the earth could be the inner surface. For further email discussions on gravity [click here](#).

After applying Newtonian physics to the planets and assuming they are all hollow with shells having a thickness of 10% of their diameters, it turns out that all the planets including the sun would have solid surfaces (with one possible exception being Saturn

with a shell density of 1.26 which is closer to the density of water=1). With surface gravities close to that of earth and interior suns that create their planetary magnetic fields and which emit solar winds through polar openings to light up their auroras, it is even plausible that most contain inner atmospheric conditions similar to earth conducive to plant, animal and human life on their interiors. For further information see The Origin, Cause and Control of Gravity -- Found!

Objection Thirteen:

"The earth's magnetic field could not be accounted for if the Earth were hollow, as it is the Earth's core acting like a dynamo which produces the magnetic field."

The rotation of the hollow earth's shell about the nearly stationary sun in the center of the earth's vacuum causes the electromagnetic field of the earth. (For more information on the earth's electromagnetic field see chapter eleven Earthquakes Prove Our Earth Is Hollow! and chapter twelve Our Hollow Earth and The Plate Tectonic System).

Objection Fourteen:

"The temperature of the Earth increases as the depth increases. This is known as the thermal gradient, and the value is 150 degrees Fahrenheit per mile. Thus after relatively short depths are reached, the temperature approaches the melting point of many rocks. If a race of people did live in the subterranean Earth, it would be just a mite hot for them."

Professor Mohr of Bonn has shed some true light on this subject. Marshall B. Gardner, in his book, **A JOURNEY TO THE EARTH'S INTERIOR** wrote, "Every reader is acquainted with the fact, as reported by miners and other observers, that the further one digs into the earth the hotter it gets. It was that idea that led people to believe that if they dug far enough they would come to a depth where it was so hot that everything would be in a molten condition. But that idea, too, must go, as being no longer in accordance with the evidence. Professor Mohr of Bonn has written a very important paper on thermometric investigations of a 4,000 feet boring at Sperenberg who finds that while there is an increase of temperature, as we go down, the rate of that increase gets less and less all the time, so that soon it will be nil; that is to say there will no longer be any increase, and the point at which the heat would cease to increase would be about 13,550 feet." (Gardner, p. 357)

The earth is not rigid enough to be solid all the way through. In Sir G. H. Darwin's book, **THE TIDES AND KINDRED PHENOMENA OF THE SOLAR SYSTEM**, he writes, "The body of the earth, on which the oceans rest, cannot be absolutely rigid. No body is. It must be deformed more or less by the attractions of the Sun and Moon." So he shows how these attractions are calculated. He does this by measuring the fortnightly tide. By fortnightly tide is meant "...a minute inequality in the tide-height, having a period of about a fortnight, depending upon the inclination of the moon's orbit to the plane of the equator. Now the amount which the fortnightly oceanic tide would have if the Earth were absolutely rigid can be calculated."

The results from these calculations show that the earth does yield to some extent under the force of the moon's attraction, and the yielding is not small enough to justify us in

saying that the earth is practically rigid and it is not large enough to suggest that the earth has a liquid interior.

Gardner writes, "Now, if the earth is not a solid, rigid body on the one hand or a shell-encrusted viscous or fluid body on the other hand--and as we have seen scientists can prove neither the one thing nor the other--there is left but one possibility--that the earth is hollow..." (Gardner, pp. 342-50)

Concerning the liquid-interior theory, Gardner writes: "Of the old liquid-interior people, it is not necessary to say very much. Their day is over. Scientists no longer put any credence in that notion--it is only in school books that it survives." He quotes Grew in his, THE ROMANCE OF MODERN GEOLOGY, of the impossibility of a molten interior: "For that would leave a molten ocean more than 7900 miles across any way in which it was measured: 7900 miles deep, 7900 miles broad, 7900 miles long if we take 8000 miles to be the diameter of the earth. We all know what great tides the sun and moon by their attractions raise in the earth's outer ocean of water. Think what tides they would raise in this inner ocean of molten rock and metal. The earth's crust would not be able to hold such tides in. The molten stuff would always be breaking through the flimsy thirty miles of outer solid rock as if it were eggshell. Twice a day there would be outbreaks of lava vast enough to submerge continents."

Since Gardner wrote his book in 1920, scientists have decided that the earth is partially solid and partially liquid--since it can't be all solid nor practically all liquid. Today's theory of the earth's interior says the earth has a solid core surrounded by a liquid outer core. Then the mantle up to the crust is somewhat plastic with a solid crust at the surface. But the fact that earthquakes occur down to 450 miles should prove to scientists that the crust must extend down at least that far. And if it extends that far down, Prytz's thermal gradient is obviously wrong since earthquakes cannot occur in molten lava. (See chapter eleven Earthquakes Prove Our Earth is Hollow! for further details)

Objection Fifteen:

"Pressure also increases with depth. No cavity in the Earth can exist at a depth greater than 40 miles down due to the pressure of the overlying rocks."

The opposite is true. While pressure does increase with depth for the first 10 to 30 miles, it then begins to decrease as the central sphere of gravity is approached. According to our theory, at the depth of 700 miles the center of gravity in a 800-mile thick crust is reached where everything is weightless and pressure is zero. Even as weight and pressure decrease as one descends into the earth, cavities get bigger and bigger. The man taken into the Kentucky cavern by his guide as recorded in ETIDORPHA, finally came to a cavity 150 miles down with a length of 6000 miles in which lay a giant lake. First-hand observations certainly are more reliable than theories based upon the imagination.

Objection Sixteen:

"Earthquake waves have been recorded traveling through the entire diameter of the Earth, many times, in many places. These earthquake waves can only travel through solids and liquids. If the earth were hollow, these quaking waves could not be detected."

Earthquake waves traveling down into the earth's crust are known to bounce back to the surface. Scientists say they are bouncing off a hard core. They could also be bouncing off an inner surface that ends in air--the hollow interior. The fact that every time there is a large earthquake, there is a large area on the opposite side of the earth starting at 103 degrees from the epicenter where no or very little earthquake waves reach. Scientists claim this is caused by the molten outer core through which no S-type earthquake waves can pass. Weak P-type waves do reach into the shadow zone. Since P-type waves CAN pass through liquid, scientists claim these weak P-type wave reception in the shadow zone are actually passing through their molten outer core and solid inner core to reach the opposite side of the earth with some bending as they pass through different density layers. But P-waves could also bend around our hollow core to be received weakly in the shadow zone. Actually, the Shadow Zone IS the evidence of the hollow in the earth.

The earth, in fact, is constantly trembling like a soap bubble, which is hollow. The cause of these ever present "micro-earthquakes" has never been explained by the solid-liquid earth theory but would be the natural expectation of a hollow globe. A liquid-solid interior would absorb these micro-earthquakes so they wouldn't even exist in a solid-liquid earth. The fact that whenever there is a large earthquake the earth vibrates like a bell is only more proof that Our Earth is Hollow, like a bell! (See chapter eleven Earthquakes Prove Our Earth is Hollow! for further details)

#### Objection Seventeen

"If the Earth were hollow, it would cave in on itself due to pressure, weak points in the Earth's crust, meteor impacts, earthquakes, etc."

Of course, this supposition that the hollow earth would cave in is based upon the false idea that gravity pulls everything to the center of the earth. Concerning this, Gardner replies, "The answer to this is, that in gravitational pull it is not the geometrical position that counts. **Center, in the geometrical sense of the word, does not apply. It is the mass that attracts. And if the great mass of the earth is in its thick shell, it is the mass of that shell that will attract,** and not a mere geometrical point which is not in the shell at all, but 2900 miles away from it, as that is the approximate distance between the central sun and the inner surface of the earth. As a matter of fact, it is the equal distribution of the force of gravity all through the shell that keeps the sun suspended in the spot which is equidistant from every part of that shell. When we are on the outside of the shell it is the mass of the shell that attracts us to its surface. When we go over to the inside of the shell that same force will still keep our feet solidly planted on the inner side." (Gardner, p. 34)

A high concentration of metal in its pure state located in the central sphere of gravity--the center of gravity--gives the earth the rigidity of a steel ball. In fact, ENCYCLOPEDIA AMERICANA says: "The very largest earthquakes cause the earth to vibrate like a BELL for several hours, with a fundamental period of vibration of 54 minutes." Our earth is like a bell, which is HOLLOW!

#### Objection Eighteen:

"If the Earth were hollow, it would cause variations in the orbit of a satellite in particular around the openings wherever they might exist. If a satellite passes over an area where the mass is either higher or lower than usual, alterations in the orbit will occur. This is how the massive mascons on the Moon were pinpointed--through deviations from the normal of the orbiting lunar Orbiters. If any one of the thousands of pieces of Earth orbiting hardware passes over a hollow Earth opening, similar deviations would have to occur. None ever have."

The negative anomalies over the polar openings are so great that the U.S. has lost satellites over them. **In the early 1960's when the U.S. was trying to put its first satellites into polar orbit, they kept losing them over the Arctic pole until they decided to put them into orbit on either side of the polar opening.** When they tried to send their satellites over the polar opening, several satellite cones were lost because they followed the earth's curvature into the earth's hollow interior where they crashed. (**SECRET OF THE AGES**, p. 130)

Ray Palmer wrote in 1959, "Most recent evidence that there is something strange about the Poles of Earth comes in the launching of Polar orbit satellites. The first six of these rockets launched by the United States from the California coast were full of disappointments--and surprises. The first two, although perfect launchings, seemed to go wrong at the last minute, and although presumed to be in orbit, failed to show up on the first complete pass around the Earth. Technically speaking, they should have gone into orbit but they did not. Something happened, and the location of this something was the Polar area."

"The next two rockets fired did achieve orbits. This was done by 'elevating sights,' so to speak, and trying for a higher orbit, with a large degree of eccentricity, that is, a high point of orbit above the poles and a low point of orbit at equatorial areas. It was admitted that this eccentric orbit would produce a short-lived orbit, but it would also give the advantage of readings at widely varied heights above the Earth. Especially interesting was the readings expected above the Poles, because of the discovery of the radiation ring that surrounds the Earth like a huge doughnut, with openings at both Poles (The Van Allen Radiation Belts)..."

The next two satellites bore nose cones similar to those in which a future astronaut would be sent into orbit. In each one was a powerful radio transmitter, which was possible because the cone was the size of an automobile, and carried heavy batteries. Also included were powerful lights which could be illuminated at the proper time. The technique of releasing this cone from the satellite was to drop it by a radio-triggered device somewhere north of Alaska. Once dropped, the cone lost altitude and proceeded around the Earth for one more revolution on its orbit. Having come over the Pole it was then low enough (calculated the rocket men) to drop into the atmosphere over Hawaii, where a parachute would lower it slowly to the Earth's surface, and there huge planes awaited, rigged to "fish for" the descending cone, and take it into the plane before it dropped into the ocean and thus retrieve its important contents intact, without damage of crash landing."

"On both occasions the following happened: The powerful radio signals were not heard at all. The lights were not seen at all. Radar, with a range of at least 500 miles detected absolutely nothing. Each "pick-up" was a complete failure because there was nothing to pick up..."

"Each launching was perfect. Orbits finely determined as to exact distance, speed, etc. were achieved, and constantly tracked. Yet, when the final deed is done, and the cone is detached successfully according to monitoring devices signaling the detachment, everything goes wrong and the result is complete and inexplicable disappearance of the cone..."

"Can it be that the reason the descending cone does not come over the Pole on that last low pass is because the Polar Area is mysterious in extent, not in the area calculated by the rocket men, and therefore not taken into consideration? Can it be that the nose cone fell to Earth inside that "land of mystery" discovered by Admiral Byrd? Where else could they have gone? If the Earth at the Poles is as given on today's maps, could four successive "low-level" launchings give the same inexplicable result--unreasonable disappearance?" (**LANDS BEYOND THE POLES** by Ray Palmer, pub. by Gray Barker, pp. 13-14)

Today there are no satellites in polar orbit that go directly over the poles. Those in polar orbit all go to one side or the other of the polar openings. That is, all except two. There are two satellites that have been discovered in polar orbit which DO go directly over the poles. These satellites belong to no known nation on earth. And they are different from our satellites. These two mysterious satellites consist of rock about 15 tons in size. (UFO REPORT Aug. 1977, p. 29)

It would seem that these two polar "rock" satellites belong to the nation inside Our Hollow Earth who know how to cause their satellites to compensate for the lack of gravity over the polar holes. These rock satellites cannot be thought to be meteorites that have gone into polar orbit. It is the consensus of scientists that the possibility of meteors going into orbit around the earth of their own accord is practically impossible. And the possibility of TWO going into the same orbit and setting up stable orbits IS impossible without intelligent guidance.

**In summary** of the scientific evidences of Our Hollow Earth, we maintain that:

1.) Explorers have gone to that land beyond the poles and returned to report their discoveries. Richard Evelyn Byrd, Admiral of the United States Navy flew his airplane through the North and South Polar Openings in 1929, February 1947 through the North Polar Opening, and January 13, 1956 through the South Polar Opening. (SECRET OF THE AGES, p. 114, **WORLDS BEYOND THE POLES**, by Giannini)

Captain Hubert Wilkins reached that land beyond the South Pole on December 12, 1929 (WORLDS BEYOND THE POLES, Giannini)

Olaf Jansen attained that land August 15, 1829 through the North Polar Opening. (THE SMOKY GOD, p. 89)

The patient of Dr. Nephi Cottom of Los Angeles visited that land through the North Polar Opening in this century.

The fellow, claimed by Hollow Earth researcher Bruce Walton, of Provo Utah, to be William Morgan, who wrote a book in about 1826 revealing the secrets of Masonry and subsequently reported to have been killed by the Masons and thrown into a river, called himself I-AM-THE-MAN, in ETIDORPHA, actually had been taken by the Masons and sent on a journey to the Hollow Earth through communicating caverns beginning at an entrance in Kentucky.

Danish scientist and explorer Edmund Bork led an expedition to Our Hollow Earth in 1991. See newspaper report in the Other Collections at the end of this book.

2.) The magnetic poles do not coincide with the geographic poles. A hollow earth with a nearly stationary interior sun would give rise to the geomagnetic field of the earth as the earth's shell rotates about the nearly stationary interior sun. Since the earth has been tipped on its axis in past geologic history, the interior sun still retains its original orientation and causes the geomagnetic poles to not coincide with the geographic axis of the earth.

3.) Icebergs originate from rivers inside the polar openings which freeze over in winter and break loose and are pushed out to sea in summer.

4.) Siberian frozen mammoths, and other wild animals which live in the interior, such as the hairy rhinoceros, reindeer, hippopotamus, lion and hyena, fall into the frozen rivers where they are frozen and later pushed out with the icebergs.

5.) Numerous fish, such as, mackerel and herring; animals, such as, whale, seal, arctic fox, reindeer and musk-oxen; birds, such as, knots, swans, snow geese, blue geese, brent geese, horned wavy geese, and ross-gull, migrate to and from the unknown north country each spring or fall to have their young or to escape the cold winter. (Gardner, Chapter 12)

6.) A North Wind brings warmer weather. In fact, on the rim of the polar opening the sun strikes in the summer at right angles just as at the equator, raising the temperature substantially. Olaf Jansen reported that when they were in the far north on the polar rim, "The sun was beating down slantingly, as if we were in a southern latitude, instead of in the far Northland. It was swinging around, its orbit ever visible and rising higher and higher each day...The sun's rays, while striking us aslant, furnished tranquil warmth." (THE SMOKY GOD pp. 76, 83)

7.) Eskimos say that their ancestors originated from a land in the north where the sun never sets. Marshall B. Gardner reports that "...in the efforts of these Eskimos to tell where they came from they would point to the north and describe a land of perpetual sunshine..." (**A JOURNEY TO THE EARTH'S INTERIOR**, p. 302)

8.) In the very far north, beyond the pole, within the polar opening and past the ice, exists an OPEN SEA to which few explorers have attained. At times the extent of this open sea has expanded down to the 80th parallel. In earlier times it seems to have extended farther south than today is the case.

Explorer Olaf Jansen and his father arrived at Franz Josef Land in late June, 1829, and finding an open lead in the ice, they followed it into the open sea within the polar opening and then into Our Hollow Earth. (THE SMOKY GOD, pp. 60, 61)

Several accounts of explorers reaching this open sea on the other side of the ice is found in a book by Dr. D. Barrington, **THE POSSIBILITY OF APPROACHING THE NORTH POLE ASSERTED**, published in 1818 in New York. Dr. Barrington writes that in 1751 a Captain MacCallam commanding a whaler, during a lull in the usual business of the voyage, thought he would make a dash for the North Pole. He reached a latitude of 83 degrees and found in front of him no further ice. In fact they had not seen a speck of ice for the last three degrees, he reported. But had to abandon his adventure as he did not wish to incur the displeasure of his owners.

Another voyage by a Dr. Dallie of Holland on a Dutch warship in supervision of the Greenland fisheries reached a latitude of 88 degrees and reported that the weather was warm, and the sea perfectly free from ice. Dallie pressed the captain to proceed but the captain felt he had already gone too far by having neglected his station.

Then a Mr. Stephens, sailing on another Dutch ship in 1754 was driven into latitude 84½ degrees north and reported that they did not find the cold excessive, used little more than common clothing, met with but little ice, and even less ice the farther northward they went.

9.) The explorers find subtropical seeds, flowers, green plants and trees and much driftwood floating in the Arctic Ocean which could come from no other place than Our Hollow Earth.

10.) Often winds from the north carry so much pollen as to color the icebergs. The colored snow has been analyzed and the red, green and yellow have been found to contain vegetable matter, similar to the pollen of a plant. It has been observed to fall at different seasons. Explorer Kane, in his first volume, page 44 wrote, "We passed the Crimson Cliffs of Sir John Ross in the forenoon of August 5th. The patches of red snow, from which they derive their name, could be seen clearly at the distance of ten miles from the coast...All the gorges and ravines in which the snows had lodged were deeply tinted with it...for if the snowy surface were more diffused, as it is no doubt earlier in the season, crimson would be the prevailing color."

11.) The Aurora Borealis and Australis are caused by the solar wind of the interior sun streaming through the polar openings following the earth's electromagnetic field lines and causing atoms in the atmosphere around the openings to light up and give off the beautiful Northern and Southern "lights." Scientists compare the Auroras to a television set but have no answer as to what takes the place of the cathode; the energy source of the auroras is not known. They admit it must be a solar wind, but the solar wind from our sun is deflected around the earth by the earth's electromagnetic field and is thus prevented from entering. It is here the Hollow Earth theory provides the perfect answer as to the source of the energy of the auroras, the cathode of the auroral television tube. It is the sun within the hollow of our earth which emanates its high energy electrons and protons

through the polar openings which when they hit the atmosphere above the polar openings cause the auroras to light up.

12.) Voyager and the Hubble space telescope have verified that most of the planets of our solar system have auroras. This has puzzled scientists because the solar wind from the sun is not strong enough to even cause earth's auroras much less the outer planets' auroras. The hollow planet theory provides the most logical solution: **ALL bodies in space are hollow**. Those having auroras and geomagnetic fields strongly indicate that they are not only hollow, but have interior suns and polar openings through which strong solar winds from those inner suns emit to light up their auroras as their interior solar winds impact on the atmosphere above their polar openings.

13.) Astronomer's observations of the polar lights on Mars, Venus and Mercury show them to be hollow with central suns shining through their polar openings.

14.) Pictures from satellites show the polar openings.

15.) The earth is not rigid enough to be solid all the way through. In Sir G. H. Darwin's book, **THE TIDES AND KINDRED PHENOMENA OF THE SOLAR SYSTEM**, he writes, "The body of the earth, on which the oceans rest, cannot be absolutely rigid. No body is. It must be deformed more or less by the attractions of the Sun and Moon." So he shows how these attractions are calculated. He does this by measuring the fortnightly tide. By fortnightly tide is meant "...a minute inequality in the tide-height, having a period of about a fortnight, depending upon the inclination of the moon's orbit to the plane of the equator. Now the amount which the fortnightly oceanic tide would have if the Earth were absolutely rigid can be calculated."

The results from these calculations show that the earth does yield to some extent under the force of the moon's attraction, and the yielding is not small enough to justify us in saying that the earth is practically rigid and it is not large enough to suggest that the earth has a liquid interior.

Our conclusion is that if the earth is not rigid enough to be solid all the way through and yet does not yield enough to the gravitational interactions of the moon and sun to have a liquid interior, then it must be hollow.

After thoroughly investigating gravity theory, I have concluded that Newtonian physics does allow all the planets, sun and moons to be hollow bodies. Assuming they are all hollow bodies with shells 10% of the planetary diameter, this would also allow all the planets and even the sun to have solid surfaces with shell densities within the range of possibility, with the possible exception being Saturn. See **The Origin, Cause, and Control of Gravity -- Found!**

16.) The earth appears flattened at the poles, which is caused in part by the existence there of openings into the interior.

17.) The earth trembles like a soap bubble, which is hollow. And when a large earthquake strikes, the earth vibrates like a bell, which is also hollow. The earth's fundamental period of vibration is 54 minutes. This indicates that the earth must be a hollow sphere.

18.) The Van Allen radiation belts have holes at the polar extremities of the earth, coinciding with the openings there. Scientists are puzzled as to the source of the radiation of the belts, admitting that it comes from a solar wind. But the solar wind from our sun is deflected around the earth by the earth's electromagnetic field which prevents its entrance. It is here that the Hollow Earth theory provides the answer as to that source. It is the sun within the hollow of the earth emanating protons and electrons through the polar openings causing the atmosphere to light up in the auroras and thereafter becoming trapped in the electromagnetic field of the earth, producing the Van Allen Radiation Belts.

19.) While in the far north, explorer Nansen discovered that the north-south horizon became foreshortened while the east-west remained the same which would be true if a polar opening exists there. In fact, normal navigation instruments don't function in the arctic/antartic as they do elsewhere because the polar openings are not taken into account. For example, a horizontal gyroscope will turn vertical as the polar opening is entered and the midpoint of the polar lip is reached. The magnetic compass will point up on one side of the opening and down on the other depending on which side one is located from the magnetic pole. In other places it may just spin.

20.) No airline flies over the Pole because this would risk flying into the polar opening.

21.) There are no satellites in polar orbits that pass within 300 miles of the pole. No satellite can be put into a stable orbit directly over the polar openings without taking into account the lack of gravity there as result of no mass within the polar openings.

22.) X-ray, ultraviolet, and other pictures of the sun taken by Sky-lab reveal holes at the poles of the sun where gravity is greatly diminished because of the openings there into the hollow interior of that **PLANET OF THE GODS**.

23.) Seismograph recordings placed on the moon's surface by the Apollo missions indicate that the moon is also hollow. (See chapter eight)

24.) Ozone holes at earth's poles are created by the ozone free air emanating from the earth's interior through the polar openings. These ozone holes in the atmosphere are greater in size in the seasons that greater quantities of air flow out of the polar openings.

Ozone holes at earth's poles are created by the ozone free air emanating from the earth's interior through the polar openings. These ozone holes in the atmosphere are greater in size in the seasons that greater quantities of air flow out of the polar openings.

Isn't it evident that there exists more scientific proof that our earth IS hollow, and that all planets are hollow than can be dug up proving them to have combinations of solid-liquid interiors? Indeed, the evidence is almost overwhelming that Our Earth IS HOLLOW, yet it is not common knowledge because its discovery has been purposely kept hidden from the public by the powerful Illuminist Conspiracy. But the Conspiracy does not yet have a monopoly on truth even though it would like to. And anyone with a little study and investigation on his own may now be able to come to a knowledge of the truth about the real structure of OUR HOLLOW EARTH!

## *Subterranean Worlds*

### *Errors with the Old Ideas of Gigantic Polar Holes?*

---

#### **The Cook Society & Hollow Planets**

by Jan Lamprecht

<http://www.hollowplanets.com/>

The Polar Regions have long featured as a core part of the Hollow Earth theory. Probably the most detailed study of this aspect was done by two prominent Hollow Earthers in the early 1900's: Gardner & Reed.

When I wrote my book, HOLLOW PLANETS, it was obvious that there errors with the old ideas of gigantic polar holes. For a long time I concerned myself with seismology, geology, astronomy and meteorology. But I always felt that at some point I would have to address the polar problem. It was not easy to do.

Eventually I tackled the problem. I started by following up on things which Gardner and Reed had said but I made little progress.

For example, both of them claimed warm air emanated from inside the Hollow Earth. I wondered if this could be true. If the Earth has a thick crust then there is a great distance for air to travel from the Inner Earth to the Outer Earth. If this tunnel were largely in darkness then surely the air would cool down while travelling hundreds and perhaps thousands of miles to the surface? I also realized that a Polar hole could never be as large as Gardner and Reed believed. So I proposed the idea that the Polar Hole was much smaller. It seemed a better idea. Later I made important discoveries which supported this idea.

I was curious about the accusations which flew about regarding the Peary and Cook controversy. Cook had claimed to have reached the North Pole one year before Peary. Cook was discredited. But many years later, in the 1980's, the National Geographic magazine published an article which discredited Peary as well. I was curious about Peary's sledging speeds which increased in speed as he approached the Pole. I was curious as to whether this increase in speed was real or only apparent. I wondered whether he had been fooled by a shortened horizon as he was actually heading over the rim of a gigantic hole!!!

My investigations however took many unexpected twists and turns. I concluded that Peary's sledging speeds did not represent anything abnormal. The ice in the vicinity of the North Pole becomes flatter and it is easier to travel across. This could explain his increase in speed.

But what could not be explained was Peary's sightings of a strange land off the coast of Ellesmere Island in the north of Canada. Peary twice reported seeing enormous mountains off the coast. He called this place Crocker Land. Later MacMillan and Green went looking for it.

But Peary was not the only one who saw land in this region. Dr Cook had not only seen it but had PHOTOGRAPHED IT! Cook had called it Bradley Land. He had walked along its coastline for 40 miles while on his way to the North Pole. The coastline he saw lay somewhat eastward of Peary's Crocker Land. Cook's photograph has since become an object of great debate. It was said that Cook faked it - but no one can prove where exactly it was faked. Many lies have been told about Cook which have subsequently been found out. I noted with great fascination that some members of the Cook Society have even been threatened and harassed when trying to get the truth about Dr Cook out. I think that there are powerful forces who want to keep a lid on this entire business. But what could be so important to warrant this kind of attention?

I made contact with the Frederick A. Cook Society while writing my book. I asked them for information.

To my amazement they told me that Amundsen, the discoverer of the South Pole, had flown in the vicinity of Bradley Land in the late 1920's and had seen land birds flying in its direction. Since Canada was too far away for the birds to have come from it, Amundsen believed that Bradley Land was real. Another explorer, Wilkins, also believed he had flown over snow and ice-covered land in the vicinity.

I was to discover that in 1914, MacMillan and Green (both Naval Officers), set off to find Crocker Land. They saw some amazing mirages of a large piece of land ringed with enormous mountains. They ran low on food and eventually turned back from the Arctic sea. I was to learn, after my Art Bell interview in September 1999, that Green fervently believed this land to be real. In 1923 he wrote an amazing article in Popular Science, wherein he spoke of an island the size of Pennsylvania (50,000 Sq Miles) existing there. Green said the US Navy should send its largest airship to this island to find out what was on it. Green had discovered that the Eskimos in Greenland knew of this place.

Several hundred years ago Vikings from Iceland had settled in Greenland. After living there for some time, these Vikings lost contact with Europe. The Europeans however never forgot about them, and some centuries later the Europeans went to look for them. All they found were the ruins of their villages. But where had the 9,000 Vikings gone? Lt. Cmdr. Green was to discover that the Eskimos in Greenland knew. The Eskimos said that the "white people" had all packed their bags and set off for a land which is eternally warm. This land can be reached by walking for one "moon" (month) across the ice by heading slightly west of the North Pole! Green knew where this place was. This is exactly how one reaches Crocker Land from Greenland! So Lt Cmdr Green believed the US Navy would find the Vikings alive and well on this large island. Furthermore, he believed he knew why this place was warm. It was warm because of geysers such as one finds in Iceland.

MacMillan himself did not give up completely either. In 1925 he and Lt Cmdr Byrd took three amphibious planes up to Ellesmere island. They tried setting up a base there from whence they could fly out over the Arctic sea in the direction of Crocker Land. Even then, MacMillan seemed to believe something existed there. In the November 1925 issue of National Geographic he wrote:- "One great area in the Polar Sea remains a mystery - roughly, that between Alaska and the Pole and northwest of Axel Heiberg Island. Here at least twice land has been reported and here tidal experts have predicted that it would be..."

In that same issue of National Geographic magazine, on page 225, it mentions that Lt Cmdr Richard Byrd would be in command of the three amphibious aircraft which would be flying in this area. It goes on to say: "If these air caravels of 1925 FIND A NEW CONTINENT, THEIR PILOTS WILL WIN A PLACE IN THE HALL OF FAME OF GREAT EXPLORERS." (The emphasis is mine).

Clearly, even then, these Arctic experts were still expecting to find a Polar Continent!

But this land cannot be found on any map today. Nevertheless, there is evidence for it. And it is this evidence which I am amassing for articles in two Arctic journals, one of them being POLAR PRIORITIES, which is the Cook Society's journal. The Cook Society was very helpful but they really did not think much of my idea that there is an undiscovered land in the Arctic. They did not know what my book was about. I really did not want to tell them because I thought the whole Hollow Earth idea would not go down well with them.

Someone from my List Service e-mailed them one day to tell them that my book told the story of Dr Cook and how he had been discredited and attacked for no reason.

The Cook Society was curious and bought four copies of my book. The Arctic experts and historians of the Cook Society were fascinated by my arguments.

The next thing I knew I was getting congratulatory e-mails from the President and Vice-President of the Society. Their committee had held its quarterly meeting and had discussed my book at length. The whole committee wished me well and they volunteered more information. Even the Vice-President, who had previously not been keen on my Polar Continent idea, admitted to me that my research raised many questions. I had pointed out holes in their own arguments.

Both the President, Russell Gibbons, and the Vice-President, Prof (Dr) Ralph Myerson, have openly stated that Academics should take a serious look at my book. To see this, go to my website at: **WWW.HollowPlanets.com** and click on my guestbook where you can read their postings.

They helped me in my efforts to get someone up to Ellesmere Island to look for Crocker Land. They suggested I speak to the Sverdrup2000 organization who have a team of people up there on Ellesmere Island right now. During the past few weeks we have indeed been trying to do that. I have been e-mailing the people concerned to ask them to go to the hill from whence Peary saw Crocker Land so that they could look out there again and perhaps try to get photo and video footage of this place. Any such evidence

now would re-open something which has been dormant for more than 75 years. The team-leader was not too keen to go looking for a mirage. I had somewhat more luck with another gentleman in the organization. Russell Gibbons of the Cook Society was kind enough to e-mail these people directly, asking them to follow up on my suggestions. Having support such as this is truly wonderful. After all, I am merely posing some questions and asking for answers. As expeditions go, what I am asking for is actually quite simple and cheap.

My analysis of the Crocker Land expedition and what came afterwards, shows clearly that something is afoot up there.

Did Vikings really move to this island? I managed to find some very old National Geographic magazines which have stories in them which are truly eye-opening. The one stated that Eskimos from Alaska had at one time been blown northwards to this land and had lived there among other Eskimos. Eskimos in both Greenland and Alaska know of this place. Perhaps the strangest possible confirmation that those Vikings are still around comes from some eskimo villagers on the northern coastline of Alaska. In the late 19th century they saw two or three strange men, dressed differently to Eskimos, and carrying spears. These men were walking along the Alaskan coast. But when they saw the Eskimos they headed out over the Arctic sea, northwards, as if going to Crocker Land. Could this be a sighting of some of those Vikings?

Why isn't this island on a map? My analysis in Chapter 16 of my book shows that this land may well lie on the edge of a Polar Hole or partially inside of it. This would explain the bizarre behaviour of the mirage. So I believe the existence of this island is classified because it is related to a Polar Hole and the inner earth. The only way to know for sure is of course to investigate the problem. I remain committed to trying to get someone up there to look into the problem of the Missing Polar Continent. I am certain that when it is found we will finally know why Dr Cook HAD TO BE DISCREDITED. It was because of his photographs. One can laugh off Peary's visual sightings since we cannot know exactly what he saw. We can only go by what he told us. However, Dr Cook's very clear photographs of Bradley Land are a different matter. Dr Cook also took another strange photograph, 120 miles from the North Pole it shows a piece of glacial ice. The implication of such a piece of glacial ice at that latitude is that it might originate from LAND NEARBY - in other words - Crocker Land. Dr Cook might have discovered far too much that he should not have known about. It could be that the true story of the North Pole dispute is much stranger than anyone could ever have conceived of.

The solution to the problem is really simple. We need to get someone up to either Cape Colgate or Cape Thomas Hubbard (as they were called back then) on Ellesmere island, to see if we can once again spot the mirage of Crocker Land. That done, we must try to get someone to fly out there. What will we find there? Will we find a strange, warm land, surrounded by high mountains and enclosed by a thick fog produced by geysers? Will we find Eskimos living side-by-side with a thriving colony of Vikings who have lost contact with Europe for several hundred years? Do these people live on the edge of a Polar Hole?

The Cook Society has been extremely accomodating and helpful. They agreed to my request for a mainstream forum. I proposed to them that I write an article for their

Journal, POLAR PRIORITIES, which is read by many arctic experts. In this article I will make a case for the existence of a Polar Continent. Currently I am busy doing new R&D especially for this article. They also proposed that I try to get an article published in another Journal which deals with the history of geographic discoveries. It is my aim therefore to try to get this idea out into the mainstream, among Arctic experts and interested parties, to see what results. Is it possible that there is a large island, larger than Iceland, sitting in the sea directly north of Alaska, and that its existence is classified? If so, this must represent the greatest mystery of our time. And indeed we must ask ourselves the chilling question as to WHY this is so? The truth may well be stranger than any fiction we could dream up.

Regards, Jan...

\* To weare the Nose with Spectacles or sett up torches bright Doe nought availe yf men be blinde or will not see the light.

<http://www.geocities.com/Area51/Shadowlands/6583/under013.html>

## *Subterranean Worlds*

### *Underground Kingdom Placed at the Centre of the Earth*

---

#### **A Prophecy from the Inner Earth?**

Source: Conservative Revolution

<http://www.geocities.com/CapitolHill/6824/sacrgeo.htm>

"The entrances to the Interior Earth are to be found at the poles, as well as in the Antarctic Oases and possibly on the top of this mountain. They can be reached by travelling through the deep waters which flow beneath the ices.

"In this Interior Earth are the Cities of Agharti, Shambhalla and the Caesars, inhabited by the immortal Siddhas. There the Golden Age still exists. The Discs of Light, covered in orichalcum, fly out from there. They carried our guide off to a place of safety. It is the invulnerable Paradise which our people have rediscovered, where the science of resurrection and eternal love is guarded. It is the starting point of the journey to our star."  
- NOS: Book of the Resurrection

One of the world's oldest legends tells of a vast underground network of tunnels and passageways connecting the great continents of the earth to a subterranean kingdom somewhere beneath the heart of Asia.

"Among the Mongolian tribes of Inner Mongolia," wrote the British explorer T. Wilkins, "there are traditions about tunnels and subterranean worlds which sound as fantastic as anything in modern novels. One legend - if it be that - says that the tunnels lead to a subterranean world of Antediluvian descent somewhere in a recess of Afghanistan, or in

the region of the Hindu Kush. It is Shangri-la where science and the arts, never threatened by world wars, develop peacefully, among a race of vast knowledge. It is even given a name: Agharti."

According to Theosophical tradition, the last remnants of a super-civilization which once flourished in what is now the Gobi fled below ground into two underground cities known respectively as Shambhalla and Agharti. Drawing upon the popular concepts of the Theosophists, the writings of 19th century occultists, and authentic Tibetan references to Agharti/Shamballah, some researchers place these cities not in super-bunkers hewn beneath the Himalayas, but actually inside a hollow Earth.

In their book **The Morning of the Magicians**, Louis Pauwels and Jacques Bergier state:

"This idea of a hollow Earth is connected with a tradition which is to be found everywhere throughout the ages. The most ancient religious texts speak of a separate world situated underneath the Earth's crust which was supposed to be the dwelling-place of departed spirits. When Gilgamesh, the legendary hero of the ancient Sumerian and Babylonian epics, went to visit his ancestor Utnapishtim, he descended into the bowels of the Earth; and it was there that Orpheus went to seek the soul of Euridice. Ulysses, having reached the furthestmost boundaries of the Western world, offered a sacrifice so that the spirits of the Ancients would rise up from the depths of the Earth and give him advice. Pluto was said to reign over the underworld and over the spirits of the dead. The souls of the damned went to live in caverns beneath the Earth. Venus, in some Germanic legends, was banished to the bowels of the Earth. Dante situated his Inferno among the lowest circles. In European folk-lore! e drag ons have their habitat underground, and the Japanese believe that deep down underneath their island dwells a monster whose stirrings are the cause of earthquakes."

Search for the Inner Earth

The Tibetan word 'Agharti' is said by some writers to mean 'the underground kingdom placed at the centre of the Earth, where the king of the world reigns.'

In the book **The Mysterious Unknown**, the French journalist Robert Charroux says: "Agharti is a mysterious subterranean kingdom that is said to lie under the Himalayas and where all the Great Initiators and the Masters of the World in the present cycle are still living. Agharti is an initiatory centre..."

The greatest exponent of the subterranean kingdom of Agharti was Dr Ferdinand Ossendowski (1876-1945), a Polish academic, explorer and writer. In 1922 Ossendowski published his best selling work *Beasts, Men and Gods*, a chronicle of his adventures in Central Asia.

As Ossendowski tells it, during his adventures in Asia he encountered the tradition of "Agharti", a subterranean realm with millions of inhabitants ruled over by the mysterious 'King of the World. Ossendowski says in his book:

"All the people there are protected against Evil and crimes do not exist within its bournes. Science has there developed calmly and nothing is threatened with destruction. The

subterranean people have reached the highest knowledge. Now it is a large kingdom, millions of men, with 'The King of the World' as their ruler. He knows all the forces of the world and reads all the souls of humankind and the great book of their destiny."

A Prophecy for this Century?

The final chapter of **Beasts, Men and Gods** contains a quite remarkable prophecy given by the King of the World. Ossendowski claimed that it was conveyed to him by the Hutuktu of Narabanchi in 1921. According to the Lama the King of the World made the following pronouncement 'thirty years ago', which corresponds to 1890:

More and more the people will forget their souls and care about their bodies. The greatest sin and corruption will reign on this earth. People will become as ferocious animals, thirsting for the blood and death of their brothers. The 'Crescent' will grow dim and its followers will descend into beggary and ceaseless war. Its conquerors will be stricken by the sun but will not progress upward and twice they will be visited with the heaviest misfortune, which will end in insult before the eye of the other peoples. The crowns of kings, great and small, will fall...one, two, three, four, five, six, seven, eight....There will be a terrible battle among all the peoples. The seas will become red...the earth and the bottom of the seas will be strewn with bones...kingdoms will be scattered...whole peoples will die...hunger, disease, crimes unknown to the law, never before seen in the world.

"The enemies of God and of the Divine Spirit in man will come. Those who take the hand of another shall also perish. The forgotten and pursued shall rise and hold the attention of the whole world. There will be fogs and storms. Bare mountains shall suddenly be covered with forests. Earthquakes will come...Millions will change the fetters of slavery and humiliation for hunger, disease and death. The ancient roads will be covered with crowds wandering from one place to another. The greatest and most beautiful cities shall perish in fire...one, two, three...Father shall rise against son, brother against brother and mother against daughter....Vice, crime and the destruction of body and soul shall follow....Families shall be scattered....Truth and love shall disappear.....From ten thousand men one shall remain; he shall be nude and mad and without force and the knowledge to build him a house and find his food....He will howl as the raging wolf, devour dead bodies, bite his own flesh and challenge God to fight....All the earth will be emptied. God will turn away from it and over it there will be only night and death.

"Then I shall send a people, now unknown, which shall tear out the weeds of madness and vice with a strong hand and will lead those who still remain faithful to the spirit of man in the fight against Evil. They will found a new life on the earth purified by the death of nations. In the fiftieth year only three great kingdoms will appear, which will exist happily seventy-one years. Afterwards there will be eighteen years of war and destruction. Then the peoples of Agharti will come up from their subterranean caverns to the surface of the earth.

Immediately following this 'prophecy' Ossendowski writes:

"Afterwards, as I travelled farther through Eastern Mongolia and to Peking, I often thought: 'And what if...? What if whole peoples of different colours, faiths and tribes should begin their migration toward the West?...."

After again quoting the Tibetan Lama, Ossendowski ends his book: "Karma may have opened a new page of history! And what if the King of the World be with them? But this greatest Mystery of Mysteries keeps its own deep silence."

Perhaps we should leave the last word on 'Agharti' to an associate of Ossendowski, the renowned French esotericist Rene Guenon:

"Now, should its placement in a definite region be regarded as literally true, or only as symbolic, or is it both at the same time? To this question we simply reply that, for us, the geographical facts themselves and also the historical facts have, like all others, a symbolic value; which moreover evidently does not remove any of their own reality in so far as they are facts, but which confers on them, beyond this immediate reality, a superior significance."

Almost as a belated P.S. we may add the admonition of Guenon's secretary Whitall Perry, "nothing but frustration awaits the unwary seeker, who would do well to ponder in advance the significance of the word Agharti, for it purportedly comes from a Sanskrit root meaning ungraspable."

Send us comment  
arctogai@redline.ru

<http://www.geocities.com/Area51/Shadowlands/6583/under015.html>

## *Subterranean Worlds*

### *Navy Explores a Subterranean System Below the Western United States*

---

#### **Underground Empire**

Crim-Ram Series FILE NO. 008

by Branton

In March of 1980, John J. Williams, a New Mexico "Patriot" who published the anti-Communist oriented "REBEL MAGAZINE" (at the time available from: Consumertronics Co., c/o John J. Williams. Pres., 2011 Crescent Dr., P.O. Drawer 537., Alamogordo, NM 88310) revealed some incredible details on an alleged subterranean system which the Navy had been exploring below the western United States. The report appeared in issue No. 6 of his magazine, and was later reproduced in the Fall, 1985 (#164) issue of SEARCH Magazine, at the time edited by Marjorie Palmer, widow of the

late Ray Palmer. The article, titled 'CALIFORNIA FLOATS ON OCEAN?', revealed the following:

"Some time ago, I heard a man on a TV interview-show briefly mention that parts of California and neighboring states are floating on the Pacific Ocean! He was a high ranking Naval officer on a top-secret nuclear submarine that has been (and is) exploring and mapping these enormous caverns and passage-ways underneath the West for over 10 years now.

"A friend of mine finally tracked the man down. He is now living quietly in retirement and asked that no details pointing to him be revealed as he does not want publicity and government attention. After writing this article, I destroyed my files on him. This is his story..."

Williams explains that not "all" of the areas in question are actually "resting" or "floating" on the ocean, however there are allegedly **many subterranean cavities below the western U.S., and they are not limited to California, and many of them consist of very large water-filled aqua-systems. These have been explored via nuclear submarines to several hundred miles inland, particularly in the region of southern California and the southern Oregon - northern California area.** Williams continues:

"...When he retired several years ago, in spite of about 10 years of intensive Naval study, the Navy had not gotten even a handle on their exacts and dimensions. Today, the story may be different.

"He makes the following statements from his observations:

"1. The passageways are labyrinthine with widths from a few to thousands of feet (caverns), averaging roughly about a 100 feet.

"2. Much like dry caverns do, heights and depths vary a great deal and in some cases, two or more caverns or passageways pass over or under each other at different depths.

"3. Most of the entrances lie just off the Continental Shelf (i.e. in the Continental Slope - Branton).

"4. Most of the entrances are too small for submarine investigation; and many that are large enough lie in waters that are too deep.

"5. Some of the caverns (in S. California) are topped with oil while some others are filled with gases believed to approximate our atmosphere (in very ancient times).

"6. The San Joaquin Valley is essentially a portion of the original cavernous area that collapsed eons ago due to it's sheer weight.

"7. What is being passed off as the 'San Andreas Fault' are large, unsupported chambers that are in the process of collapsing. When the BIG ONE finally hits, many scientists in the know believe that most of California will break off like a cold Hershey bar and slide into the ocean! (it is postulated by some that an ancient land-mass which some believe

may have been connected to what is now California, broke off and sunk into the ocean during an ancient cataclysm - Branton)

"8. (We are deleting this section due to the possibility of undue stress and fear which may result from it's disclosure. Also, because of recent international events which may have resulted in a solution to this problem. We will merely state that it involves a scenario similar to that which was portrayed in a James Bond movie, and which concerned underground caverns, silicon valley, nuclear weapons, and the San Andreas fault - Branton).

**"9. A WELL-KNOWN U.S. nuclear submarine lost its way in these passages and disappeared forever.** It was reported to have been lost IN OPEN SEA ELSEWHERE to keep the American people in total ignorance and to justify an enormous pay-off to an eccentric U.S. billionaire (who died in recent years) for providing the fictitious "recovery" effort.

"I have no reason to doubt the man. I can't tell for sure whether or not these caverns and passageways exist or to their extents. The story does sound a bit fantastic but I have no reason to doubt the man. I have seen copies of documentation that at least prove that he was a high ranking Naval officer (nuclear submarine duty) and a distinguished scientist. In fact, his scientific background and reputation are impeccable. He definitely cannot be labeled as a crackpot, lunatic or publicity- seeker. I would very much like more information on this topic..."

After further inquiries to Mr. Williams on the part of 'inner earth' researchers, Williams responded with the following when asked whether or not he had received any replies to his request for more information about the alleged passageways below California:

"Since publishing our article on the vast cavern network under much of California, we have received many responses and inquiries. Some of these responses appear to be knowledgeable sources. Note that the material sent to us for this article was written by someone of very high repute whose credentials I personally checked out. Due to an agreement with him, I cannot reveal his identity.

"One response was from a retired (conventional submarine duty? - Branton) submarine commander, who according to him, spent many years in the waters off California. He stated that the caverns do NOT exist.

"Another response was from an anonymous person who cited unpublished oil company seismographic data, and stated, 'Although most of the caverns you depict in your drawing are smaller, larger or located somewhat differently than the actual caverns, you are essentially correct... My information is more up-to-date than what you apparently relied upon.' He (or she) did not supply any maps to pin down our differences, just some written descriptions. However, some knowledgeable person could probably deduce his (or her) overall 'map' from the voluminous seismographic data sent. I am in the process of looking for this input; it's been several years now and it may have all been thrown out... Incidentally, the oil company seismic data had much data around the Fresno area if that helps any.

"One incident which tends to confirm the fact that California is in fact floating on the ocean was a story which made the headlines in recent years. This incident involved an oil discovery beneath **Long Beach, California**. When oil companies began pumping oil out of the ground beneath Long Beach it was soon learned that the entire city **BEGAN SINKING INTO THE OCEAN!**

"It sank up to 26 feet and dikes had to be built to keep out the water. The problem is (temporarily) being rectified by 'water injection'--i.e. pumping an equivalent amount of WATER into the ground to the amount of oil and water taken out, in order to keep the city AFLOAT!"

One thing which may be of interest in connection with Mr. Williams' account was a statement which was made by a prominent California Bigfoot investigator by the name of Virginia Louise Swanson, who has done a good deal of study on caves and their connections to the Bigfoot phenomena. She refers to these caverns in the following words:

"...Somewhere I got the idea that a big portion of Death Valley is located on a shelf of FALSE bedrock. A certain type of earthquake would collapse all of it down to an enormous series of caverns that would open up into another Grand Canyon."

According to our knowledge, the only nuclear submarines ever to disappear under mysterious circumstances were the U.S.S. THRESHER and the U.S.S. SCORPION. It is uncertain whether the retired Navy Officer who John J. Williams spoke of was referring to the THRESHER or the SCORPION, although the disappearance of the Thresher probably caused more publicity. The Thresher was the LEAD SHIP or 'Flag' ship in the world's most advanced class of nuclear attack submarines. She was designed to operate deeper and more silently than any of her predecessors and was also endowed with significant advances in sonar equipment, in noise reduction, and in fire-control. All in all, she was the most advanced international submarine in the world at the time of her disappearance and would have been an ideal choice for a top-secret mission such as the exploration of the caverns mentioned by John Williams' source.

On April 10, 1963 (according to official reports) the Thresher, under the command of Lt. Commander John W. Harvey, USN, with a total of 129 men (comprised of the crew, civilian technicians, and observers) **disappeared without explanation. NOT A SINGLE TRACE or clue as to the fate of the craft, or it's occupants, were ever recovered: no oil slicks, radiation, floating debris, or similar signs of wreckage were ever seen.** It is interesting to note that almost all of the reports at the time stated the ship had "disappeared," or was "lost," not "sunk!" One woman whose husband was on the ill-fated ship reported her belief that her husband was still alive. Theologically speaking, the possibility of a long-distance connection or "communion" on a deep, emotional level between a husband and a wife should not necessarily be consigned to the realm of the occult or "psychic" phenomena. Many religions believe that the very spiritual natures of a husband and a wife are united upon the consummation of a marriage, and thus they become, as Christian teachings say, "one flesh". The actual words of this woman, who was interviewed by Will Carson and Jeannie Joy--two writers devoted to pursuing strange events--shortly after the Thresher incident, were as follows:

"My husband was on the submarine Thresher when it disappeared. I don't consider myself a widow. I don't believe my husband is dead. No, it's not a matter of just not being able to believe it, to accept reality; I just can't get over the conviction that he's still alive somewhere. I love my husband very much. I know he loved--loves me. We were very close. We could always tell when something was wrong with each other. Intuition, I guess. I should have felt something the instant there was trouble, if he was really in serious trouble and knew it--a matter of life and death--but I didn't."

"What do you believe really happened?" Carson and Joy asked the attractive young woman.

"Most people think I'm crazy when I say this, but I believe the Thresher was captured."

"By whom?"

"I can't say for sure, but there WAS a Russian submarine spotted near there that day (that is, near where it REPORTEDLY vanished 220 miles off Boston harbor)--only I can't imagine how even the Russians could CAPTURE a vessel like the Thresher without leaving the slightest evidence!"

The following account, concerning an area just east of BISHOP (OWENS VALLEY), CALIFORNIA, was related by Val Valerian in his 'LEADING EDGE' Newsletter, Dec. 1989 - Jan. 1990 issue. The article, titled: 'DEEP SPRING'S, CALIFORNIA', stated:

"Deep Springs, California is an area that is becoming known as the site for very strange events. According to the information released both on the air on KVEG-AM and from other sources, the area is full of strange people wandering around in black suits. There have also been rumors that there is an underground facility in the area. Checking with gravity anomaly maps proved that there are large cavities under the ground in that area. The wildest claims relative to the area have stated that alien life forms are being released there... Deep Springs Lake has been probed and it appears bottomless. Divers have traveled along an underground river 27 miles toward the Las Vegas area before having to turn around." (This 'river' would probably have been a 'partially' water-filled cave with a large stream or river flowing through it, rather than an entirely underwater passage, since 27 miles would undoubtedly be entirely out of the question if it were all underwater travel, with present diving technology - Branton).

In the April, 1963 issue of SEARCH Magazine, Will Carson and Jeannie Joy, in their regular column '**PRYING INTO THE UNKNOWN**', related the following incredible story:

"It has always been a mystery to us in the first place how Mr. and Mrs. P.E. can find and afford the time to do the sort of things most of us only dream of doing. After knowing them for more than fifteen years, it is inconceivable to suspect their integrity or sanity - and yet they impose the following excise upon our credulity..."

"While exploring for petroglyphs in the Casa Diablo vicinity of BISHOP, CALIFORNIA, Mr. & Mrs. P.E. came upon a circular hole in the ground, about nine feet in diameter, which exuded a sulfurous steam and seemed recently to have been filled with hot water.

A few feet from the surface the shaft took a tangent course which looked easily accessible and, upon an impulse with which we cannot sympathize, the dauntless E.'s, armed only with a flashlight, forthwith crawled down into that hole.

"At a depth we've failed to record the oblique tunnel opened into a horizontal corridor whose dripping walls, now encrusted with minerals, could only have been carved by human hands, countless ages ago - of this the E.'s felt certain. The end of the short passage was blocked by what seemed to be a huge doorway of solid rock which, however, wouldn't yield. The light of their flash was turned to a corner where water dripped from a protuberance - which proved to be a delicately carved face, distorted now by the crystallized minerals, and from whose gaping mouth water issued.

"As Mr. and Mrs. E. stood there in silent awe - wondering what lay behind that immovable door - the strangest thing of all happened...but our chronology will not be incorrect if we wait till they return to the surface before revealing this, for now the water began gushing from the carved mouth and from other unseen ducts elsewhere in that cave and rising at an alarming rate!

"They hurried to the surface, and in less than half an hour there was only a quite ordinary appearing pool of warm mineral water on the desert floor.

"Do you know,' Mrs. E. said to her husband, 'while I stood down there I heard music - the strangest, most weird music I'd ever heard. But it seemed to come from everywhere at once, or inside my own head. I guess it was just my imagination.'

"Mr. E. turned pale. 'My God,' he said; I thought it was MY imagination, but I heard it, too - like music from some other world!"

"Why do they call that rock formation near where the E's had their strange experience Casa Diablo - the Devil's house? And why did the Indians name that area Inyo - dwelling place of the great spirit?"

Erich A. Aggen, Jr., in his article 'TOP SECRET: ALIEN UFO BASES' (SEARCH Magazine, Summer 1991 issue), presented the following revelations concerning the UFO-Subterranean connection:

"...A great deal of UFO research has also led to the conclusion that various...species of aliens have set up secret underground bases in the United States and other countries. It is logical to assume that such bases have also been established elsewhere in the solar system. If such bases exist, where would we find them? Existing information allows us to make a few educated guesses.

"EARTH BASES: UNDERGROUND - The dark, cavernous world beneath our feet is the source of many baffling mysteries. Clandestine UFO bases may be hidden deep within the earth in natural and/or artificial caverns. As a former member of the National Speleological Society (NSS), I am well aware of the vast extent of cave systems within the United States. In my own native state of Missouri, for example, there are over 2,500 known caves and dozens of new ones being discovered every year. Many of these caves are intricately linked together by numerous passageways and interconnecting chambers.

"One particular species of blind white (albino) cave fish, the TYPHLICHTHYS, has been found in many widely separated cave systems over several states. It has been found in caves that make a great arc through Kentucky, Indiana, Illinois and UNDER the Mississippi River extending into Missouri, Arkansas, and Oklahoma! A VAST SECTION OF THE CENTRAL AND SOUTHERN UNITED STATES MUST LIE ABOVE ONE IMMENSE CAVERN SYSTEM!

"Many caves possess rooms hundreds of feet in length, width, and height. In most cases, these huge natural caverns can only be reached and explored with the utmost skill and perseverance. There are only a few thousand NSS members in the United States and only a few hundred of this number are active spelunkers. With so few spelunkers spread over such a large area, only a very small fraction of the tens of thousands of known caves in this country have been carefully mapped and explored. Thousands of other caves remain undiscovered and unexplored.

"Extensive evidence indicates that caves in the United States may be connected with caves in other parts of the world. In Mexico, the cave known as 'Sotano de las Golondrinas', (or) basement of the swallows, in the Municipio de Aquismo, S.L.P., reaches a depth of 1100 feet (334 meters). The cave is actually a giant 'sinkhole' or 'hole' in the ground with a nearly circular opening at the top, hundreds of feet in diameter. It is impossible to climb down the sides of Golondrinas because the walls of the opening are too smooth and "belled-out". To reach the bottom of the cave, a special rope over 1100 feet long must be secured at the top of the opening and dropped into the sinkhole. Explorers must then descend into the yawning hole one at a time using special cave repelling gear and climbing techniques. At the bottom of Sotano de las Golondrinas are numerous 'leads' or openings to a multiplicity of different crevices, passages, crawlways, and rooms which have never been mapped or investigated.

"The entrance to Golondrinas is located in one of the most primitive and uncivilized areas of Mexico and local inhabitants are afraid to approach the cave because they believe it is full of 'evil spirits' which lure people to their deaths. They tell stories of people mysteriously disappearing never to be heard from again while passing near the cave entrance. These stories may be based more on fact than fiction: they are similar in some respects to UFO abduction reports. Because of its huge size, remote location, and unique geological structure, Golondrinas would be an ideal UFO base. Naturally camouflaged caves in other parts of the world may serve as excellent natural bases, way stations, and 'depots' for UFOs.

"An underground nuclear test called the 'Schooner Experiment' conducted in December, 1968, substantiates the theory that caves in North and South America are intimately linked. In this test, a 35-kiloton nuclear bomb was exploded under the desert of Nevada. Five days after the test, the radiation level rose from 10 to 20 times in Canada, 1000 miles away from the Nevada test site! The only way the radioactive dust could have traveled that far is through an interconnected system of caves extending all the way from Nevada to Canada!"

Bourke Lee, in his book 'DEATH VALLEY MEN' (MacMillan Co., N.Y. 1932), chapter: "Old Gold", describes a conversation which he had several years ago with a small group

of Death valley residents. The conversation had eventually turned to the subject of Paihute Indian legends. At one point two of the men, Jack and Bill, described their experience with an 'underground city' which they claimed to have discovered after one of them had fallen through the bottom of an old mine shaft near Wingate Pass. They found themselves in a natural underground cavern which they claimed to have followed about 20 miles north into the heart of the Panamint Mountains. To their amazement, they allegedly found themselves in an huge, ancient, underground cavern city. They claimed that they discovered within the city several perfectly preserved 'mummies', which wore thick arm bands, wielded gold spears, etc. The city had apparently been abandoned for ages, except for the mummies, and the entire underground system looked very ancient. It was formerly lit, they found out by accident, by an ingenious system of lights fed by subterranean gases. They claimed to have seen a large, polished "round table" which looked as if it may have been part of an ancient council chamber, giant statues of solid gold, stone vaults and "drawers" full of gold bars and gemstones of all kinds, heavy stone "wheelbarrows" which were perfectly balanced and scientifically-constructed so that a child could use them, huge stone doors which were almost perfectly balanced by counter-weights, and other incredible sights.

They also claimed to have followed the caverns upwards to a higher level which ultimately opened out onto the face of the Panamints, about half-way up the eastern slope, in the form of a few ancient tunnel-like quays. They realized that the valley below was once under water and they eventually came to the conclusion that the arched openings were ancient 'docks' for sea vessels. They could allegedly see Furnace Creek Ranch and Wash far below them. They told Bourke Lee that they had brought some of the treasure out of the caverns and tried to set up a deal with certain people, including scientists associated with the Smithsonian Institute, in order to gain help to explore and publicize the city as one of the 'wonders of the world'. These efforts ended in disappointment however when a 'friend' of theirs stole the treasure (which was also the evidence) and they were scoffed at and rejected by the scientists when they went to show them the 'mine' entrance and could not find it. A recent cloud- burst they claimed, had altered and rearranged the entire countryside and the landscape did not look like it had been before. When Lee last heard from the two men, Bill and Jack, they were preparing to climb the east face of the Panamints to locate the ancient tunnel openings or quays high up the side of the steep slope. Bourke Lee never did see or hear from his friends ever again.

During the lengthy conversation wherein they first revealed the secret of the underground city to Lee and others, the discussion turned to the topic of a Paihute Indian legend that they had heard which was remarkably similar to an ancient Grecian myth. The Paihute legend concerned a tribal chief whose wife had died, and who according to the tradition took a spiritual journey to the underworld to find her, and upon returning with her he 'looked back' and as this was forbidden he was not allowed to bring his wife back with him from the dead. This would not be the same as the more tangible story related in an earlier file, as told by the Navaho Oga-Make, concerning a Paihute chief who was allegedly PHYSICALLY taken into the underground cities of the Hav-musuvv deep below the Panamints. After this legend was referred to, the conversation turned to a discussion of an alleged subterranean race, who were believed to inhabit very deep

caverns far below the Death Valley area. Paihute legends of the "Hav-musuvv" indicate that these ancient dwellers of the Panamints abandoned the ancient city within the mountain itself and migrated to deeper and larger caverns below. Could the following story tie-in with the Paihute legends of the Hav-musuvv? We will enter the conversation with the following discourse from Bourke Lee:

"...The professor and Jack and Bill sat in the little canvas house in Emigrant Canyon and heard the legend all the way through. The professor said, 'That story, in its essentials, is the story of Orpheus and Eurydice.'

"'Yes,' I said. 'It's also a Paiute legend. Some Indians told that legend to John Wesley Powell in the sixties.'

"'That's very interesting,' said the professor. 'It's so close a parallel to Orpheus and Eurydice that the story might well have been lifted bodily from the Greeks.'

"Jack said, 'I wouldn't be surprised. I knew a Greek. I forgot his name, but he ran a restaurant in almost every mining town I ever was in. He was an extensive wanderer. The Greeks are great travelers.'

"Bill said, 'They don't mean restaurant Greeks. The Greeks they're talked about have been dead for thousands of years.'

"'What of it?' asked Jack, 'maybe the early Greeks was great travelers, too.'

"The professor said, 'It's very interesting.'

"'Now! About that tunnel,' said Bill, with his forehead wrapped in a frown. 'You said this Indian went through a tunnel into a strange country, didn't you?'

"'Yes,' I said. 'I think I called it a cave or a cavern, but I suppose a miner would call it a tunnel. Why?'

"'Here's a funny thing,' said Bill. 'This Indian trapper livin' right across the canyon has a story about a tunnel, an it's not a thousand years old either. Tom Wilson told me that his grandfather went through this tunnel and disappeared. He was gone three years, and when he came back he said he'd been in a strange country livin' among strange people. That tunnel is supposed to be somewhere in the Panamints not awful far from where we're sittin'. Now! What do you make of that?'

"Jack said, 'I think Tom's grandfather was an awful liar.'

"I said, 'Tom's grandfather lived when the Paiutes were keeping their tribal lore alive. He probably knew the old legend. Powell heard it in Nevada only sixty-five years ago.'

"'It's very interesting,' said the professor.

"'I got an idea about it,' said Bill, thoughtfully. 'Tom's grandfather might have wandered into some tunnel all goofy from chewin' jimson weed and then come out an found some early whites and stayed with them. Tom told me that the people spoke a queer language

and ate food that was new to his grandfather and wore leather clothes. They had horses and they had gold. It might have been a party in Panamint Valley, or even early explorers or early settlers in Owens Valley. How about that?'

"Jack said, 'Yeah. The Spaniards was in here, too. So it might have been Spaniards or the early Greeks. And, where is this tunnel? And why did Tom's grandfather have trouble speaking the language? This is an entirely different story than the one Buck told. We are arriving at no place at all with these Indians and Greeks... To return for a moment to our discussion of geology, professor; have you been in Nevada much?'"

From here the conversation took off in an entirely new direction...

Some years ago a woman by the name of Joan Howard, at the time living in eastern Canada although originally from Britain, wrote a manuscript in which she described her own paranormal experiences with small "alien" entities. Joan had experienced several UFO-type 'abduction-encounters' while at a very young age when she still lived in Britain, and claimed to have had 'psychic' contact with beings that claimed to be of extraterrestrial origin. These experiences were accompanied by a great deal of occult manifestations such as poltergeist phenomena, psychic dreams, encounters with invisible entities, etc. Joan even admitted that she often doubted the claims of these 'beings', that their actions were manipulative and just didn't seem to coincide with their claims that they were here as some kind of group of cosmic saviors to lead humanity into a New Age of enlightenment. She also warned other researchers to retain a "keen, analytical mind" when dealing with alien entities so as not to fall under possible deception or manipulation. Perhaps, as she suggested to others, they might actually be here to prepare for a future invasion of this planet and were merely using her for various purposes to help prepare the way, and that all of their 'benevolence' talk was just that... talk! She DID describe vivid "dreams" in which she saw alien craft hovering over major cities blasting frightened and terrified people in the streets with powerful beam weapons, dreams which she suggested might be somewhat prophetic in nature. She described the entities as being small or dwarfish, yet was unsure whether they were human or not, although they DID attempt to pass themselves off as some type of evolved human species, something which the 'grays' have apparently done in order to break down any natural enmity which might prevent their 'contactees' or 'abductees' from receiving the lies which they intentionally fed them as part of their program of conquest and control.

Joan Howard, incidentally, wrote a privately published book, titled "**THE SPACE - OR SOMETHING - CONNECTION**". We refer to it here because it dealt with some experiences which she, or rather her husband, had shortly after she came to America. In fact she devoted an entire chapter to her husband's account, which involved some incidents that took place while he was doing some field work for a certain company, which required a great deal of activity in the out-of-doors. During his employment with this company, 'they' (he and his co-workers) had to travel through some relatively unpopulated terrain in West Virginia, particularly in the regions between Newville in Braxton county, and Helvetia in Randolph county, or rather the general region in and around the northern part of Webster county.

During their travels through the forests and wilderness, and the rolling hills-mountains of West Virginia, he had encountered some very strange things, and heard accounts of strange cave-related incidents from the locals. At one point, he claimed, their group ran across what appeared to be a pipe sticking up from the ground far from the nearest town. There was no other sign of civilization or anything manmade for miles on either side, yet here was this large pipe or tube sticking straight up from the ground. But the most remarkable thing was that a flame was shooting out of the pipe as if it were burning some type of gas. They never found out just what it was. Also, in this same general area, they explored caverns which contained some very strange things. One of the caverns had strange hieroglyphic-like writing on its walls, and others claimed that they heard what sounded like faint voices and sounds like machines moving underground coming as if from beyond the walls of the caverns, or from their unexplored depths. Two men, he claimed, bedded down one night in front of a certain cave which contained a very deep, unexplored chasm some ways inside. The next morning one of the men woke up and found that his partner had disappeared, and no trace was ever found of him. This particular cave by the way had been known as a place of unusual happenings and a place to stay away from. Some even went so far as to call it 'Satan's Lair'. Whatever the case may be, it may provide an answer to the man's disappearance. One of the most remarkable accounts that Joan's husband heard involved a man who claimed that, while exploring the labyrinthine depths of a particular cavern in the area, he had suddenly come face to face with a woman. She was attractive yet completely void of hair (such as someone who might have been subjected to radiation poisoning?). The woman, who spoke a language completely foreign to the man, tried for some time to communicate. After they found that they were not getting anywhere, they departed and went their separate ways.

According to an item which appeared in THE LEADING EDGE Magazine, a well-known Los Angeles talk show host by the name of Ken Hudnell announced over the air on November 3rd, 1989, his intention to take a group to visit one of the ancient underground cities, which he says has an entrance 60 miles from Anaheim, California.

In 1962, a researcher by the name of Chuck Edwards released some of his own discoveries concerning the 'Western Subsurface Drainage Network' which seems to cover parts of Utah, Nevada, and Southern California, where are located many drainage systems which do not ultimately flow into the Pacific ocean (via surface rivers, that is), but instead made their way underground into a vast subterranean drainage system. His letter appeared in issue A-8 of 'THE HIDDEN WORLD', one of the few specialized publications which grew out of the Palmer-Shaver controversy of the late 1940's. We quote Mr. Edwards' comments here in part (Note; These comments are addressed in a letter to Richard S. Shaver):

"This letter is in reply to your January 31 letter. Please forgive me for not answering sooner. Enclosed is some material I hope that you can glean something of value (from). Please be as candid as you have been in the past and if I am far off base don't hesitate to tell me...

"Our foundation has located a vast system of underground passages in the Mother Lode country of California. They were first discovered in 1936, ignored by all even with our

best efforts to reveal them. Recently a road crew blasted out an opening verifying our claims. ONE (of the chambers is) 200 feet long, 70 feet wide and 50 feet high. We have disclosed what we believe to be a vast subterranean drainage system (probably traversing the Great American Desert country for a distance of more than 600 miles). We believe this system extends out like five fingers of your hand to such landmarks as Zion Canyon in Utah, the Grand Canyon, another runs south from the Carson Sink in Nevada and yet another follows (below) the western slope of the same range, joining it's counterpart and ending somewhere in the Mojave Desert. We believe, contrary to orthodox geologists, that the existence of this underground system drains all surface waters running into Nevada (none, with the exception of the Armagosa runs out) and accounts for the fact that it is a Great American Desert. The hairy creatures that you have written about have been seen in several of these areas. Certainly there has been much 'saucer' activity in these parts. For two years I have collected material pertinent to these creatures and if you have any opinions along these lines I would appreciate hearing them.

"So much for now. I hope that I am still your friend. Much of my time has been devoted (to) helping a farmer near Portland who has made a fantastic discovery of incredible stone artifacts. He has several tons of them. They predate anything yet found (or accepted) let us say that for now. We are making slow but steady progress in getting through the wall of orthodoxy. - Chuck Edwards."

Still another possible area in the Mojave Desert region which may connect to this subsurface network involved '**Iron Mountain**', one of the peaks in the El Paso Mountains northeast of Mojave, California. There are many bizarre accounts connected with this mountain, which apparently got it's name in part from the many old mines which can be found there, along with numerous natural cavities which open out to the surface in many different areas. The area has allegedly been the site of certain activity concerning native American Indian occult practices, as well as the site of alleged secret government activity, some of which reportedly involves the observation and monitoring of strange creatures and/or automatons which are said to emerge from the area on certain occasions. Just exactly what these 'creatures' are is uncertain, but some accounts indicate that they are dangerous! Could it also be a 'magnetic' zone due to the high iron content?

Following the Sierra Nevada range from here into the northern territories, one arrives at the Cascade Range, consisting mostly of dormant or extinct volcanic mountains which rise at intervals through northern California, Oregon and Washington and into southwestern Canada.

The Cascade Range is not without it's own peculiar accounts of subterranean recesses occupied by unknown beings, both human and non-human, who apparently re-discovered what apparently are parts of ancient antediluvian subsurface networks, which were at one time inhabited by a race of highly technological (though extremely violent and warlike) beings, perhaps both human AND reptilian!? There are many unanswered questions as to just how the subsurface world was used, or exactly what part it played, in relation to these ancient subterranean races, but the following account may explain some of these mysteries and help us to see the entire 'picture' more clearly.

Some years ago a man by the name of Ralph B. Fields submitted the following account to AMAZING STORIES Magazine (Dec. 1946 issue, pp. 155-157), with the assurance that it was true and actually happened. However, we must be cautious of every tale of this type which might be presented yet at the same time not deny the possibility of it happening as well. We will leave the reader to draw their own conclusions concerning the account, which we quote as follows:

"In beginning this narrative and the unexplained events that befell my friend and myself, I offer no explanation, nor do I even profess to offer any reason. In fact, I have yet to find a clue that will, even in part, offer any explanation whatever. Yet as it did happen, there must be some rhyme or reason to the whole thing. It may be that someone can offer some helpful information to a problem that just should not exist in these times of enlightenment.

"To begin with, if we had not been reading an article in a magazine telling us about the great value of guano (i.e. bat droppings in old caves, which are said to be extremely effective as a fertilizer - Branton) that have accumulated over a great number of years, we would have continued to wend our merry way through life without ever having a thing to worry about.

"But having read the article as we were at the time living near a small town called Manten in Tehama County, California, we thought that that would be a good country to explore for a possible find to this kind. After talking it over for some time and as we had plenty of time just then, we decided to take a little trip up the country just back of us. As we were almost at the foot of Mount Lassen, that seemed the best place to conduct our little prospecting tour.

"So collecting a light camping outfit, together with a couple of tents to sleep in, we started out on what we expected to be a three- or four-day jaunt up the mountain.

"I guess we covered about ten or twelve miles on the third day and it was fast approaching time to begin to look for a place to spend the night and the thought was not very amusing as it had turned a little colder and we were well over 7,000 feet above sea level.

"We soon found a sheltered place beneath a large outcrop of rock and set about making a camp. As I was always the cook and Joe the chore boy, I began getting things ready to fix us some grub and Joe began digging around for some dead scrub brush to burn. I had things all ready and looked around for Joe and his firewood. But I could see no signs of him. I began calling for him and he soon came into sight from around the very rock where we were making our camp. And I knew he was laboring under some great excitement and his face was lit up like a Christmas tree.

"He had found a cave. The entrance was on the other side of that very rock. He was all for exploration right away. But I argued that we had better wait till morning. But he argued that in a cave it was always night and we would have to use flashlights anyway, so what would be the difference? Well, we finally decided that we would give it at least a once-over after we had a bite to eat.

"It wasn't much to call a cave at first as it had a very small entrance, but back about 20 feet it widened out to about 10 feet wide and around eight feet high. And it did reach back a considerable distance as we would see at least 100 yards and it appeared to bend off to the left. The floor sloped slightly down.

"We followed to the bend and again we could see a long way ahead and down.

"At this point we became a little afraid as we were some way into the mountain. The idea of being inside so far seemed to make us a little afraid. But we reasoned that inasmuch as there were no branches or connecting caves we could not get lost and therefore had nothing to be afraid of. So we went on.

"We found no sign of anything that we could imagine to be our much sought guano nor signs of any animals being inside the cave.

"I don't know how far we went, but it must have been a mile or two, as we kept on walking and the cave never changed its contour or size. Noticing this I mentioned it to Joe. And we discovered an amazing thing. The floor seemed to be worn smooth as though it had been used for a long time as a path or road. The walls and ceiling of the cave seemed to be cut like a tunnel. It was solid rock and we knew that no one would cut a tunnel there out of rock as there had been no sign of mining operations (tailings). And the rock in the walls and ceiling was run together like it had been melted. Or fused from a great heat.

"While we were busy examining the cave in general, Joe swore he saw a light way down in the cave. We started down the cave once more and found a light. Or should I say the light found us as it was suddenly flashed into our faces. We stood there blinded by it for a minute until I flashed my light at its source and saw we were confronted by three men.

"These men looked to be about 50 or a little younger. They were dressed in ordinary clothing such as is worn by most working men in the locality. Levi type pants and flannel shirts and wool coats. They wore no hats. But THEIR SHOES LOOKED STRANGE AS THEIR SOLES WERE SO THICK that they gave the impression of being made of wood. (John Keel's book 'THE MOTHMAN PROPHECIES' describes men who were seen wearing THICK-SOLED shoes in connection to MIB reports - Branton)

"We just stood there for a minute or two and looked at them. We had no idea there was anybody within miles of us and there stood three men looking at us in a cave a mile or so in the depths of old Mount Lassen.

"I was scared. We were unarmed. And we knew nothing about these men. One of them spoke to us. He asked what we were looking for. I told him, but I could see he didn't believe it. We both tried to convince him, but he just smiled. We had a little argument with him, but fearing they might be some criminal gang in hiding, we came to the conclusion that we had better retreat. Turning to go we were confronted by two more of them.

"I can't find any words to express the fear and utter helplessness I felt in finding our retreat cut off. I do remember having remarked to Joe, 'Well, it looks like we are behind

the well-known eight-ball.' I sure didn't feel as jovial as I spoke either. One of the strangers told us, 'I think maybe you had better come with us.'

"We were in no position to argue, though we both would have liked to do a little of that right there, but we had no way of enforcing our arguments. Where could a hero gain any credit in a place like that? So we permitted the five to escort us deeper into the depths of old Lassen.

"They had led us farther down and I guess we had gone a couple more miles when we came to the first thing that really amazed us.

"We came to a place where the cavern widened out a little and we saw some kind of machine, if it can be called that. Though I had no chance to examine it closely at the time, I did later and it was a very strange contrivance. It had a very flat bottom, but the front was curved upward something like a toboggan. The bottom plate was about eight inches thick and it was the color of pure copper. But it was very hard tempered. Although I have had a lot of experience in metals and alloys, I had no opportunity to examine it closely enough to determine just what it was. I doubt very much if I could. It had a seat in the front directly behind a heavy dashboard affair and **there was a dial shaped in a semi-circle with figures or markings on it.** I had not the slightest idea what they stood for, but they were very simple to remember. *If there was a motor, it was in the rear. All I could see was two horseshoe or magnet-shaped objects that faced each other with the round parts to the outside. When this thing was in operation, a brilliant green arc seemed to leap between the two and to continue to glow as it was in operation. The only sound it gave off was a hum or buzz that sounded like a battery charger in operation.*

"The seat in the front was very wide. The only method of operation was a black tear-shaped object which hung from the panel by a chain. One of these men sitting in the middle took this thing and touched the sharp end to the first figure on the left side of the dial.

"When he touched the first figure, the contraption seemed to move almost out from under us. But it was the smoothest and quietest take-off I ever experienced. We seemed to float. Not the slightest sound or vibration. And after we had traveled for a minute he touched the next figure on the dial and our speed increased at an alarming rate. But when he had advanced the black object over past the center of the dial, our speed increased until I could hardly breathe. I can't begin to estimate the distance we had traveled or our speed, but it was terrific. The two horseshoe objects in the rear created a green light that somehow shone far ahead of us, lighting up the cavern for a long way. I soon noticed a black line running down the center of the cavern and our inner-mountain taxi seemed to follow that.

"I don't know how long we continued our mad ride, but it was long enough for us to become used to the terrific speed and we had just about overcome our fear of some kind of wreck when we were thrown into another spasm of fear.

*"Another machine of the same type was approaching us head on. I could see that our captors were very nervous, but our speed continued. As the other machine became closer*

*our speed slowed down very fast and we came to a smooth stop about two feet from the front of the other machine.*

*"Our machine had no sooner stopped than our captors leaped from the machine and started to dash away. A fine blue light leaped from the other machine in a fine pencil beam and it's sweep caught them and they fell to the cavern and lay still.*

*"The figures dismounted from the other machine and came close to us. Then I noticed they carried a strange object in their hands. It resembled a fountain pen flashlight with a large, round, bulb-like affair on the back end and a grip something like a German luger. They pointed them at us.*

"After seeing what had happened to our erstwhile captors I thought that our turn was next, whatever it was. But one spoke to us.

"Are you surface people?"

"I guess we are, as this is where we came from very recently."

"Where did the horlocks find you?"

"If you mean those guys there," I pointed to the five motionless figures, "back there a few hundred miles." I pointed toward the way we had come in our wild ride.

"You are very fortunate that we came this way," he told us. "You would have also become horlocks and then we would have had to kill you also." That was the first time I had realized that the others were dead.

"They put their strange weapons away and seemed friendly enough, so I ventured to ask them the who and why and everything we had run into. I told them of our search for guano and how we had encountered the five horlocks - as he called them. And also asked him about the machines and their operation and could we get out again? He smiled and told us.

"I could not tell you too much as you would not understand. There are so many things to explain and you could not grasp enough of what I could myself tell you. **The people on the surface are not ready to have the things that the ancients have left.** Neither I nor any one in any of the caverns know why these things work, but we do know how to operate some of them. However, there are a great many evil people here who create many unpleasant things for both us and the surface people. They are safe because no one on the surface believes us or them. That is why I am telling you this. No one would believe that we exist. We would not care, but there are many things here that the outer world must not have until they are ready to receive them, as they would completely destroy themselves, so we must be sure that they do not find them. As for the machine, I don't know how it works. But I know some of the principles of it. It works simply by gravity. And it is capable of reverse. The bottom plate of it always is raised about four inches from the surface of the floor. That is why there is no friction and has such a smooth operation. **This object suspended from this chain is pure carbon.** It is the key to the entire operation. As I told you before, I cannot explain why it runs, but it does. We want you

two to return to where you came and forget about us. We will show you how to operate the sled and we want you never again to enter the cave. If you do and you do not encounter the horlocks, we will have to do something about you ourselves so it would not be advisable to try to return at all events. One thing I can tell you. We never could permit you to leave another time.'

"He explained to us the operation of the machine and in some way reversed it's direction. So thanking them, we seated ourselves in the sled, as he had called it, and were soon on our way back.

"Our return trip was really something we enjoyed, as I was sure not to advance the carbon far enough on the dial to give us such terrific speed, but we soon found ourselves where we started from. The sled slid to a smooth stop and we jumped out and started up the cave afoot.

"We must have walked a long way coming in, for we thought we never would come to the surface. But at last we did. And it was late afternoon when we emerged.

"We lost no time in making our way down the mountain, and Joe tells me that he isn't even curious about what is in that cave.

"But I am. What is the answer to the whole thing? I would like to know. We had been told enough for me to believe that down there somewhere there are things that might baffle the greatest minds of this Earth. Sometimes I'm tempted to go back into that cave if I could find it again, which I doubt, but, then I know the warning I heard in there might be too true, so I guess I had better be of the same mind as Joe. He says:

"'What we don't know don't hurt us.'"

Regardless of "Joe's" opinion, however, there is reason to believe that influences from these nether regions can and do affect "us" in a profound way, and even the men whom Ralph and Joe encountered, whoever they were, admitted this fact.

Is there anything else which we might be able to "read into" this scenario, based on the accumulated data which we've given in previous files? The men who were encountered do confirm that an ancient (ante-diluvium?) race did in fact leave behind extremely sophisticated technology, and it is probably true that man in his largely unregenerate state might be influenced to destroy themselves with these sophisticated machinery if given the chance. Then again the so-called Horlocks (perhaps the same as the 'cybernized', mind-altered and controlled "Men In Black" described by John Keel and others!?) have seemingly utilized such technology without utterly destroying themselves. This could be due to the fact that their 'controllers' (the serpent races?) realize the dangers of such technology and desire to conquer without destroying that which they are conquering. Also, man already has enough 'technology' in the form of nuclear weaponry, etc., to destroy himself many times over, but no use adding fuel to the fire as they say. As for these underground or subsurface people, they are apparently part of a race or races who discovered these recesses either hundreds or thousands of years ago, or perhaps different groups who discovered this network throughout this entire period of time. The 'horlocks' seem to be a group working under an evil influence, for instance--as we've said--possibly

that of the serpent race, since there have been documented CONNECTIONS uncovered between the MIB and the Serpent Race as we have seen and will continue to see. The previous account tends to indicate that once one becomes a 'horlock' (via some mind-altering method of control, re-programming or implantation-cyberization!?) they become a threat to both surface and subsurface dwellers who are trying to live an existence free from conflict. We would suggest that NO ONE who still possesses a human soul is completely out of the reach of God's power to deliver them from any evil influence UNTIL they have left this life, at which point it WILL be too late. There have been some who have suggested that a human body could, through advanced techromancy or technological-necromantic manipulation, be "killed", its "soul-matrix" removed, and revived as an operating organism controlled by another non-physical entity or a bio-computer. As strange as it may sound, this would be a hi-tech version of the ancient 'zombie' legends which supposedly involve the possession of a human being by a demonic entity after that person has 'died', or the hypnotizing of a living soul via drugs, etc., into a perpetual catatonic state of control and servitude to a sorcerer, etc. Could this explain why some of the so-called 'Men In Black' appear to be more mechanical than human, spouting off monotone phrases like a programmed computer? We would suggest however that such horrible perversions of nature, if they in fact exist, would not include ALL of the entities who might be classified under the term 'MIB' or Men In Black, who have been described as being anything from government silencers to alien humans to implanted humans to cybernized humans to androids to reptilian-like beings attempting to pass themselves off as humans. Perhaps this whole gamut of 'alien' entities just mentioned are involved together in the draconian control scenario!?

We would suggest that if a "human" or even a "human-hybrid" or hu-brid still retains some semblance of a human soul, there must be a way of breaking the mental "control" of over such a soul that may be captive to a malevolent power, if that soul is willing, rather than by killing them in order to subdue their influence. The Ralph Fields account referred to SEVERAL inhabited caverns, obviously connected with this underground subway system. Also, the fact that the 'horlocks' wore surface clothing would indicate that they probably operate jointly below and above ground, mixing with the inhabitants of the upper world as Keel and others have alleged.

Others have described strange activities surrounding Mt. Lassen, suggesting that this area IS in fact a "battleground" between benevolent and malevolent powers. Some have stated that there is an "alien" atmosphere about the place, others have described strange "voices" which seem to come from nowhere, while still others have described "showers" or rocks ranging in size from small pea-like pebbles to basketball-size stones in a few cases. This 'might' result from volcanic activity, then again, it might not.

There have even been other accounts suggesting that there is a "base" near Mt. Lassen consisting of "joint" human-sauroid activity, or humans under the control of the serpent race and thus serving their cause. The following account which we will describe shortly was released by Val Valerian in June of 1992, and appeared in 'LEADING EDGE' magazine. The account describes human-sized reptilians (who might, with some alterations, be able to pass themselves off as humans?) or reptoids that are apparently extremely dangerous and threatening. In fact, there are other accounts that suggest that

the human-sized, and larger, sauroids absolutely despise humanity and unlike the saurian Grays have been seen to express anger, hatred, impudence and an almost demonic contempt for the human race. Although the Grays' "enmity" against the human race is on the other extreme from that of the Reptoids', and consists of emotionless insensitivity and indifference to human life or suffering, it can be just as destructive to humankind as is the raging, murderous hatred of the larger 'reptoid' predators. This is why the saurian grays can dip their arms in a tank full of dismembered human corpses being dissolved into hydrogen peroxide for their protein and enzyme content, and rub this substance over their bodies without the slightest twinge of conscience. As we've said, indifference can be just as destructive as hatred. So one should not consider the Grays any better than the Reptoids simply because the Grays are far more intellectually oriented and more emotionless than the larger sauroids. Nevertheless, since the reptilian hierarchy operates on fear, competition, selfishness, ego and absolute control (and is a perfect example of how the demonic or "infernal" hierarchy itself operates), there will nevertheless be accounts such as the following one which indicate that the lower levels of the reptilian hierarchy are fearful of the higher ups. This is no doubt due to the fact that execution is sometimes used to make examples, or other forms of punishment is used in order to keep the lower levels "in line". And since the soulless reptilians have gained "self realization" and are aware that death means complete oblivion to them, such fear of the upper hierarchy would no doubt be explainable. The hu-brids (human-hybrids possessing a human soul as opposed to the re-brids or reptilian-hybrids possessing no soul-matrix) would be another story. There is much evidence that these beings who are bred for slavery from birth are themselves being kept in subjection through fear and intimidation and possibly even the threat of death. There is also evidence that "they" are inwardly in opposition to the indifferent Grays and the malevolent Reptoids.

Val Valerian introduces the woman who experienced the encounters that she had with the "aliens" near Mt. Lassen, in the following words:

"The case of this San Francisco woman is highly illustrative of the abduction situation... This kind lady came to me recently for assistance and is in the process of receiving it. Her case is detailed below in the hope that it will contribute toward additional research in this area. Her name is understandably withheld to maintain confidentiality."

We will quote only portions of this lengthy account of a possible encounter with 'horlocks'(!?) under Reptilian control:

"...I described an experience I had remembered in reoccurring flashbacks WHICH TOOK PLACE IN THE WOODS SOMEWHERE NEAR MT. LASSEN, CALIFORNIA. I believe the year was 1969 or 1970. What happened there had a profound effect on my life, in a VERY NEGATIVE way.

"...I am a 31 year old woman living in the city of San Francisco. For the past 2 years I have been living in a nightmare of sleepless nights, hellish dreams, strange dreams in which the information 'given' in the dream 'comes true', what I can only describe as ominous coincidences and manifestations of a paranormal nature, unusual sensations during sleep (when I do sleep)... and to top it off, a slow but steady flow of bizarre

memories in the form of intense flashbacks and nightmares (which reoccur constantly) of events going all the way back to my early childhood.

"I can mark the beginning of all this 'trouble' to a Saturday evening in July of 1988 when, while at work, I witnessed a luminous ball of light make a dramatic entrance and exit, stopping long enough to 'visit' with us (I had five witnesses in the room with me).

"From... October of 1990 right up through last weekend before I heard you speak I had been living with a kaleidoscope of images and memories of bizarre encounters and topsy-turvy like interactions with apparently non-human beings, none of which made any sense to me.

"While you were speaking it felt as if little bells were going off in my head. I could hardly believe that you were describing certain things that I thought (and hoped) only existed in my mind! I have spent the last 2 years of my life trying to convince my therapist that little grey creatures had repeatedly visited me as a child and on at least one occasion, while I was staying at a cabin in the woods with my parents, they brought me to their 'ship' where other (different looking) beings along with human beings (earth people) did all kinds of crazy things including what I refer to; for lack of a better explanation, as 'splitting my mind'. The closest description I could give to explain the above stated term would be that I experienced something akin to induced psychosis (Note: This may be similar to what some 'abductees' or 'contactees' have referred to. It is a well known phenomena that when one undergoes heavy trauma their minds may create an 'alternate personality' as a safeguard. The theory behind this is that the human brain is not so much divided into separate 'compartments' as it is divided into separate individual 'brains'. One of these 'backup' minds seems to take over in those suffering from multiple personality syndrome. This "splitting of the mind" might conceivably be accomplished through a type of technosis. Some UFO and Inner Earth "abductees" claim that when they are in the "other" realm another "consciousness" other than their waking consciousness takes over. It has been referred to as their unconscious, subconscious, dream-conscious, and so on. The ideas and motives of the waking and "other" consciousness may be different, for instance the "aliens", be they sauroid or human may have convinced one "personality" to cooperate with them whereas the waking conscious might not, and in fact the waking consciousness might even have no memory of events which had taken place while in the "other" consciousness, other than faint dream-like impressions. This is also evidenced by the fact that those suffering from multiple personality syndrome might do certain things or not do certain things depending on which trance-induced "consciousness" is dominant - Branton) This event occurred when I was eight, possibly nine years old. While I have yet to undergo hypnosis, I have many memories which are very fragmented and blocked. Although the above mentioned experience is perhaps the most traumatic, a lot of vivid images and details are somewhat clear. I have a distinct memory of being made to lay on a table and having what I thought was a three-pronged fork stuck in my lower back (right next to my spine) and a smaller one stuck in the back of my (she skips a word here, intentionally or unintentionally - Branton) directly vertical to the one in my back. I have the scars (both of triangular shaped patterns) to match the memory. I remember looking up at different colored lights that kept changing and feeling ok one minute and screaming in agony the next. I remember someone talking to me but I could not see them. I'm not

sure how much of this is in sequence as I have not remembered it that way. I remember screaming because I really thought (and felt) like I was falling through a crack in the Earth, then some people came in and told me that I could stop screaming because it wasn't happening anymore. I remember awkward things, like a door opening when it wasn't supposed to and seeing human beings on the other side and someone saying 's--t!' or something close to that word. I remember a bunch of beings in some kind of outfits and because I'm screaming so loudly one of them takes off this 'head- piece' (like some kind of fire personnel wear) and I stop screaming because I see that it is a woman, but then I hear a man's voice yelling at her and making her put it back on her head. I remember a lot of screaming, but it did not do much good. At one point, after I had been on the table for awhile with the 'forks' plugged into my back (I also remember this voice I couldn't see saying the same things over and over and over again and I remember repeating it back to him--most of which I cannot remember) the one I call the 'head doctor' came in to check on me (I was very sick, maybe even drugged) and he now had on a shiny dark blue overalls with an insignia above his chest (the insignia consisted of an outline of a man or a being with a line down through the middle of it, and the left half of the figure was black or dark while the right side was light - Branton). I remember a whole set of separate interactions with the 'aliens'; of 'playing' with a strange looking one I thought was a child (a so-called 'hybrid'? - Branton), of being shown a dead squirrel and being asked to touch it, of being given 'information' while looking into the eyes of one of the greys (this information, what I can remember, appears to involve future events in my own life and also in the world including what appears to be some sort of global disaster). I also remember one of the greys asking something from me and I agreed to it -- whatever it is, I cannot remember. I REMEMBER MEETING A GREY WITH ORANGE-RED EYES THAT HAD SLITS DOWN THE MIDDLE... and all the other greys were afraid of this one. Perhaps the most disturbing thing I remember is of a group of three or so beings with long blue capes and faces I cannot remember, coming in twice to stick a 'pea up my nose'. When I had this particular flashback several months ago I swear to you I physically re-experienced what that felt like!

"...I believe I may have one of those implants that you spoke about at your workshop. I have checked on the roof of my mouth and did see what looks like needle marks as you suggested during your talk. I have experienced some strange things going on with my body lately and I find myself feeling compelled to do certain things--especially like going to certain locations; most recently all the way to Arizona! I do not wish to continue living like I have been for the past four years (Note: she also explained that the controllers motivated her into studying "Zen Buddhism" at the age of 12, and at age 20 she had come to the point of advanced Zen meditation. Could this be an attempt on the part of the controllers to put her into a semi-tranced state in which she could via the implant be all-the-easier influenced mentally? Many occult lodges attempt to get the "initiate" to surrender to certain spiritual entities by teaching them a form of "meditation" which involves "blanking out" the mind. As they say, nature hates a vacuum, and if a human surrenders control of their own mind and thoughts, some "thing" else will take control - Branton)

"...I have called all over the country and found support groups, but none in my area. I even asked Mr. Budd Hopkins if he would see me, but he became rather unenthusiastic

when I insisted there were human beings in my memories (he does not believe there are humans involved/working with 'aliens'). He promised to put me in touch with 'his people' working in San Francisco, but as of yet... I have not heard from him.

"I don't mean to complain, but I guess I just wanted to convey my level of frustration.

"...You mentioned in your talk a woman researcher in Hawaii (you did not say her name) who claims to have had success in locating and deactivating these various implants. You mentioned she had some kind of instrument available that could detect these things. I would greatly appreciate it if you could tell me how to get in touch with her. If you could send me her name and address or phone number or the name and address of anybody you think might be able to help me at any level. If you know anyone in my area who works with people like me... I would also appreciate their name(s). You mentioned that in England they have extracted some implants, do you know who and where? I feel as though I've been brainwashed and need to be 'de-programmed' but I can't seem to convince anybody that any of this really happened....well I did convince one person, unfortunately he's an optometrist. I guess I find that to be really funny, but I'm not sure why.

"I am willing to go anywhere inside or outside of the country. I do not have alot of money, but I do have some resources available to me..."

Unfortunately, this woman is not the only one in this desperate situation. Who out there has the compassion and the means to help these poor people? If your out there, we ENCOURAGE you to use your talents to help these victims and, if possible, aid them in removing the mind-manipulating implants which have been used by the 'aliens' as thought-control mechanisms used, no doubt, as part of their overall strategy of manipulation, subversion and infiltration of the human race.

At this point we will return to the main theme of this File, the relatively 'benevolent' human societies living and operating within the interior realms below the surface of the earth.

Below central Asia there is said to exist one of the largest and most ancient human subterranean societies in the world. All in all, this society which has been referred to by many as 'Agharta' or 'Agharti' consists of humans, most of whom have no real enmity towards those on the surface, other than 'their' desire to protect their world from intrusion from undesirables. Although, as in most other civilizations in the world, small groups of 'renegades' may exist among them who may be tied into the MIB-Reptilian scenario; but for the most part the inhabitants of this realm are believed to be relatively friendly. In fact, according to one source this civilization was founded upon conflict with the serpent race or 'Lizard' beings, who were allegedly driven from those particular caverns when the ancestors of the present Aghartians or SOME of the present inhabitants of Agharti encountered them. This ancient 'war' was believed to have taken place after their ancestors, who at one time lived on the surface, first discovered this ancient underground realm and the malevolent influences of the serpent races which had for ages been manipulating the minds of people on the surface via 'witchcraft.' Also, many of the cavern civilizations in the western hemisphere are believed to be allied with the

Aghartians, the Telosians of Mt. Shasta being included as one of the North American sub-colonies allegedly tied in with the Agharti network.

Perhaps the most complete descriptions of this underground realm come from the two travelers Ferdinand Ossendowski and Nicholas Roerich. To begin, we will quote from Ossendowski's writings as they appear in his book **'BEASTS, MEN AND GODS'** (1922. E.P. Dutton & Co., N.Y.). Quoting from the chapter 'THE SUBTERRANEAN KINGDOM' (pp. 300-311) we read:

"...On my journey into Central Asia I came to know for the first time about the 'Mystery of Mysteries,' which I can call by no other name. At the outset I did not pay much attention to it and did not attach to it such importance as I afterwards realized belonged to it, when I had analyzed and connected many sporadic, hazy and often controversial bits of evidence.

"The old people on the shore of the river Amyl related to me an ancient legend to the effect that a certain Mongolian tribe in their escape from the demands of Genghis Khan hid themselves in a subterranean country. Afterwards a Soyot from near the Lake of Nogan Kul showed me the smoking gate that serves as the entrance to the 'Kingdom of Agharti.' Through this gate a hunter formerly entered into the Kingdom and, after his return, began to relate what he had seen there. The Lamas cut out his tongue in order to prevent him from telling about the Mystery of Mysteries. When he arrived at old age, he came back to the entrance of this cave and disappeared into the subterranean kingdom, the memory of which had ornamented and lightened his nomad heart.

"...The favorite Gelong Lama of Prince Chultun Beyli and the Prince himself gave me an account of the subterranean kingdom.

"Everything in the world,' said the Gelong, 'is constantly in a state of change and transition--peoples, science, religions, laws and customs. How many great empires and brilliant cultures have perished! And that alone which remains unchanged is Evil, the tool of Bad Spirits. More than 60,000 years ago a holy man disappeared with a whole tribe of people under the ground and never appeared again on the surface of the earth. Many people, however, have since visited this kingdom, Sakkia Mouni, Undur Gheghen, Paspas, Khan Baber and others. No one knows where this place is. One says Afghanistan, others India. All the people there are protected against Evil and crimes to not exist within its bounds. Science has there developed calmly and nothing is threatened with destruction. The subterranean people have reached the highest knowledge..." (Note: The 60,000 year period is probably greatly exaggerated. According to an American "monk" by the name of Ernest Dickhoff, as described in his book 'AGHARTA', the human habitation of this realm was initiated no more than a few thousand years ago, after the deluge, when an Asian Prince entered with an army of humans and fought with the Reptilians who had taken possession of these caverns. Much activity and growth may have nonetheless taken place within such an uncontested civilization within the few thousand years since, according to Dickhoff, it's human habitation. According to one source, over 20,000,000 persons now reside in Agharti, and many more on the surface accept it's existence. It is said that an ancient "library" exists between the surface and Agharti, in underground

vaults to which certain Asian 'initiates' have access. Below or beyond these vaults, the kingdom itself is said to exist. - Branton)

"Prince Chultun Beyli added: 'This kingdom is Agharti. It extends throughout all the subterranean passages of the whole world. I heard a learned Lama of China relating to Bogdo Khan that all the subterranean caves of America are inhabited by the ancient people who have disappeared underground. Traces of them are still found on the surface of the land. These subterranean peoples and spaces are governed by rulers owing allegiance to the King of the World...'" (Note: If the subterranea of America was once MOSTLY inhabited by humans who migrated there from the surface or other parts of the inner world, then the fact of the MODERN DAY infiltration of the saurian or serpent races into the underground of America must suggest that the major infestation occurred sometime within the last two or three centuries. The so-named 'King of the World' is apparently a reference to the present leader of the council of Agharti, which would probably make whoever held such a position the most influential man in the world, for good or evil. And in fact, according to former Dulce Base security worker 'Thomas C.', certain of the U.S. Presidents in the past have held conferences with these kings of Agharti. A succession of many such 'kings' have allegedly reigned over this underground realm, most of them probably receiving more adoration than they deserve and have apparently been regarded as 'gods' by some of the residents of the subterranean world. This would not necessarily be the fault of these 'kings', many of whom according to sources HAVE acknowledged a higher potentate than themselves and allegedly even pray to Almighty 'God' on behalf of humanity. Just like the Popes of Rome or rulers and presidents of the surface nations, these Agharian 'kings' possessed their own personalities, some being perhaps more suited to reign than others, but nevertheless should be respected as the elected(?) representatives of perhaps tens of millions of persons who dwell within the inner world. The name of one such king, according to one source, was 'Rigdon Jyepo'. Names of other Agharian rulers are unknown except, perhaps, to the inhabitants of Agharti itself. - Branton)

Prince Chultun, speaking to the author, continued: "...In underground caves there exists a peculiar light which affords growth to the grains and vegetables and long life without disease to the people. There are many different peoples and many different tribes. An old Buddhist Brahman in Nepal was carrying out the will of the 'gods' in making a visit to the ancient kingdom of Genghis,--Siam,--where he met a fisherman who ordered him to take a place in his boat and sail with him upon the sea. On the third day they reached an island where he met a people having two tongues which could speak separately in different languages. They showed to him peculiar, unfamiliar animals, tortoises with sixteen feet and one eye, huge snakes with a very tasty flesh and birds with teeth which caught fish for their masters in the sea. These people told him that they had come up out of the subterranean kingdom and described to him certain parts of the underground country.'

"The Lama Turgut traveling with me from Urga to Peking gave me further details.

"The capital of Agharti is surrounded with towns of high priests and scientists. It reminds one of Lhasa where the palace of the Dalai Lama, the Potala, is the top of a mountain covered with monasteries and temples.

"...In cars strange and unknown to us they rush through the narrow cleavages inside our planet. Some Indian Brahmans and Tibetan Dalai Lamas during their laborious struggles to the peaks of mountains which no other human feet had trod have found there inscriptions on the rocks, footprints in the snow and tracks of wheels. The blissful Sakkia Mouni found on one mountain top tablets of stone carrying words which he only understood in his old age and afterwards penetrated into the Kingdom of Agharti, from which he brought back crumbs of the sacred learning preserved in his memory."

Ferdinand remembered a particular conversation with one Lama:

"How many persons have ever been to Agharti?" I questioned him.

"Very many,' answered the Lama, 'but all these people have kept secret that which they saw there. When the Olets destroyed Lhasa, one of their detachments in the southwestern mountains penetrated to the outskirts of Agharti. Here they learned some of the lesser mysterious sciences and brought them to the surface of our earth. This is why the Olets and Kalmucks are artful sorcerers and prophets. Also from the eastern country some tribes of black people penetrated to Agharti and lived there many centuries. Afterwards they were thrust out from the kingdom and returned to the earth, bringing with them the mystery of predictions according to cards, grasses and the lines of the palm. They are the Gypsies... Somewhere in the north of Asia a tribe exists which is now dying and which came from the cave of Agharti, skilled in calling back the (so-called) spirits of the dead as they float through the air."

As is the case of many of the peoples inhabiting the surface of central Asia, some of the underground peoples apparently are prone to practicing certain forms of occultism or spiritism. This might explain why some 'MIB' have been described as 'oriental-appearing' humans who have demonstrated occult powers to those they have contacted. This as we've said, might only consist of a relatively small percentage of the underground inhabitants of the Agharian network, a small percentage which might have (as is the case with almost every other nation) "sold out" to the reptilians in exchange for power over their fellow human beings.

In his book 'SHAMBHALA' (1930. Frederick A. Stokes Co., N.Y.), writer and traveler Nicholas Roerich adds some additional insights into human habitation of underground regions of central Asia. In his chapter 'SUBTERRANEAN DWELLERS' (pp. 210-219) we read the following words:

"Once on our travels we reached a half-ruined village. There was a glimmer of light in only two houses. In a small room, an old man sat cleaning a utensil. He became our host for the night. I asked him the reason for his isolation. He answered, 'Every one has departed. They have found more suitable sites for their dwellings. They were strong and enterprising. Something new attracted them. But I knew that nothing new exists on earth. And I did not wish to change the place of my death.'

"Thus the strongest ones depart. The decaying ones patiently await death. Is this not the story of all migrations, of all enterprises?"

"The subject of the great migrations is the most fascinating in the history of humanity. What spirit was it that thus moved whole nations and innumerable tribes? What cataclysm drove the hordes from their familiar steppes? What new happiness and privileges did they anticipate in the blue mist of the immense desert?

"On rocks in Dardistan we saw ancient drawings. We also saw the same kind of drawings upon the rocks near the Brahmaputra, as well as on the rocks of Orkon in Mongolia, and in the tumuli of Minusinsk in Siberia. And finally we discerned the same creative psychology in the halristningars of Sweden and Norway. And later we stopped in admiration before the mighty signs of the early Romanesque which we found, based on the same creative aspirations of the great migrators.

"In every city, in every encampment of Asia, I tried to discover what memories were being cherished in the folk-memory. Through these guarded and preserved tales you can recognize the reality of the past. In every spark of folk-lore, there is a drop of great Truth adorned or distorted. Not long ago we were too vain to appreciate these treasures of folk-lore. 'What could these illiterate people know!' But afterwards we learned that even the great Rig-Vedas were written down only in the comparatively recent past, and perhaps for many centuries they were passed down by word of mouth. We thought that the flying carpet of fairy-tales belonged only to the children but we soon recognized that although each fantasy, in its own individual way, weaves a beautiful carpet ornamenting life, nevertheless the very carpet bears the footprints of great reality of the past.

**"Among the innumerable legends and fairy tales of various countries may be found the tales of lost tribes and subterranean dwellers.** In wide and diverse directions, people are speaking of the identical facts. But in correlating them you can readily see that these are but chapters from the one story. At first it seems impossible that there should exist any scientific connection between these distorted whispers under the light of the desert bonfires. But afterwards you begin to grasp the peculiar coincidence of these manifold legends related by peoples who are even ignorant of each other's names.

"You recognize the same relationship in the folk-lore of Tibet, Mongolia, China, Turkestan, Kashmir, Persia, Altai, Siberia, the Ural, Caucasia, the Russian steppes, Lithuania, Poland, Hungary, Germany, France; from the highest mountains to the deepest oceans. You will hear wonderfully elaborated tales in the Tourfan district. They tell you how the people, not willing to submit to the cruelty, closed themselves in subterranean mountains. They even ask you if you want to see the entrance to the cave through which the saintly persecuted folk fled.

"In Kuchar you will hear of King Po-chan, ruler of the Tokhars, and how, when the enemy approached, he disappeared with all the treasure of his kingdom, leaving only sand, stones and ruins behind him.

"...Each entrance to a cave suggests that some one has already entered there. Every creek--especially the subterranean creeks--draw one's fantasy to the underground passages. In many places in Central Asia, they speak of the Agharti, the subterranean people. In numerous beautiful legends they outline the same story of how the best people abandoned

the treacherous earth and sought salvation in hidden countries where they acquired new forces and conquered powerful energies.

"In the Altai Mountains, in the beautiful upland valley of Uimon, a hoary Old Believer (Starover) said to me: 'I shall prove to you that the tale about the Chud, the subterranean people, is not a fantasy! I shall lead you to the entrance of the subterranean kingdom.'

"On the way through the valley surrounded by snowy mountains, my host told us many tales about the Chud. It is remarkable that 'Chud' in Russian has the same origin as the word WONDER. So, perhaps, we may consider the Chud a wonderful tribe. My bearded guide told how 'once upon a time, in this fertile valley lived and flourished the powerful tribe of Chud. They knew how to prospect for minerals and how to reap the best harvest. Most peaceful and most industrious, was this tribe. But then came a White Tzar with innumerable hordes of cruel warriors. The peaceful, industrious Chud could not resist the assaults of the conquerors, and not wishing to lose their liberty, they remained as serfs to the White Tzar. Then, for the first time, a white birch began to grow in this region. And, according to old prophecies, the Chud knew that it was the time for their departure. And the Chud, unwilling to remain subject to the White Tzar, departed under the earth. Only sometimes can you hear the holy people singing; now their bells ring out in the subterranean temples. But there shall come the glorious time of human purification, and in those days, the great Chud shall again appear in full glory.'

"Thus the Old Believer concluded. We approached some low stony hill. Proudly he showed me, 'Here we are. Here is the entrance to the great subterranean kingdom! When the Chud entered the subterranean passage they closed the entrance with stones. Now we stand just beside this holy entrance.'

"We stood before a huge tomb encircled by great stones, so typical of the period of the great migrations. Such tombs, with the beautiful remains of Gothic relics, we saw in South Russian steppes, in foothills of the Northern Caucasus. Studying this hill, I remembered how during our crossing of the Karakorum pass, my sais, the Ladaki, asked me, 'Do you know that in the subterranean caves here many treasures are hidden and that in them lives a wonderful tribe which abhors the sins of earth?'

"And again when we approached Khotan the hoofs of our horses sounded hollow as though we rode above caves or hollows. Our caravan people called attention to this, saying, 'Do you hear what hollow subterranean passages we are crossing? Through these passages, people who are familiar with them can reach far-off countries.' When we saw entrances to caves, our caravaners told us, 'Long ago people lived there; now they have gone inside; they have found a subterranean passage to the subterranean kingdom. Only rarely do some of them appear again on the earth. **At our bazaar such people come with strange, very ancient money, but nobody could ever remember a time when such money was in usage here.**' I asked them, if we could also see such people. And they answered, 'Yes, if your thoughts are similarly high and in contact with these holy people, because only sinners are upon the earth and the pure and courageous people pass on to something more beautiful.'

"Great is the belief in the Kingdom of the subterranean people. Through all of Asia, through the spaces of all deserts, from the Pacific to the Urals, you can hear the same wondrous tale of the vanished holy people. And even far beyond the Ural Mountains, the echo of the same tale will reach you. Often you hear about subterranean tribes.

Sometimes an invisible holy people is said to be living behind a mountain. **Sometimes either poisonous or vitalizing gases are spread over the earth, to protect some one.**

Sometimes you hear how the sands of the great desert shift, and for a moment disclose treasures of the entrances of subterranean kingdoms. But none would dare to touch those treasures. You will hear how, in the rocks, in the most deserted mountain ranges, you can see openings which connect with these subterranean passes, and how beautiful princesses once upon a time occupied these natural castles.

"From distances one might take these openings for eries, because all which belongs to the subterranean people is concealed. Sometimes the Holy City is submerged, as in the folk-lore of Netherlands and Switzerland. And there is folk-lore that coincides with actual discoveries in the lakes and along the sea coasts. In Siberia, in Russia, Lithuania and Poland, you find many legends and fairy tales about giants who lived at times in these countries but afterwards, disliking the new customs, disappeared. In these legends, one may recognize the specific foundations of the ancient clans. The giants are brothers. Very often the sisters of the giants live on the other shores of the lakes or the other side of the mountains. Very often they do not like to move from the site but some special event drives them from their patrimonial dwelling. Birds and animals are always near these giants; as witnesses they follow them and announce their departure.

"...The endless Kurgans of the southern steppes retain around them numerous stories about the appearance of the unknown warrior, nobody knows from whence. The Carpathian Mountains in Hungary have many similar stories of unknown tribes, giant-warriors and mysterious cities. If, without prejudice, you patiently point out on your map all the legends and stories of this nature you will be astonished at the result. When you collect all the fairy-tales of lost and subterranean tribes, will you not have before you a full map of the migrations?"

During the 'Subterranean World' controversy which filled the pages of AMAZING STORIES Magazine in the late 1940's as a result of the writings of Palmer, Shaver and numerous readers who sent in their own contributions, a couple by the name of John & Dorothy de Courcy became involved as well. They had sent in a fictionalized novelette based loosely on the 'Agharti' legends, which was published in the magazine. Sometimes afterwards, in the Dec. 1946 issue of A.S. (p. 173), they submitted another letter describing a strange 'response' to their story:

"Sirs.

"The most singular thing has happened and we are at a loss to offer an explanation. It might be a prank, but unless someone is willing to spend a good deal of money on a prank, it must be the truth!

"On July 29, a tall man wearing a long blue or black overcoat and a dark hat drawn down to conceal his face, went to a former residence of ours in San Francisco asking for us. He

was told we had moved and the landlord tried to find a card bearing our forwarding address. Try as he might, he couldn't, nor could he remember even the city, but he said he thought it was Portland. When told, the man answered, 'I quite understand. If you find the address, kindly write them and say, "the man from Agharti" seeks them.'

"On August 5 he reappeared in Portland at an apartment house where we had once lived. Again our address was missing and again he left the same message, adding, 'I bear a message for them from the King.'

"In both cases, after we had gone, our forwarding addresses were found and both landlords wrote to us immediately apologizing for their oversight. They said he impressed them so much they couldn't forget him. Both of them misspelled Agharti in their letters.

"Who is the King? Can he be referring to the fabulous King of the World? The only solution we can suggest is to publish this letter with our address and hope that this time the man from Agharti, if he be such, will find us.

" -- John & Dorothy de Courcy., 665 S. W. 113th Place., Seattle 66, Washington."

As further evidence that not ALL subterranean societies are of the insidious, reptilian or reptilian-controlled variety, we add the following revelations from 'Commander X', the mysterious anonymous U.S. Intelligence official who has revealed much about 'inside' government knowledge of alien civilization both beyond and beneath the earth. He is the author of the book '**UNDERGROUND ALIEN BASES**', published by Tim Beckley's UFO REVIEW-Abelard Press, N.Y. Mr. 'X' was apparently very familiar with the Subterranean-world controversies that surrounded AMAZING STORIES and related publications in the early years, which may explain his present position in U.S. Intelligence. He reveals the following subterranean-related accounts from South America:

"..Of all the countries on the face of the Earth, none is more mysterious, or less explored, than is Brazil. Miles upon miles of this country have never been set foot upon by white man. In these areas live whole tribes of savage Indians whose civilizations are said to be akin to those existing at the time of the Stone Age. Many of those who have dared venturing into these pockets of unexplored jungle have never come out. Perhaps the case of Colonel Fawcett will be familiar to readers as an example of what I mean. He supposedly was captured by a tribe of wild Indians while in search of a 'hidden city' said to be located in the confines of the dense jungle...

"Before his death, Dr. (Raymond) Bernard had sent this writer many personal letters regarding his findings related to...underground civilization(s). We quote from these communications in the following:

"I arrived in Brazil in 1956 and have been carrying on my research since I met a Theosophical leader who told me about the subterranean cities... that exist in Brazil. He referred to Professor Henrique de Souza, president of the Brazilian Theosophical Society, at Sao Lourenco in the state of Minas Gerais, who erected a temple dedicated to Agharta, which is the Buddhist name of the subterranean World. Here in Brazil live Theosophists from all parts of the world, all of whom believe in the existence of the subterranean cities.

"Professor de Souza told me that the great English explorer Colonel Fawcett is still alive, living in a subterranean city in the Roncador Mountains of Matto Grosso, where he found the subterranean city of Atlanteans for which he searched (Note: Bernard refers to the inhabitants of this city as 'Atlanteans', when in fact other accounts suggest that--like the underground cities below the east coast of North America--many of these cavern cities were originally constructed by an ancient antediluvian race which might have been very similar to the lost race spoken of in the 'Atlantis' legendary, and were later re- inhabited after the flood. In 'this' sense they might be referred to as 'Atlanteans' although the present inhabitants of such cities probably do not have any direct 'genetic' ties to the antediluvian 'Atlanteans'. - Branton), but is held prisoner lest he reveal the secret of his whereabouts. He was not killed by Indians as is commonly believed. Professor de Souza claimed he has visited subterranean cities, including Shamballah, the world capital of the subterranean empire of Agharta. I then went to Matto Grosso to find the subterranean city where Fawcett is claimed to be living with his son Jack, but failed to do so. I then returned to Joinville in the state of Santa Catarina, and there continued my research.

"Just recently two explorers returned from entering a tunnel near Ponte Grosse in the state of Parana. One of them had recently entered alone and spent five days in the underworld city there. It had about 50 inhabitants plus children. The fruit orchards were recently planted, and the inhabitants received fruit from another subterranean city. During the last visit, the two explorers were met at the entrance of the tunnel by a guardian and the chief of the city, who told them that they should return in two years when the fruit trees will start to bear, but cannot enter now.

"The same two explorers entered a tunnel in Rincon, state of Parana, and finally came to a chimney-like structure with four chains hanging down. They descended on the chains but when they came near the bottom a gas with a chemical odor started to come up and forced them to ascend. Obviously the subterranean dwellers tried to keep them from reaching the city (This seems often to be the case - Commander X).

"Our explorer J.D. (name on file - Commander X), who is a mountain guide of the Mystery Mountain near Joinville (where there is supposed to be an entrance) said that, several times, he saw a luminous flying saucer ascend from the tunnel opening that leads to a subterranean city inside the mountain, in which he heard the beautiful choral singing of men and women, and also heard the 'canto galo' (rooster crowing), a universal symbol indicating the existence of subterranean cities in Brazil. He said that the saucer was so luminous that it lit up the night sky and converted it into daylight. On one occasion he met a group of subterranean men outside the tunnel. They were short, stocky, with reddish beards and long hair, and very muscular. When he tried to approach them, they vanished. Often he saw strange illuminations in this area at night which were probably produced by flying saucers (We use the name 'Mystery Mountain,' rather than reveal the true name of the mountain, so that unwanted outsiders will not come here to locate it). Throughout my many years of research I have accumulated a vast amount of data which would indicate that these entrances to subterranean cities abound throughout the region.

"An elderly man living in Joinville once told me that he had visited a tunnel near Concepciao in the state of Sao Paulo, and saw in the distance a marvelous subterranean

city with vehicles darting back and forth, evidently traveling through tunnels from one subterranean city to another.

"Although the following report requires confirmation, it was told to me by an explorer named N.C. who said that he had visited a tunnel near Rio Casdor and had met a **beautiful young woman appearing to be about 20 years of age. She spoke to him in Portuguese and SAID that she was 2,500 years old.** He also met a bearded subterranean man (Note: Often humans encountered in aerial disks or subterranean caverns declare that they are extremely old by human standards. On the surface this might sound next to impossible, unless a revolutionary scientific breakthrough on the part of these human 'aliens' has allowed them to retard the aging process to an extreme degree, or could it possibly be that they are separated from the degenerating radiations of solar rays explain their allegedly greater longevity? Another possibility would be that through bionics/biological transplants/prosthetics, etc. the lifespan of human beings possessing advanced biological and technological sciences might theoretically be increased dramatically. Incidentally, the writer and traveler Robert Stacy-Judd in some of his books described an exploration he and others in his party made of the peripheral areas of the **Loltun caves of Yucatan.** Legend says that at least one group of people, fleeing persecution, entered en masse into the massive Loltun caves and were never seen again. Stacy-Judd tells of his own encounter with a **'cave hermit' deep in the cavern chambers who claimed to be well over 1000 years old, and who said he was a guardian of the cave and of the treasures--and city?--which lay deep below in the unknown depths, 'unknown' that is, except to the strange 'hermit'.** Aside from photographs of this hermit which appeared in some of his works, the author also revealed photographs of 'underground gardens' consisting of areas of the cave which contain small patches of 'jungle', watered and lit through parts of the cavern ceilings which had collapsed, exposing them to the outer world. Whether such claims of longevity are real or whether the "subterranean" people were just playing with the minds of such explorers who encountered them, is uncertain - Branton).

"Still another explorer named D.O. visited this same tunnel near Gaspar, Santa Catarina, and behind a wonderful fruit orchard saw a subterranean woman with a child in her arms reading to it aloud from a huge book written in an unknown language... After she read each sentence the child repeated the same and in this way was taught how to read. All of these subterranean cities are illuminated by strange light..."

In relation to the apparent connection between subterranean civilizations and unidentified flying objects (Bernard and de Souza, incidentally, believed 'flying saucers' to be of subterranean origin), we will here quote from Paris Flammonde, author of **'THE AGE OF FLYING SAUCERS'** (Hawthorne Books, Inc., N.Y.), who tends to confirm this hypothesis. He in turn quoted Raymond A. Palmer as a major proponent of this belief:

"...The new decade was not without a new theory, or, at least, a variation of an old one--that not only were Flying Saucers not originating from beyond the farthest reaches of our planet, they were expelled from within it... Ray Palmer wrote a lengthy article elaborating his interesting and imaginative thesis, and prefaced it with the assertion that he was prepared 'to prove that flying saucers are native to planet earth; that the governments of more than one nation (if not all of them) know this to be the fact; that a concerted effort is

being made to learn all about them, and to explore their native land; and that facts already known are considered so important that they are the world's top secret...' The continuation of his contention reads:

'...is there any area on Earth which can be regarded as a possible origin for flying saucers? There are...four...the two major, in order of importance, are Antarctica and the Arctic...the two minor areas are South America's Motto Grosso and Asia's Tibetan Highlands.'

Raymond Bernard (actual name 'Walter Seigmeister'), writing in the Oct. 1959 issue of SEARCH Magazine, p. 48, described yet another alleged encounter with a subterranean race. What are we to make of all these stories? Are we to assume that some of the individuals who told Bernard such accounts actually made them up, as some suggest, in order to receive the 'reward' Bernard was known to offer on documentable accounts of ancient tunnels? Or, are we to accept these accounts for just what their sources claim them to be, actual encounters with a subterranean world? Bernard stated the following:

"...Last week my investigators returned and said they visited their city (i.e. the 'city' of a race of dwarf-humans whom Bernard referred to as the 'Niebelungs', who live in a subterranean region with it's own system of illumination - Branton) and are able to bring any of my American friends to visit it, but I require one condition: absolute secrecy, as I don't want governments to send armies into the tunnel to disturb these peaceful people.

"To reach them requires a 3-day journey of about 40 miles through a tunnel. This entire distance is through a tunnel carefully lined with cut stone blocks below, above and on the sides. That was quite an engineering feat. I think the tunnel was made long to keep out curiosity seekers, and only the most determined will travel that distance.

"Here is the report of my investigations: (They are two ranchers, father and son, who discovered the tunnel accidentally):

"We left our house 5 A.M. for the tunnel on top of a mountain and reached it 3 P.M. We were tired and camped near the entrance of the tunnel. For three days we proceeded through the tunnel. We told time by our watches, as we could not tell when it was day or night. We went to sleep at 10 P.M. and awoke at 3 A.M. and continued walking. By the third day the tunnel started to go downward by steps. It was built of stone blocks on all sides. By the night of the third day the tunnel suddenly opened into a great space covered with what appeared as a sky with a yellow light that made everything luminous, like daylight. We saw a city with many houses and saw many people in the distance. They were dwarfs with long white beards and long hair and we saw women and children, and heard them crying. The third member of our party got frightened so we had to return.'

"These men found three such tunnels. They entered another for three days, but after hearing voices further in, got scared and returned. Now they are entering the third...

In his book 'THE UNDERPEOPLE' (1969. Award Books., N.Y.), author Eric Norman relates an interesting account of the possible fate of the Inca Indians. In chapter 2 - 'Strange Caverns and Terrifying Tunnels', he relates:

"Conquest in South America was natives hacked to death by Spanish swords, arrogant priests absolving Conquistadors for their murderous atrocities, sharp Toledo steel lances running through children and, pervading it all, a dark lust for native gold.

"In the autumn of 1582, Francisco Pizarro hid his 168 Spanish horse soldiers behind the doorways and walls of the Incan town of Cajamarca. Atahualpa, the absolute emperor of the sun-worshipping Inca's empire, had agreed to meet Pizarro in the village plaza. Atahualpa's procession entered the village with a flair of pageantry. Incan warriors and the emperor's litter bearers were dressed in the finest cloth. The Royal Guard were armed with spiked helmets, feathered war clubs, poison-tipped lances and dazzling gold-inlaid swords. Thick gold bracelets encircled their bronze wrists and rich silver discs dangled from their pierced ear lobes.

"Pizarro and his Conquistadors remained hidden behind their guns and cannons as Atahualpa and his entourage entered the main plaza. 'It is like leading hogs to the killing pen,' Pizarro sneered. The bandy-legged Spaniard knew hogs; prior to his service for Spain's king, Pizarro had been a swineherd in the province of Estremadura. He lived by a harsh personal code that equated kindness with weakness; deceit was the trick of a clever man and lying, duplicity and thievery were proper.

"Atahualpa's group stirred nervously when they found no sign of the visitors to their land. Spanish fingers twitched on gun triggers and a hawk-faced soldier stood ready to torch the cannon. Suddenly, a solitary figure left a building and walked into the plaza. He was dressed in the faded robe of a Dominican friar. His bald head glistened contemptuously toward the Incan emperor.

"Friar Vincente Valverde announced that all of South America now belonged to the king of Spain. He stared coldly at the emperor and snapped, 'The Papal Bull of 1493 provides this right...'

"Proud and regal, Atahualpa glared at the haughty friar before him. 'Your Pope must be crazy to give away land that does not belong to him,' he said...

"The friar was stunned momentarily, then he turned and ran toward the safety of a building, shouting: 'Pizarro, attack, attack! Kill all of them! I will absolve you!'

"With hoarse cries of 'Santiago!', the Spaniards slaughtered the unsuspecting Inca warriors. In a few minutes the battle was over; the emperor's royal guard was dead, or dying, in the bloodstained dust of the plaza and Atahualpa was a prisoner of Pizarro. Greedy Spanish hands ripped the emerald necklace from his body. A wild gleam entered Pizarro's eyes when the emperor handed over his exquisitely carved bracelets of thick gold.

"'I want my freedom,' Atahualpa informed Pizarro. 'I will fill this room with gold for ransom.' The room was 17 feet wide and 22 feet long! The emperor's subjects delivered \$8,443,456 in gold to Pizarro and, afterward, Pizarro and Friar Vincente Valverde condemned Atahualpa to be burned alive at the stake.

"While the Spaniards were burning the emperor, a pack train of 11,000 llamas was headed toward the Spanish encampment. Each beast was burdened by a heavy load of gold. Native messengers brought news of the Inca king's death--and the fantastic caravan disappeared! During the past centuries, thousands of gold-greedy adventurers have searched for the 'loot of the 11,000 llamas.' None has discovered a single clue to the treasure's site.

"Believers in the Under-People theory are firm in their contention that the Incan llamas disappeared into a gigantic tunnel that led to the inner earth kingdoms. 'Even the population figures show that these conquered people outwitted their bestial conquerors,' according to one South American researcher. 'Incan census figures reveal that there was 10,000,000 subjects when the Spaniards arrived. Forty years later, in 1571, the Spaniards took a census. There was approximately 1,000,000 Indians. I admit that the Spanish method of slave labor took a tremendous toll. But could 9,000,000 Incas have died in Spanish mines?'"

Eric Norman relates the words of one correspondent who described the ancient subterranean tunnels believed by many to exist beneath the Andes:

"...at first I scoffed at such stories about mysterious tunnels and an alien civilization beneath the surface... I joined an inner earth group for the simple enjoyment of discussing outlandish ideas in a humorless, serious manner. Gradually, I became interested by the considerable volume of circumstantial evidence. I now believe the earth is absolutely honeycombed by a web of tunnels that run beneath the continents, under the oceans, and these passageways link the subterranean cities of the inner world.

"...There are many reports concerning a vast tunnel called the '**Roadway of the Incas**' which has an entrance somewhere in Peru. It runs south more than a thousand miles. There is another entrance to this fabulous tunnel in the Desert of Atacamba in Chile. The 'Highway of the Incas' passes under Cuzco, the legendary city of Peru. There is another, smaller, but **very well hidden entrance to the tunnel in the mountains near Machu Picchu**, which is the capital city of the first and last Inca emperor. It is called 'The Lost City of the Incas' and was not discovered until 1911 by an American, Hiram Bingham. It is considered the 'Eighth Wonder of the World.'

"...Everything at Machu Picchu is an excellent preservation...there are more than two hundred buildings constructed from white granite...fountains...shrines...and gigantic stairways carved from a single massive boulder.

"...This was a thriving city. It is intact except for the thatched roofs of the houses having deteriorated over the centuries...and, the doors are missing...it is as if the inhabitants selected a single day and mysteriously vanished. Did they enter the 'Highway of the Incas' and migrate to the inner earth?'

"Was this correspondent brainwashed by his colleagues to believe in the subterranean world? Or, was he a skeptical man who changed his mind in the face of a tremendous amount of information? His mention of the 'Highway of the Incas' strikes a familiar

note... A physician in Argentina has devoted his spare time to an investigation of this legendary inter-continental tunnel of the Under-People. He commented:

"...I have always been intrigued by the unknown and please convey my thanks to Dr. H-- for providing the opportunity to publish my views... I started to investigate the 'Highway of the Incas' when I was a young, curious youth and I have hundreds of witnessed, notarized statements. These documents and tape recordings fill one room of my home. The Incas knew of the tunnel and, although gold was of little value to them, they hid their treasures in these caverns to keep it from the greedy Spanish conquerors. No one had provided a satisfactory explanation for their mysterious disappearance. There was an empire of several million people that vanished from the surface of the earth. They entered the tunnel and left the Quechua Indians behind. As few Incas have been seen since then, they possibly took up residence in a cavern city or followed the tunnel to the interior of the earth.

"...The 'Highway' is the largest of the tunnels and it connects all continents. In addition to the openings in South America, there are entrances in Canada, in British Columbia; in America, you should investigate Mt. Shasta in California and Mt. St. Helena in Oregon. The tunnel is connected with Tibet and another opening in Central Asia. I believe the African entrance is in the Atlas mountains in the north of that continent.

"...I also suggest that you explore the 'highways' which have been found in the oceans. These ancient underworld civilizations may be mining our seas!"

In previous files we referred to the alleged inhabitants of a subterranean city below Mt. Shasta in California, which is believed to be one of the largest, if not THE largest, subterranean community in North America, and which allegedly has ties with the Asian empire of "Agharti" and the South American subterranean colonies. The following are some excerpts from an article written by William F. Hamilton (whose other publications can be obtained via 7327 Bothwell Rd., Reseda, CA 91335), who we have mentioned in earlier writings. Bill Hamilton has been in Data Processing for 22 years and is now a Sr. Programmer-Analyst. He is a writer, investigator and researcher. He has been involved in UFO research and investigations since 1953. Bill is a past member of The Foundation for Research in Parapsychology, The Spacecraft Research Foundation, The World Federation of Science and Engineering, and MENSA, the high IQ society. He has been a member of Understanding, Inc., and served on it's Board. He founded Nexus and Nexus News, an info center for alternative energy and alternative life-styles. He founded The UFORUM, a monthly forum on the UFO phenomena. He is a UFO investigator with MUFON, an Associate Director of UFOCCI, and founder of UFORCES. Bill is the author of the following books: Space, Time and Gravity; Center of the Cortex; Telos, The Cosmic Computer; Geometry of the Grid; Close Encounter Report; Alien Magic; and Cosmic Top Secret. He has written numerous articles for publications such as 'Search,' 'Energy Unlimited,' 'New Age Science,' 'The New Atlantean Journal,' 'California UFO,' and 'UFO Universe'. The following article originally appeared in the 'New Atlantean Journal':

"...I run across some fascinating people in the course of my investigations who tell me many unusual stories. While on the trail of reports of UFO base locations, I met a young, very pretty blonde girl with almond-shaped eyes and small perfect teeth, whose name is

Bonnie. Bonnie has told me an incredible story and has related a volume of interesting information... Bonnie is sincere, cheerful, and rational and says she (was born) in 1951 in a city called TELOS that was built inside an artificial dome-shaped cavern in the Earth a mile or so beneath Mt. Shasta, California.

"Bonnie, her mother (Rana Mu), her father Ra(Mu), her sister Judy, her cousins Lorae and Matox, live and move in our society, returning frequently to TELOS for rest and recuperation. Bonnie relates that her people use boring machines to bore tunnels in the Earth. **These boring machines heat the rock to incandescence, then vitrify it, thus eliminating the need for beams and supports.** A tube transit tunnel is used to connect the... cities that exist in various subterranean regions in our hemisphere. The tube trains are propelled by electromagnetic impulses up to speeds of 2500 mph. One tube connects with one of their cities in the Matto Grosso jungle of Brazil. (They) have developed space travel and some flying saucers come from their subterranean bases...

"They grow food hydroponically under full-spectrum lights with their gardens attended by automatons. The food and resources of Telos are distributed in plenty to the million-and-a-half population that thrives on a no-money economy. Bonnie talks about history, of the Uighers, Naga-Mayas, and Quetzals, of which she is a descendant (Note: Many people have mistakenly identified the inhabitants of 'Telos' as being directly descended from the 'Lemurians', however Bonnie here seems to refute this by indicating that her ancestry was other than this, possibly Meso-American and/or East-Indian? As in the case of the ancient 'antediluvian' cities of the eastern seaboard which were re-established after being abandoned by the lost 'Atlanteans', the 'Lemurians', if they existed, also seem to have been devastated in a world-wide cataclysm and their cities re-established by the Uighers, Naga-Mayas, and Quetzals and probably scattered members of other societies. As we've said earlier, the name 'Telos' is a Grecian word meaning 'uttermost', suggesting a 'possible' connection with the grecian-like Hav-musuvus of the Panamint mountains of California - Branton).

"I met Bonnie's cousin, Matox, who, like her, is a strict vegetarian and holds the same attitudes concerning the motives of government. They constantly guard against discovery or intrusion. Their advanced awareness and technology helps them remain vigilant...

"Science Fiction? Bonnie is a real person. Many have met her. Is she perpetrating a hoax? For what motive? She does not seek publicity and I have a devil of a time getting her to meetings to talk with others, but she has done so. There has been little variation in her story and her answers in the past three years. She has given me **excellent technical insight on the construction of a crystal-powered generator that extracts ambient energy...** Bonnie's father, the Ramu, is 300 years old and a member of the ruling council of Telos.

"Many tunnels are unsafe and closed off. **All tube transit tunnels are protected and are designed to eject uninvited guests.** Does Bonnie have the answers that we are looking for? I don't know... Bonnie says she would like to satisfy our need for proof and will work with me on a satisfactory answer to that problem, but she is unconcerned with whether people accept her or not. Bonnie is humorous and easy-going and well-poised, yet sometimes she becomes brooding and mysterious. **She says her people are busy**

**planning survival centers for refugees.** One of these is to be near Prescott, Arizona..." (Note: or rather below the Groom Creek area just south of Prescott, to be exact. Another 'survival center' for refugees of the world-wide cataclysms which the Telosians believe will eventually devastate the surface of the earth, is said to be below the general area of Jenny Lake, Wyoming, near the Tetons. The Tetons themselves have been the alleged home of a mysterious race, according to different sources, and extremely ancient stone 'buildings' have reportedly been found high atop these peaks - Branton).

When Bill Hamilton asked "Bonnie" to elaborate about the power-sources which her people utilize to propel the so-called "flying saucer" craft, she replied:

"...A lot of it is crystals (i.e. crystal-induced electromagnetism? - Branton), particularly the atmospheric vehicles. **The planet-to-planet vehicles are driven by an Ion-Mercury engine.** Spaceships can reach speeds way beyond light-- they can enter hyperspace--you generate into the fourth dimension--this is controlled by an on-board computer that takes you into and out of hyperspace. I know this is a simplification. When your on a ship going into hyperspace, you will hear this vibration, and a loud screaming sound when you enter, then you will hear nothing..."

Bill concludes: "I have had many correlations on this data and am researching it further toward a comprehensive theory of space travel..."

The account given below appeared in 'INNER LIGHT' Magazine, Summer, 1991. Written by 'Antara', the article, entitled: 'INTRODUCING THE WOMAN FROM TELOS, THE CITY BENEATH MOUNT SHASTA', is an alleged interview with this same resident of a subterranean city now living and working on the surface, under the name of 'Bonnie' or 'Sharula', along with her husband 'Shield'. We quote portions of the interview as follows:

"The following interview with Sharula took place on July 23, 1990, and is reprinted from 'INSIGHTS FOR POSITIVE LIVING.' She shares with us some wonderful information about the 'Atlantean' and 'Lemurian' cities (i.e. cities originally 'built' by antediluvian 'Atlanteans' and 'Lemurians'? - Branton) that exist beneath the earth's surface.

"She speaks of her home, Telos, a city built a mile or so beneath Mt. Shasta, California. During a recent trip to Mt. Shasta, I encountered several local townspeople who have personally seen mysterious fires and lights on the slopes of Mt. Shasta, and have heard other worldly chants and music late at night, emanating from the mountain. And of course, there have been sightings of mysterious robed people walking into the side of the mountain. Even the local visitor's guide mentions the 'Lemurian' connection to Mt. Shasta.

"This interview may really stretch your perceptions of reality. I hope it does. It's meant to..."

"INSIGHTS: Let's start off with some basic questions of who you are and where you come from."

"SHARULA: My name is Sharula and I come from a city underneath Mt. Shasta, called Telos. This city was constructed... at the termination of the Lemurian continent. When the scientists and priests of Lemuria realized the continent was about to sink, they petitioned a group called the Agharta Network, which controlled all the subterranean cities, to build our own city underneath Mt. Shasta. There was an original set of caves there. We chose to enlarge these caverns to make them bigger and more livable..." (Note: Although most accounts seem to suggest that 'Atlantis' was destroyed in a cataclysm equivalent to a universal flood or deluge such as is described in the traditions of several races as well as in the writings of the Greek Plato, 'Lemuria' may be a different story. 'Lemuria' seems to be the name that surface humans have attributed to this alleged lost continent of the Pacific, but whether it was actually named that by the ancient inhabitants is uncertain. The major area of confusion seems to be whether 'Lemuria' or 'Mu' was an antediluvian OR post-deluvian society like 'Agharti'. James Churchward seems to place 'Mu' somewhere in the Indian ocean, whereas others place it in the Pacific. Some of the old Indian tribes of the northeast and the California area have ancient legends of an island-continent called 'Elam-Mu' which was said to be connected to ancient California or separate from it, out in the Pacific Ocean. Could the Hawaiian islands be remnants of such an island-continent? The native American legends of California seem to place 'MU' shortly AFTER the deluge, which was believed to have occurred a few thousand years B.C. or 5000 years previous to the close of the 20th Century. The exact history of the 'Telosians' still needs to be investigated, even with the present information available, as it seems to be a complex history possibly involving several races - the Uighers, Naga-Mayas, Quetzal's, 'Lemurians' or 'Muvians', Aghartians, and possibly Greeks, East Indians, and others!?! - Branton).

"INSIGHTS: How many people live in Telos?"

"SHARULA: A million and a half."

"INSIGHTS: Tell us about your ecosystem; your water, food, air, environment--what is it like to live in Telos?"

"SHARULA: **We have perpetual light through a process of energizing stones to create full spectrum lighting. We process them with the forces that make them small suns.** The five levels are garden levels where we produce all the food we need with hydroponic gardens. There are plants on all five levels that continue to circulate the air. We work off the same system the earth does - the plants produce oxygen (i.e. a subterranean 'biosphere' - Branton). Plus, we have air shafts that come through the surface that sends air. Since that air is polluted, we use them less and less." (Note: Several years ago a man wrote into SEARCH Magazine stating that he was an Incan descendant who was "searching for" his own people, as he was convinced that they had escaped en masse into underground cities via ancient tunnels which they knew of, when the conquistadors invaded their land. He claimed that one day while by a river in a certain region near Matto Grosso, Brazil, he thought he heard a voice shouting from the top of a mountain. He began to climb the peak and a few hours later found himself beside a mountain-top shaft. He later managed to descend the shaft and discovered a tunnel which led horizontally to a point where a type of "door" existed. He heard what sounded like an "elevator" coming up from deep below and a well-built man who claimed to be part

"Incan" appeared and introduced himself through a transparent screen. **He was told that anyone entering this particular subterranean region had to undergo a physical "purification" process to remove the radioactive poisons from their bodies, which were resident in the atmosphere of the outer world.** Could this explain why the life-span of some of the under-people has reportedly increased dramatically? The Old Testament 'Torah' states that previous to the deluge a transparent 'canopy' of water vapor permeated the upper atmosphere, and some suggest that before this canopy fell in the form of the deluge the life-span of the antediluvians was dramatically increased because this "canopy" sealed-out most of the harmful and degenerating radiations of the sun. They suggest that this was why the antediluvians lived to an average of 500 years of age, while some like Methuselah lived upwards of 900 years! It appears as if the 'Telosians' have taken precautions not only from the atmospheric solar radioactive pollution resulting from a decaying atmospheric 'shield', as is evidenced by an increase in skin-cancer world-wide, etc., but also from the man-made radioactive and industrial pollutants - Branton)

"INSIGHTS: What form of government do you have?"

"SHARULA: We have a system where the government is run by the council of twelve plus one. They are twelve masters, six male and six female. If anyone has a disagreement, they go to an arbitrator, rather than fight it out among themselves. All arbitrators report to the council and they change constantly. They are appointed to that position based on their natural affinity for it."

"INSIGHTS: Who appoints them to that position?"

"SHARULA: The temple of Melchizedek... All through the cosmos (i.e. human colonizers and explorers sent out from the earth since the deluge? - Branton) there is an order called Melchizedek..."

At this point we will, before continuing with the Sharula interview, deal with the history of 'Melchizedek', which began on Earth in ancient times. Melchizedek was the ancient High Priest of Salem (now Jerusalem). We believe that this subject is important enough to deserve a fairly extensive explanation. There are basically two divergent views concerning the Priesthood of Melchizedek. The first is held by the various ancient and neo-masonic religions, which basically state that there are NUMEROUS members of the order who have been 'initiated' into the priesthood through a process of religious devotion, etc., while the other view is held by the various groups of Judeo-Christian believers who claim that there is only one Melchizedek Priest, the God-Man Jesus, and since only one High Priest was allowed to serve before Almighty God at any one time in ancient Israel--to be replaced by another when he had passed on--these claim that since Jesus ascended from the grave and now lives forever without the possibility of every dying, this singular Priesthood will be His alone eternally. Both sides no doubt sincerely believe that they have 'the truth', but, of course, both cannot be correct.

Many believe that the ancient Melchizedek was none other than the Christ, Jesus of Nazareth, or was in essence a 'thiophene' or an Old Testament appearance of Jesus-Jehovah.

We continue now with the interview with 'Sharula':

"INSIGHTS: Earlier, you mentioned... you had to petition the Aghartha, the ones in charge of the inner earth cities. Are there other cities in existence?"

"SHARULA: Oh, yes. There are many. There are over one hundred inner earth cities. Some of them are very similar..."

"INSIGHTS: How does one travel from city to city or from surface to inner city?"

"SHARULA: Probably the most common method is what we call the 'tubes.' It is a series of underground trains. We've bored tunnels that run underneath all the oceans and all the continents and connect all the cities and several of the retreats. The trains, which look very much like a subway train, are run on a cushion of air, an electromagnetic cushion, so they never actually touch the sides of the tunnel. This cushion creates a force field without friction and therefore they can achieve very high speeds. **The trains are capable of running over 3,000 mph.**"

"INSIGHTS: Between the surface and the inner cities, how does one travel?"

"SHARULA: There are several entrances that open to the surface. We'll use that method or we'll use a ship which is run by the silver fleet."

"INSIGHTS: The silver fleet...explain that please."

"SHARULA: ...The silver fleet is made up of beings from the Agharthean cities. Many of the ships that people see in the air are silver fleets' ships, except for the 'nasties.'"

"INSIGHTS: How can you identify a silver fleet ship as opposed to the 'nasties,' as you call them?"

"SHARULA: ...all the Confederation ships run off of 'divine' geometrics (or rather, 'cosmic' geometrics - Branton). The ships will be either cylinder (cigar?) or they will be saucer shaped or they will be round. There are NOT a lot of protrusions and angles; they have a tendency to be smooth. The ships that come in boomerang shapes and other weird configurations are usually not Confederation ships." (Note: although this may be true to some extent, in recent years according to some reports the saurian grays have begun to use the 'disk' or 'saucer' shape also more frequently. The 'triangular' craft seen en masse in Belgium, etc. are apparently 'gray' craft according to abductees there, which would tend to confirm some of what Bonnie or Sharula is saying. Also, these 'boomerang' craft have often been seen in connection with the Archuleta sub-base network of the southwestern U.S., which would seem to indicate from what Sharula has said that the "Dulce" network is largely under the control of the 'nasties', or the draconian powers, as many other sources allege that it is. - Branton)

"INSIGHTS: Let's talk about the people themselves, the Telosians. What would a typical Telosian look like?"

"SHARULA: The typical Telosian has a slightly golden tone to their skin and have a tendency toward high cheek bones and slightly almond shaped eyes. Most Telosians run

toward light hair and we have all eye colors. The men are generally 7' to 7'6" in height and the women are generally 6'6" to 7'1" in height. **When we come to the surface we have a process of altering the molecules of our bodies so that we are able to appear the same height as people here on the surface.**"

"INSIGHTS: Does your civilization have any of the social problems that ours seem to have, like: pollution, hunger, homeless people and water droughts?"

"SHARULA: No. We don't have pollution because we are able to monitor our systems at all times. We have learned to accelerate the atom. **When the first scientists started working with atoms they didn't realize that they weren't meant to shatter the atom for energy; they were meant to accelerate the atom for energy that won't die out and won't produce hazardous afterform. Because we learned to accelerate the atoms, we're also able to dematerialize all of our waste matter and return it back to its original form...**"

"INSIGHTS: Is the U.S. Government aware of the existence of Telos and the other underground cities?"

"SHARULA: Yes. For a long time they have been trying to get in, to access the information of Telos and the silver fleet. The promise of what they need would be given to them, but in return there are several things they have to do or quit doing."

"INSIGHTS: What was it that they were given to do or stop doing?"

"SHARULA: **Basically, return the country to what it was founded on and return to an open and honest government, so that every citizen has access to what's happening in the government.**" (Note: i.e. Constitutionally-based government, Bill of Rights's, etc.? If this is Sharula's interpretation of an 'open' government, then we must assume that the Telosians, or at least many of them, are opposed to the present plans to establish a one-world socialist dictatorship or 'New World Order' which will no doubt impose tremendous threats upon individual liberty of conscience. The reader may recall the information from an earlier file to the effect that human 'benevolents' were working with the U.S. Government in the Nevada Military complex against the saurian grays. Their 'teachings' stated that the U.S. Constitution and Bill of Rights was very much respected by them. Also, could these be allied with the same 'human' aliens who landed in Florida after the two giant asteroid-ships took up a geosynchronous orbit around the earth, and warned us not to have any dealing with these 'gray' aliens, and offered their own assistance if we disarmed our nuclear weapons? Were 'they' tied in with the Telosian 'Blonds' or the Pleiadean 'Nordics'? Some accounts suggest that both human groups are at least aware of each other, and possibly have an alliance with each other. Now that the Soviet Union has broken up and the 'need' for intercontinental ballistic nuclear missiles has been decreased, will the U.S. government break-off their self-destructive alliance with the 'grays' and instead seek alliances with the human groups who had originally warned them about the grays? - Branton)

"INSIGHTS: Are you referring to the government's interaction with other 'extraterrestrial' (and/or 'innerterrestrials' - Branton) that are not of the silver fleet?" (Note: The

interviewer is no doubt referring to the 'pact' which the secret government was manipulated and deceived into making with the reptilian 'Grays', and subsequently with other branches of the 'serpent race' - Branton)

"SHARULA: Yes. That is only one."

"INSIGHTS: When was the government first introduced to Telos?"

"SHARULA: They have been aware of the subterranean cities and they have been aware of Telos since the country's conception. It is only near the turn of the century that they started taking action. This action did not get really aggressive until the 1950's."

Note: There are indications that some members of certain Masonic-type 'secret government' societies, such as the Rosicrucian Order, have attempted to establish contact with the subterranean residents of Mt. Shasta, although it is uncertain just what might have come of this. Several encounters with the 'Blondes' (both subterranean and extraterrestrial?) have revealed 'their' own concern about what is taking place with the abductions and mutilations of human beings by the sauroid Grays, although many of these groups claim that they cannot 'interfere' with the problem due to some 'cosmic law' of non-intervention. This may be true with those 'Nordic' or 'Blonde' societies who hail from other planetary bodies, such as the Taurians, Lyrans, Eridanians, and Cetusians (the latter of whom seem to be taking the most action to help their brothers here on earth, in essence interfering with the saurian 'interferers' from the Draconis, Bootes, Reticuli, Canis, etc. constellations), and the 'Solar Tribunal' groups of Mars, Luna, Saturn, etc., and so on. However, in the case of the Telosian-Aghartian alliance, this 'non-intervention' policy would not apply, since this is their world also, and they are just as native to earth as anyone else living on this planet. In light of this fact, and especially in light of their own awareness of the reptilian-saurian threat, we would urge them (if by chance they are reading this) to reconsider such a stance and join with their fellow human brothers and sisters on the surface in defending our society from this ancient threat.

According to Sharula, in another interview, the city of Telos exists on five different levels. The bottom level is about one and one-half miles across, while the other levels are different. The closest level to the mountain itself is about three-quarters of a mile across. This would allow for the possibility of "housing" a large number of inhabitants in a more concentrated area than surface cities could permit, being that surface areas can only be inhabited on the one (surface) level, except for high-rises. This might explain the large (million- and-a-half) population of this particular sub-city.

As a possible confirmation of the above, we quote the following transcript of parts of an interview between John Lear and the National Fringe Sciences Bulletin Board:

"Question: You just mentioned that there were... other 'species' in contact with this world... are they aware of the EBE's?"

"Lear: Yes they are. The types I will mention are listed in a USAF Academy Physics book called 'INTRODUCTORY SPACE SCIENCE VOLUME 2,B.' I refer to chapter 13... which lists the ones that are most seen. They are the EBE's, the 'Blondes'... They look just like us but are invariably blond-haired and blue eyed. Don't know where they

come from but they do not interact with us except for a few abductions now and then. We also have a species that is similar to us in appearance but they are about seven feet tall and the main difference is that their eyes wrap around their head a little more than ours. Another type listed is a small species about four feet tall, very hairy and extremely strong for their size. We don't know where these guys come from either. All this was in the aforementioned text which was withdrawn by the Air Force in the early '70's from the book. But there are several people who have the original book...

"Question: I'm curious also as to the government's plans, if any, to deal with an uprising of EBE's should that eventually occur... or would the technological gap make an attempt untenable?"

"Lear: It is my understanding that we have already lost the battle. This is the reason why MJ-12 is in such a panic. They had a lot of well laid plans to inform us, and when the deception was confirmed about 1984 it was all out the window..."

"Question: Recently in the INF treaty negotiations, Gorbachev indicated that despite prior claims, they too were working on an SDI program... Is there any connection between our program and theirs and if the battle is lost, why are those attempts being made?"

"Lear: I wish I knew the answer to that. Several rumors have come out of the test site recently and one of them was that every test shot this year (1989? - Branton) has been to make a giant (underground - Branton) room. The shots are very clean and as soon as everything subsides they move in equipment to make walls, ceiling, floors and various levels."

The following account is based on a series of letters, documents, and diagrams which were received from a man in Michigan who we will refer to as David L., who claimed to have been part of a 12-man speleological team who broke into an ancient tunnel system and, subsequently, encountered some of the inhabitants of the subsurface world. These beings described by David 'may' be the 7-ft. tall humans with large 'wrap-around' eyes described by John Lear who have bases on the moon. However this is only a supposition.

During the mid-1980's, subsurface researcher Charles A. Marcoux (now deceased) informed other researchers who were at the time involved in aerial and subsurface investigations, that he had received a manuscript, maps, etc., from a long-time correspondent of his. This was David L. We will not reveal the last name of this source, nor the last names nor the cities of residence of others involved in the incident out of respect for their privacy. However, since much of the story was released to inner earth researchers some years ago we feel that the information itself is of enough importance to the "master puzzle" to mention here.

The manuscript contained an account of a series of expeditions which David L. and 11 others were involved with during the late 1950's and early 1960's. Only 4 or 5 of the members took part in the expeditions at any given time, while the others supported their efforts. The account contained a description of an alleged encounter with a subterranean "human" race who allegedly inhabited an underground city or cities, connected by tunnels, approximately 5-7 miles beneath the surface of northern Arkansas. This

subterranean system was apparently built by a highly technological race. Some indications suggest that the tunnels were constructed by a race which was more ancient than the present inhabitants, and were possibly excavated in antediluvian times, since the present inhabitants allegedly showed the speleologists ancient sealed 'cities' farther below their own, built by a race which pre-dated themselves.

Some of the men involved were formerly members of a UFO organization which thrived in Michigan in the 1950's, and which published a UFO journal which had up to a few thousand subscribers at one point. Some of the writers for this publication, who were also members of the 'board' of this investigations group, later left off investigating UFO's due to the confusing "paranormal" aspects of the phenomena, and instead turned their attentions to subsurface investigations. At the time there was a great division between those UFOlogists who considered the UFO phenomena to be an exclusively physical and solid phenomena and those who were convinced it was more parapsychical or supernatural in nature. Unfortunately, few considered the possibility that both could be true, i.e. that a physical race of alien "sorcerers" that possessed seemingly supernatural or parapsychical abilities, such as the reptilian Grays, were behind much of the phenomena. One of the early members of this groups was a man by the name of George Wight. He, like the others, felt that it might be more profitable to investigate something more "closer to home", like the subterranean realm, instead of attempting to investigate possible encounters with alien craft from beyond earth which were here today and gone tomorrow and might have been parapsychical apparitions anyway, from all they could gather. So the group eventually drifted towards investigating the underground realm, beginning with the exploration of caverns in Arkansas and surrounding states.

According to David L., even though they had been partially exposed to the idea of subterranean civilizations through the Shaver Mystery, etc., none of them ever expected to encounter anything like that, and they took such accounts with a grain of salt. To them the idea was almost as elusive as the UFO phenomena, they had not really seen any solid evidence to prove it. They probably realized that any such "evidence" of an alien civilization might be apprehended by government officials even if it did turn up, and so they more-or-less resigned themselves to a "wait and see" attitude.

Two of the incidents which led Wight and the others to their assumption of a "paranormal" connection to the UFO phenomena were as follows. The first incident which led them to their conclusions involved a woman known by some members of the group, who claimed to be an "occult channel" for psychic messages from the so-called "space people". The researchers tried to convince the girl that she should ask the 'occupants' to make an appearance to them, which she did. She took them outside and directed their attention to the sky. From the standpoint of the researchers, nothing could be seen in the sky, even though the girl insisted that 'they' were there. However, several people in the area reported seeing a luminous object flying overhead at about the same time the researchers were standing outside with the 'contactee', and in the exact same area. They noticed some strange qualities with the girl which reminded them of some of the obsessive and irrational behavior which often accompanies those who have become involved in the occult, witchcraft, and the dark side and have become 'possessed' by invisible malevolent entities as a result. Also, with the 'religious' background of some of

the members of the group, they began to suspect that something sinister and deceptive and at least in part supernatural might be working behind the phenomena. They noticed that some of the objects could be seen by people who were supposedly 'psychically attuned' to them or people who were under the influence of the objects and the occupants, while those standing next to them might not see anything at all.

The other account involved one of the members of the group who **was of the conviction that many of the UFO's were of 'demonic' origin** (this is not to say that ALL such objects can be classified in this way). This member was alleged to have had conversations with a well-known UFOlogist at the time who claimed to have had frequent visits by the so-called 'Men In Black'. The beings he encountered looked humanlike yet seemed to possess (or were 'possessed' by?) supernatural energies; perhaps a "controlled" hidden society of sorcerers!?! This particular member of the group, according to David L., claimed that during his conversations with this well-known researcher, he was told by this man confidentially that he was of the opinion that some of the UFO phenomena was 'satanic' or 'demonic' in nature. The member who was told this even went so far as to begin giving public lectures about the occult/demonic origin of some of the phenomena.

According to David L., some time afterwards and apparently in response to his outspokenness, this member and friend of his was on a ranch somewhere in the mountains of Wyoming where he was suddenly struck by a brilliantly lit red-glowing object which appeared in the sky. As a result of this he suffered serious paralysis below the waist and was consigned to a wheel chair for years afterwards.

Shortly before the group officially disbanded the UFO organization, George Wight himself wrote and published an article in their periodical which presented **strong evidence that much of the UFO phenomena was being directed by an unknown intelligence which was secretly working towards the establishment of an Anti-Christ system on earth.**

As the "group" began to disband, some of its members as we've said began to seek out ways to continue their friendships and still remain active in some pursuit. Not so much out of a motive to discover a lost world but more out of a desire to fulfill their hunger for adventure (and escape for at least a time the busy rat-race which many of them, having been involved in some type of 'professional' career or business, found themselves getting caught up in) they began to explore the caverns.

During the latter part of the 1950's the exploration party had investigated some very interesting caverns, mainly within the area of Arkansas and the surrounding states. At one point they came across one particular cavern some miles north of Batesville, Arkansas. This was in an area where several caverns were located. Many of these caves (concentrated generally NW-West of the town of Cushman) have in fact been the subject of some very interesting accounts, suggesting that there might be more than one route to the nether regions below other than the one discovered by David L. and his friends. There are accounts of several people who have entered some of these caves and were never seen again; or who encountered strange phenomena deep underground - such as electrical failure of flashlights, suggesting possible electromagnetic interference; accounts

involving extremely deep caverns; gas pockets encountered at extreme depths; and an account concerning one of the caves west of Cushman which seemed to have ancient carvings over it depicting various figures; and there is even one account which came from an Oklahoma man who was told by a friend of his of being chased from a cavern west of Cushman by a large hairy humanoid who began throwing boulders at him as if annoyingly scaring him out of "his" territory!

At one point David L's group came across one particular cavern near the town. Over a period of years, returning from time to time to this particular cavern, the explorers had crossed underground lakes, followed dead-end leads, explored "breakdown" areas, investigated numerous cracks and chasms, and steep inclines. One of their most fortunate discoveries was made in a large boulder-strewn break-down area about half-way between the entrance and an underground "lake". They noticed a crack in the path which they had found through the boulders and, following this crack into the thick of the breakdown they came across another area where the crevice widened enough to allow them entrance. Following this they descended for a very great distance for a very long while, down a sloping 45 degree incline, so steep in places that rope had to be used. This steep, sloping passage led them past a couple of horizontal "side passages" which they followed a few miles to dead ends, and continued deeper through at least one more crevice. Eventually they emerged into a large cavernous area hundreds of feet high and long, which they named "glass cave" because of its features, and used it as a central "camp" in subsequent explorations. The remarkable thing about this cavern, however, was their claim that it was located almost 4 MILES beneath the surface of the earth, which would definitely make it deeper than any other "officially" recognized cavern.

Time and again they explored the mazes and labyrinths deep in the earth using "glass cave" as their central camp. Two passages in the far wall of this chamber, opposite from the crevice through which they first entered glass cave, were each explored for 3 days continuously before they decided to turn back. According to David L., these passages still continued onward with no end in sight. Could these have led to the gloomy 'hadean' like caverns which they were to see later, and which they alleged contained 'gigantic serpents' or snakes capable of crushing a human being to death in a few seconds?

After some experiments involving air flow within glass cave, the explorers were able to trace slight air movements to another as-yet-undiscovered crevice hidden within the wall, not far from the crevice which they had entered from above. This passage, though relatively small, continued still DEEPER into the earth. They explored the steep incline for what they approximated to be a mile, before reaching an area of "breakdown". This "seemed" to be the end of the line. Just as they were about to turn back in disappointment from this passage which had taken them deeper than they had ever been before, one of the members of the team noticed that the light of their carbide lamps seemed to have a faint amber tint to it. All of them were perplexed, wondering what would be causing the phenomena.

It was decided that they would all turn off their lamps in order to see if the greenish luminescence remained. They did so, and a minute or so afterwards their eyes adjusted to the darkness and they could faintly distinguish a greenish luminescence which seemed to

emanate from the lowest part of the passage in an area where heavy "breakdown" SEEMED to close off any further progress.

George Wight was the first one to make his way to the spot in the breakdown area from which the faint light seemed to emanate and, after removing more rocks, they discovered that still another crack or crevice, barely wide enough for one man to enter at a time, descended vertically from beneath the breakdown.

According to David L., Wight volunteered himself to be the first to explore the crevice, and soon afterwards he was on his way down. A few minutes passed before those above heard the sound of what they could only guess was George slipping and falling down the crevice.

After a period of uncertainty those above, concerned for his safety, were relieved to hear the faint voice of George Wight rising up from apparently several dozen feet below. They were able to make out his excited words to the effect that he had fallen into a large tunnel, and encouraged the others to follow him.

They did so, and when they were all in the 'tunnel' they stood in stunned silence. The passage which stretched out from them in BOTH directions was not like the common natural cavern passages which they had explored for the past few days. In fact, it seemed more artificial than natural. Approximately a dozen feet in height and about the same in width, the 'tunnel' was similar in shape to a subway tunnel, having a domed ceiling and a flat floor. What really caught their attention however, was the fact that the tunnel was illuminated by a greenish phosphorescence to the point that they did not need their carbide lamps to see their surroundings. The strange luminescence seemed to emanate from the walls of the tunnel itself, which were clear and glass-like yet at the same time extremely hard.

In one direction the lighting effect faded out into blackness, while in the other direction the light seemed to increase. One of the members suggested that the light might be coming from the surface, and that they might be in one of the old mines which existed in the area of the cavern entrance, but others brought up the fact that, according to their calculations, they were at least five miles beneath the earth and therefore the light probably did not come from the surface.

Subsequently, the explorers decided to investigate in the direction of the "light" since it would allow them to keep some carbide in reserve for their return trip. At one point the tunnel (which was apparently cut through solid rock much of the way and then glazed over with the hard, transparent substance) opened into a gigantic cavern. Actually, this occurred several times and at intervals, as if those who constructed the tunnel intentionally meant for them to intersect the various cavern systems. Did the ancient builders of this tunnel system possess a combination of gravimeters, x-rays and sounding radars to detect these cavities? Even as it passed through these large caverns, the tunnel still continued in the form of a transparent domed enclosure, still the same shape as before, yet this time the hard transparent substance was in the form of a 'wall' a foot or so thick that protected the group from the 'outside' or cavern environment. And fortunately so, for beyond the luminescent walls, were black expanses of gloomy

darkness within which they could faintly make out huge moving and slithering figures of what seemed to be giant serpents and other grotesque reptilian creatures as well as other non-reptilian creatures, including giant insects.

If not for the fact that these creatures were physical, tangible things, these dark caverns could have been likely candidates for the legendary 'Hades' of Greek and Hebrew tradition.

The most shocking surprise of all, however, occurred on the third day after exploration of this tunnel began, a considerable distance from the crevice from which they entered the tunnel. They were walking along when all-of-the-sudden they turned around and found themselves face-to-face with a group of human-like beings who stood around 7 to 8 feet tall. 'Their' skin had a faint pale-bluish, almost clay-bluish tint to it and their eyes were relatively large and owl-like. But 'they' were definitely human, according to David L., who was on this particular expedition. The 'people' took out some type of electronic device, apparently some kind of parabolic communicator, and after a few attempts they succeeded in establishing a communication link using the electronic 'translator'.

At this point their story becomes even more complex, and the exact series of events, in their chronological order, are rather undefined. First, the strange 'people' made it known that the tunnel led to a network that went all throughout the earth and to even greater depths. **'They' had certain types of instruments that could monitor from a distance the emotional field or make-up of a person and thus determine their intentions.** It was only because 'the group' was found to possess an emotional makeup indicating relatively non-violent and non-selfish motivations that they were chosen to be contacted. 'They' made it known that the cavers could have traveled through the underground tunnels for weeks and would not have discovered their "city" if "they" did not wish them to, as the entrance to it was so well hidden. Here then, are some of the other incidents which allegedly occurred after the group encountered the strange people, or rather after these people CONTACTED the group (chronological sequence uncertain):

1) The group learned that the tunnels continued for hundreds of miles, at least. After the initial contact, the topsiders were taken to a hidden "elevator" and were then taken through this to the "city" where these people resided. This community was apparently made out of a glass-like substance, somewhat like the makeup of the tunnels themselves.

2) Their lifestyle, way of life, society, government, etc., was described as being radically different than that which existed on the surface. These people possessed a "Book of Laws" or a moral code by which they attempted to live. According to David L., if any of their society became violent or became a threat to the rest they were expelled into the tunnels, given sufficient provisions to make it on their own, and generally forced to seek out their destiny in other parts of the nether regions. This punishment for unrepentant "criminals" was apparently practiced only on very rare occasions.

3) **The technology used by this civilization was very complex, and is based largely on the technology of the lost races who lived before the flood and whose demise resulted in the abandonment of the subterranean system, along with all of the sophisticated technology which had been left there as well.** The race encountered by David L. and

his group allegedly were direct descendants of Noah, and were of a race of explorers who came to the Western Hemisphere some centuries following the deluge and discovered and took up residence within the ancient subsystem where they now resided. Some of the technology left by the "ancients" is still not understood by the people encountered by the speleologists. The group was also shown tremendous dark caverns miles beneath the city, where the subterraneans had found ancient ruins of this ancient lost race. Some of these buildings were sealed, apparently the desperate act of the vanished race who built them.

4) Some of the caverns--especially the extremely deep one's in which the ancient cities were found--were miles in diameter. Some were pitch black and so still and silent that a whisper could seemingly be heard miles away. Some of the upper caverns through which the 'tunnel' penetrated contained not only serpent-like creatures but also huge, hairy 'humanoids', perhaps tied-in with the Sasquatch family. These however were particularly violent in nature, possibly due to their environment and constant proximity to the serpents. Apparently there was an ongoing conflict between the "hairy" humanoids and the reptilian creatures in the caverns. According to David L., these hairy giants had faces "only a mother could love". On one occasion, their subterranean friends demonstrated some type of hand-held beam weapon by pointing it at one of the large serpents which could be seen through the tunnel "walls". The beam melted through the transparent barrier and the serpent disappeared in a sizzling glow of fire.

5) The group attempted to tell their story to friends of theirs on the surface. Apparently they made several trips after their first encounter with the blue-skinned race. However, their story was rejected and met with mockery and ridicule. They attempted to gather proof of their visit, and made a special trip "down under" just for that purpose, and succeeded in capturing a "giant cave moth" which roamed the deeper caverns. They placed it in a bag and upon returning topside they opened the bag and exposed the creature to the brilliant summer sun. For some reason, the sunlight had a disintegrating effect on the insect and before they could show it to anyone as proof it had dried up, become brittle and eventually crumbled to dust. After this, they gave up all attempts to get anyone to believe them, and resigned themselves to keep the secret among the twelve individuals who made up the exploration and support teams, that is, until David L. was given permission to reveal the story to the now late Charles A. Marcoux (Note: Marcoux incidentally died as a result of a 'heart attack', while exploring the surface areas around the Cushman caves. His wife described it as a sudden and irrational attack of fear resulting from a swarm of bees that Charles had encountered. One must realize that 'fear' is one of the most powerful weapons utilized by the 'infernals' who would attempt to blind mankind to conditions taking place in the inner world. However, by the grace of God Almighty, many have been able to defend themselves from the "body terror" utilized by the reptilians and which can often lead to paralysis, heart attacks, insanity or even suicide).

Eventually George Wight decided to remain below with their subterranean friends, and on their second-to-the-last trip they said their goodbyes. They allegedly made one more trip afterwards during which they met with their friend, who was doing well, for the last time. The peculiar thing about this incident, according to David, was that shortly after Wight had joined this underground society all evidence and records of him ever existing

began to mysteriously disappear from the surface. Birth certificates, school records, computer records, bank records, etc. all seemed to vanish, apparently the work of someone in a very influential position who was able to erase all evidence that Wight had ever lived. Some researchers still retain copies of George Wight's articles from the old UFO periodical, nevertheless. This would open up the possibility that this underground race closely monitors events on the surface, and even has "workers" in various influential positions who act as mediators in surface society. Everything points to the fact that this subterranean race prefers its privacy and does not wish to become involved in the political conflict and chaos which has for untold centuries plagued the surface world by warring factions constantly fighting over territorial rights, etc.

There is apparently much more to this account than we can relate here, however for various reasons, specific information other than that which we have just related will have to remain confidential. One can seemingly find "connections" between this account and others which have been related by other sources. For instance, John Lear has stated to some researchers that certain Apollo astronauts encountered another terran or earth-based race on the moon, a race that apparently made it there long before America did, and this 7 ft. tall, large-eyed race of humans seems to fit the same description as that given by David L. The people that Lear referred to allegedly have an alliance with the 'Blondes'. Is it possible that the underground people contacted by David know of and interact with the Telosians?

Whether this small item has any connection with the people allegedly encountered by the speleologists is uncertain, but it was related by John Keel in his book 'THE MOTHMAN PROPHECIES': "...The Cherokees have a tradition, according to Benjamin Smith Barton's 'NEW VIEWS OF THE ORIGINS OF THE TRIBES AND NATIONS OF AMERICA' (1798), that when they migrated to Tennessee they found the region inhabited by a weird race of white people who lived in houses and were apparently quite civilized. They had one problem: their eyes were very large and sensitive to light. They could only see at night..." Is it possible that these people may have later taken up a cave-dwelling lifestyle, if they had not done so previously, to allow themselves more comfortable living conditions?

'Leading Edge Research' made the following statements in one of their publications:

"ADDITIONAL COMMENTS ON ALIEN BASES - There is some confusion over the subject of alien bases in the United States. There seem to be many of them, but some of them seem to stand out functionally and operationally. IT WOULD SEEM THAT THE MAIN BASE is in NEW MEXICO with small detachments (human phrase) at Dreamland and Area 51 in general. Both of those locations are used to test-fly alien craft (PROJECT GRUDGE/REDLIGHT). The main location for the test flights appears to be Area 51. The EXCALIBUR project being developed AT LOS ALAMOS is designed to try and penetrate underground facilities, since they (grays) have entrenched themselves and no longer honor any of the dubious agreements which they have made with (certain) factions within the government."

In the May, 1989 issue of 'Leading Edge' (formerly 'Nevada Aerial Research') it was stated that: "...Information about underground bases at Edwards AFB (CA) are not new.

Stories have circulated for years. There was the lady whose mother used to work at the cafeteria who overheard people talking about aliens and disks. The constant stream of construction materials going out to the end of the base, but nothing showed up on the surface. NASA has a large underground base that has been there for years.

"Tube shuttles take personnel 50 miles to the other end of the base in the Tahachapi mountains. The underground base has been referred to as an underground city. It is even said that there are disks stored in glasslike enclosures under a vacuum to preserve them."

What may very well be a confirmation of the above appeared in the Dec. 1990 issue of a publication sent out by 'THE BORDERLAND SCIENCES RESEARCH FOUNDATION', which has for years been under the direction of Riley H. Crabb. The information was in the form of a letter which we quote here:

"I spent the weekend with a 'recent' Edwards AFB workman and his wife -- 'recent' because they are both repeat contactees and have become 'unmanageable' as the AFB management puts it. He was fired for blasting a Spybee with spray paint -- which I find funny and as classic as the graffiti on New York subway cars.

"'You did it on purpose,' they told him, and they knew of course, because the Spybees are telepathic (i.e. capable of 'tuning in' to Extremely Low Frequency or 'ELF' electro-encephalographic neuro-brain waves? - Branton) as well as camera equipment. They also carry microphones. We were all laughing as he told us how the little spray-painted gold orb, blinded, went bouncing off walls and posts and was quickly withdrawn from its spy mission. He said Spybees are about the size of a basketball. They fly by antigravity all over any 'Above Top Secret' installation. They dart soundlessly everywhere and hover between workers, sometimes programmed to harass the guys for fun, like bumping them in the rear end.

"No person (that) he and his friends knew about there was allowed to say one word to another while on the job. They would test by trying to write to each other in the floor dust. Within two or three strokes a Spybee would whiz around the corner, lock on to and stop above the writing. His last comment was to write and draw a great big 'screw you'.

"His painting work was part of an ONGOING EXCAVATION beneath Edwards AFB on the high desert in California. He and his crew were always blindfolded and strip-searched before transit. They couldn't even have watches. BY TAKING TURNS COUNTING IN THE ELEVATOR GOING TO AND FROM THE WORK SITE, THEY ESTIMATED IT MUST BE SOME 9,000 FEET DOWN, AT LEAST TWO MILES, AND THE TRIP TOOK ABOUT 15 MINUTES.

"Management accused him of doing it on purpose, and they knew... 'No, no. The Spybee kept bumpin' the back of my neck while I was sprayin.' After one real hard knock I whirled around with the spray gun still goin'."

"A prominent researcher with us that Saturday evening suggested, after careful questioning of the worker, THAT THE ELEVATOR ITSELF WAS ANTI-GRAVITIC, AS THERE WERE NO CABLES; SO THE ESTIMATED DISTANCE WAS AT BEST MINIMUM. ALL PRESENT CONFIRMED THE GOVERNMENT'S POSSESSION OF

PLASMOLE TUNNELING MACHINES (referred to as 'Terror drives' by Dulce Base employees - Branton) WHICH MELT A 50 FOOT HOLE THROUGH SOLID ROCK, AT A RATE OF ABOUT FIVE MILES PER HOUR.

"For part of the night we went 'foo chasing', their term for sightseeing UFOs. Tahachapi is where H. Hughes and Northrup Corporations and the USAF have just imported Delta Forces and fleets of black helicopters deployed by the government for top security events coverage. There is no doubt something major is going on up there, even that night.

"The researcher and his team were hoping to see the 30-FOOT VERSION OF THE SPYBEEES, as there are growing numbers of reports on these. THEY ARE DESIGNED TO FLY OVER YOUR HOUSE (electromagnetically cloaked in a similar manner as was discovered during the 'Philadelphia' experiments? - Branton), CARRYING SURVEILLANCE BEAMS FOR THOUGHT/EMOTION CONTROL AND BEHAVIOR MODIFICATION. (Note: Since thoughts and emotions may be to some extent electromagnetic in nature, it may be possible for them to be manipulated by EM rays - Branton).

"...I often see Terra now as in near-final throes of exactly the H.G. Wells scenario where the unwilling and witless 90% of mankind inhabits a play-fantasy world on Earth's surface, while the split-off race of highly technical degenerates (in league with and/or controlled by the serpent race - Branton), the Troggs, prey on them from underground..."

[Back To The Underworlds](#)

<http://www.geocities.com/Area51/Shadowlands/6583/under014.html>

## *Subterranean Worlds*

### *Ancient Subterranean Excavations Reveal the Existence of Advanced Races*

---

#### **Caverns, Dungeons and Labyrinths**

Crim-Ram Series FILE NO. 007

by Branton

In this 'File' we will examine reports of ancient subterranean excavations, the very reality of which presupposes the existence of scientifically-advanced races which reigned perhaps thousands of years ago, excavations that had apparently been constructed before the deluge and, in some cases, following it. The account which we record below appeared in the Oct. 1947 issue of 'AMAZING STORIES' science fiction/science fact magazine, pp. 171-172:

"Sirs:

"Norman Finley, a neighbor of a good friend of mine, told me about an experience he had which was rather unusual. He and a couple of other fellows were hunting down in the Big Bend country. I don't know whether you are familiar with the Big Bend or not, but there is no more wild or desolate area in the country. Rugged, mountainous, cut by canyons, there are innumerable parts of it which have never known the foot of man.

"It was in one of the most desirable areas that Finley and his companions found themselves. They had driven about ninety miles southwest of Marathon, Texas, a little town of about 700 people, at the foot of the Del Norte Mountains, 4000 feet high, and had then gone on afoot. The dirt road just petered out and they couldn't get their car further. They were hunting deer but had no luck. Just as they were about to call it a day, Finley spotted a mountain lion. He snapped a shot at it and knocked it over. But the lion just rolled over on his feet and started to leave those parts.

"Finley and the other fellows took after him, since it was obvious that he was wounded and not making very good time. They managed to keep him in sight for about a mile and were sure they had him when he ran into a box canyon. The lion, however, started up a faint trail up one side of the canyon to a small cave they could see about a hundred feet from the floor of the canyon. They followed him up this trail, but when they got to the cave--there was no lion!

"The cave was one of those dished-out affairs that are so common in the southwest. Eroded out of the face of a cliff and cup-shaped. The only access to it was by that trail. But this cave was a bit queer. It had a sand floor and was just about big enough to park twenty cars in it. On the cliff edge was a low STONE WALL. This in itself was not too unusual, because such caves have sheltered Indians for thousands of years.

"The thing that did make it unusual was that in the rear of it was a perfectly round hole. It was obvious that the lion had ducked into this.

"They approached it rather cautiously and tossed some stones in it to see if they could stir him up. But there was no response. They could hear the stones rolling and bouncing down an incline and the sound just got fainter and fainter until it died away altogether.

"They then approached the hole and peered down into it. It was perfectly round--also it was about four or five feet in diameter. They couldn't see very far down it, but it appeared to descend rather sharply and at a steady gradient. The fellows gathered some dry grass from the canyon floor and made some torches. The incline of the bore was too steep for them to climb down so they tossed the torches down it. They just slid down further and further and disappeared into the gloom. They never did see or hear of the lion again.

"At first they thought they had stumbled onto some old Spanish mine workings. But there was no sign anywhere of a dump that always goes with a mine. By all rights there should have been some sign of the earth and rock that had come out of that hole--but there wasn't.

"When they inspected the hole itself more closely, they were amazed at it's symmetry and at the consistency of the section of the bore as far as they could see down it. The fact that the bore was perfectly round puzzled them, too. If it was a mine shaft, it most certainly

wouldn't have been round, but instead would have been flat on the bottom. The fact that the shaft extended straight and unwavering as a rigid pipe was cause for further amazement. Since the fellows had no rope with them, which would have been needed to descend the shaft, as well as lights, they scratched their heads awhile and then left.

"Finley wanted to go back with equipment and see how far down the shaft went and what was at the bottom of it. But ranchers are busy people and he never went back. In the meantime he got pretty well broken up when a horse threw him and he now lives in Fort Worth while he has someone else to run the ranch. We talked rather idly about having a look at his cave someday. He says he knows exactly where it is and could find that box canyon with his eyes shut. So far we haven't done anything about it. But we may either this summer or next when we get time to go down to Big Bend.

"Finley told me this story about a year before even you heard of Shaver so you can be sure he wasn't influenced by the 'Shaver Mystery.' In fact, I don't believe he has ever heard of the 'Shaver Mystery,' even to this day.

"E. Stanton Brown., 4931 Bryce Ave., Fort Worth 7, Texas."

Another letter, dated Jan. 1948, appeared in 'AMAZING STORIES' magazine also confirming that strange 'para-speleon' phenomena exists in the western part of Texas. However the artifacts described in the following letter seem to involve areas north of Big Bend, not far from the Guadalupe Mts. and the New Mexico border. Perhaps this account is a partial confirmation of a subterranean connection between areas BELOW the Big Bend of Texas and the Guadalupe range of southern New Mexico - northwestern Texas. Quoting from the letter:

"Sirs:

"Since I have been an interested reader of AMAZING STORIES since my high school days (1929) when A-S was a bigger magazine, I feel like one of the family when I read the letters in the discussion pages. The temptation has arisen many times to write a letter to you concerning some hotly discussed matter, but something has always prevented me from getting at it. However, the October Issue pushed me too far, and here goes.

"The mysterious cave Mr. E. Stanton Brown spoke of in his letter is not exactly news to me. In 1938 a party of six of my friends and myself spent seven months in that area of Texas, and upper Mexico. We were testing an electronic instrument that we had developed, and needed lots of space and some mineral deposits for the various tests. So, we got rather well acquainted with the Big Bend country, and the Figure 2 Ranch north of there. We arrived there in January and camped IN THE SIERRA BLANCAS, storing a lot of our equipment at the town of Van Horn. By March we had gotten deep into the rugged country and as I recall, it was about the middle of March we stumbled onto this cave (or a twin) that Mr. Brown speaks of in his letter. Everyone was so dumbfounded by it that we spent the better part of the rest of the month in making a thorough investigation. We penetrated the shaft to a distance of 870 feet and at about 650 feet found some very finely executed writing on the right wall at eye level, IN WHAT RESEMBLES CUNEIFORM. At 800 feet one of the party fell over a cloth lying in the dust, and upon

closer examination, it was found to be part of a blue shirt, of fairly recent manufacture; indicating that someone else had been this far in recent times.

This and an empty pint whisky bottle dated 1897 was all we located to indicate recent occupation. Of course in a country where desperadoes such as Black Jack, Billy the Kid, etc., hid out where they could and the more solitary the better, such a find was not too surprising.

"At about 780 feet the floor dips more sharply downward and at near 900 feet progress is very hazardous due to moisture and increased slant downward. We carried rocks from the opening, and rolled them from the point where we could no longer walk, but they simply faded out with a rumble after a few seconds. We tried rolling flaming yucca stumps to see if, perhaps, we might determine more about the bore further on, but this proved to be futile, since the stumps burned poorly at best, probably due to bad air. It was very stuffy and hot after the first 300 feet from the opening. We held a powwow to try and figure out how we could go further down, but the only thing would have been lots of lariat ropes, or a long steel cable, and neither was available nearer than some 50 miles.

"If Mr. Finley had taken the time to go hunting up in the Figure 2 Ranch territory he might have run across another, and to me more interesting, cave than the Big Bend one. About 62 miles (north - Branton) from the town of Van Horn you go through the salt-flat country, where the Salt Wars of the old west occurred. Westward, some 8 or 9 miles from the road is the Apache Canyon country, and as rugged as anywhere on the face of the globe. In an offshoot of Apache Canyon to the south, is an almost impassable gash called Hell Canyon. The walls of this canyon rise precipitously for at least 1000 feet and top out on Apache Peak on one side and an old Indian ceremonial ground on the other side. More desolate country would be hard to imagine. Coyotes and mountain lions are plentiful, and panthers no novelty. I have seen as many as 34 deer in a herd down below on the grassy ledge sloping down toward the canyon floor. Of course, further up toward the box end of the canyon it was much too rugged for deer, but a few mountain sheep are seen, (it was) in the wildest part of the canyon that the other cave was found, in fact we almost fell into it. The high grass about the opening hid the dished out entrance.

"We were at an elevation of approximately 7000 feet and going was tough, especially with a pack, and we had stopped to rest when one of the party remarked that it 'sounded hollow' when any of us talked. Of course, we all yapped away at the same time trying to figure if this was so, and sure enough it was. Further investigation located the hole some six feet to the left of where we had stopped. It was roughly oval in shape, some 30 by 18 feet; and bridged in the center the short way by a natural rock arch heavy enough to support an elephant. In the center of the arch were 3 deep grooves caused we hazarded, by rope passing over the arch. We spent several hours in investigating the surrounding terrain to see if there might be any other entrances to the cave, but found none. It sloped sharply from the opening down about 200 feet, and then the bore disappeared, curving upward. We succeeded in getting down to the first level, by tying all our ropes together, and subsequently investigated a lot of it.

"Threading through the soil were long stringers of quartz, but oddly enough at the same time there were chunks of rock as big as a piano that were solid masses of seashells.

Quite a lot of pottery both broken and whole, was found. The most interesting thing was, however, that the farther we went the colder it got. Also there was a sound of either rushing wind or water, which got louder the lower we went. We came upon two human skeletons not over 500 feet from the entrance, but they must have been very old, as the bones crumbled at the touch. Everything was covered with a deep dust after passing the bend and no indication of any living thing having passed there was ever noted. It was very dark and depressing, and the chill was very penetrating. When you consider that the outside temperature was near 100 degrees, you can imagine how we were dressed. We had three flashlights, one a five cell, and after a while it was all that was left that would give a decent light. Down at what we estimated as 1200 feet from the opening we came smack up against a smooth stone wall. That was it. The end. None of us would admit it was natural, it was too smooth and perfect, and look as we would we could not find a single flaw or crack in it. It was of a marble-like texture and some eight or nine feet high in the center and around eleven wide. By placing our ears to the rock surface **THE ROARING ON THE OTHER SIDE BECAME MUCH LOUDER, AND THE ROCK WAS QUITE COLD TO THE TOUCH.** There was natural marble near there, in Marble Canyon, where marble was once taken out in large quantities, and so the rock was native rock, I'm sure. Since the remaining light was all we had except matches, we voted to get back to the opening as soon as possible, and after a hard struggle upgrade we got back to daylight and held a conference. We decided to bed down and talk it over further the next day, as it was getting late.

"However, the next day we were inclined to look foolishly at each other and claim it was all our imagination thinking there was anything strange on the other side of the barrier, and it was just another one of those many caves in the country. Carlsbad is just 65 miles north of there, **AND THE WHOLE COUNTRY IS NO DOUBT HONEYCOMBED UNDERNEATH.**

"We finished our experiments and left, late in July but I have never been able to forget the caves, and **THE ODD SOUNDS ON THE OTHER SIDE OF THAT BARRIER.** Or for that matter, the barrier itself, for it was too perfect to be natural, I believe. Or, maybe I've just read too many **AMAZING STORIES,**' and am inclined to wild ideas. As the Mexicans say, Quien sabe?

"Some day I'm going to write you a ding-how Scientifiction on something-or-other, and then place it and my rejection notice among my souvenirs. Maybe then I can go on reading **AMAZING STORIES** in peace, without wanting to dash off a dinger.

"K. A. Gookin., Carmel Radio & Sound Service., Box 1865., Carmel, California."

(Note: It is unlikely that the writers of the two letters which we have just quoted would be able to be reached at the addresses given. We've merely given them as they appeared in **AMAZING STORIES** magazine in the late 1940's. - Branton)

At this point we will mention several miscellaneous items connected with paraspeleology, speleanthropology, subsurface phenomena and related subjects:

A researcher by the name of Frank D. Adams has written on the result of his personal scientific experiments which may prove that giant cavities exist in granite at depths of more than 11 miles, conclusions which have also been supported by Louis V. King, a mathematician who calculated that, at normal temperatures, a cavity would exist at a depth of between 17.2 and 20.9 miles. The authors' findings are also supported by the recently discovered "16 Rouse Belts" which give planes of fracture penetrating the globe.

Dr. Ron Anjard, in an article in the Summer, 1978 issue of PURSUIT Magazine, claimed personal knowledge of 44 underground cities beneath the surface of North America, six of which are alleged to be on the West Coast. His information allegedly comes from anonymous American Indian sources. When we relate this to the large number of migration legends (to and from cavern realms) which exist among the native Amerindians, then we may conclude that certain tribes still retain intimate knowledge of underground civilizations related to them via distant ancestral links. Some of the elders of these different tribes, others have suggested, may in fact maintain present contact with several of these cavern civilizations. **There are some indications that some such 'tribes' literally moved underground as a result of the encroaching Anglosaxon civilization upon the America's.** Similar allegations are made in relation to South and Central America as well.

Interviews with survivors of a mine explosion in Dec. 26, 1945, known as the "Belva Mine Disaster", appeared in the Dec. 1981 - Jan. 1982 issues of newspapers in Pineville, Kentucky and elsewhere. The interviews revealed that some of the trapped men saw a "door" in one of the walls open, and a man dressed like a "lumberjack" emerged from a well-lighted room. After assuring the men that they would be rescued, the strange visitor returned to the room and closed the door. These "lumberjack-like" entities have been described by miners on other parts of the country and in other nations as well. There seems to be some confusion as to whether they are physical or parapsychical entities. A somewhat similar incident allegedly took place several years ago near Shipton, Pennsylvania. Of the three victims of this particular mine disaster, only two were rescued. However both described a similar para-physical encounter with strange 'men' who entered the caverns and gave light to the two trapped miners and told them that they would be rescued. They were uncertain whether the entities were humans or supernatural beings however, as much of their collective "hallucination" contained both physical as well as supernatural elements. The bluish "light" which illuminated the room, they said, was real, but other holographic-like visuals that appeared on the walls, when touched by their hands, either disappeared or revealed solid rock behind.

R. L. Blain-Sanders, in an article titled 'TUNNELS AND CAVERNS BENEATH NEW YORK CITY,' which appeared in the Fall, 1981 issue of SHAVERTRON, described the author's knowledge of a large triangular system of tunnels utilized by a 'Masonic lodge', deep below the surface of New York City. Could this have any connection to the other 'rumors' to the effect that cavernous regions exist below Manhattan? For instance, in 1962 Con Edison, while drilling a test hole in the north of East River Park, New York City, broke through to open space about 200 feet below. Also, there are the allegations of Morris Doreal that the Church of St. John the Divine in New York was built over ancient tunnels leading to a dome-shaped city abandoned by antediluvian 'Atlanteans' and later,

apparently, re-established by post- deluvians. Then we have the accounts of thousands of people who have literally and mysteriously disappeared off the face of the earth in and around New York City.

Raymond Bond, in an article titled 'SUBTERRANEAN SAUCERS - GLOBAL NETWORK OF UFO BASES', which appeared in SAGA'S UFO ANNUAL 1980 (Brooklyn, N.Y.), described caves within Mt. Sombrero in the Tampica area of Mexico, from which sounds resembling those made by 'hydroelectric generating equipment' can be heard. Also, inhabitants of the interior of Mt. Kilimanjaro were also described. Kilimanjaro is one of the highest peaks in Africa.

Bob Borino, in his article, 'UFO BASES FOUND IN ANTARCTICA' (Globe, Jan. 18, 1983) quotes from certain scientists who believe that a subterranean UFO Base is located beneath the strange 'Polynya Sea' in the Antarctica's Weddell Sea region.

Malcolm W. Browne, in his article 'UNDERGROUND TUNNELS THREATEN TOWN IN HUNGARY'S WINE COUNTRY' (NEW YORK TIMES, Nov. 8, 1967, p.2) tells of over 60 miles of ancient tunnel systems of unknown origin and purpose which have been discovered beneath the town of Eger, Hungary, some of which have collapsed. The civilization which built the tunnels must have been fairly advanced in engineering and science in order to create such a subterranean system.

Karl Brugger, in his book '**THE CHRONICLE OF AKAKOR**' (Boohi Tree Books., Delacorte Press., N.Y., 230 pp), gives the history--as given to the author by one of their chiefs--of the Ugha Mongulala tribesman, whose ancestors were allegedly part of a vast empire which covered South America in ancient times. Some of these ancient people, the chief claimed, left the planet in aerial vessels to explore other parts of the solar system and beyond, leaving behind vast subterranean cities beneath the Andes mountains and western Brazil. In 1971, due to the constant encroachment of white settlers or invaders into their territory, 30,000 survivors of the Ugha Mongulala allegedly escaped to this ancient system of underground cities, consisting of 13 separate subterranean complexes all connected by tunnels, one of which is said to extend to Lima, and others of which are located throughout the Andes Mountain range of Peru.

Michael Burke, in his article 'GREEN THING SPARKS RUMORS' (THE VALLEY NEWS DISPATCH, New Kensington, Tarentum and Vandergrift, PA., Mar. 5, 1981 issue) described a small creature, allegedly 'half humanoid - half dinosaur' which was seen emerging from a sewer tunnel in New Kensington. A group of children chased the infant or young dinosauroid creature, one of them momentarily grabbing it at which point it let out a squealing or screeching sound, and then slipped from his hands and escaped back into the sewer tunnel. This incident took place some miles west of Dixonville, PA., where in 1944 several miners were killed or turned up missing as a result of encounters with 'alien' creatures in one particular mineshaft there. Any connection?

SAGA Magazine's 'UFO ANNUAL - 1980', P.4, under the heading 'CAVE MARTIANS', described a bizarre encounter with subterranean creatures which seemed to have consisted of some type of automaton-like forms, perhaps on a reconnaissance mission from an underground civilization. The story involved a tunnel near Xucurus,

Argentina(?), some 90 miles from Buenos Aires. The tunnel was discovered by agriculturist Gerardo Cordeire, and found to contain nine connecting passages and strange inscriptions on the walls. From it's entrance "men nine feet tall, green, with antennas on their heads, and square legs" were seen to emerge, and which, according to HUNDREDS of witnesses from the town and nearby locals, resembled enormous "portable radios."

Dr. Earlyne Chaney, in an article titled 'ODYSSEY INTO EGYPT', in her occult-oriented magazine VOICE OF ASTARA (May, 1982) tells of a discovery she and researcher Bill Cox was shown in Egypt. These were two tunnels, neither of which had been fully explored. One was in the temple of Edfu between Luxor and Cairo in the ruins of El Tuna Gabel; and the other near Zozer's Step Pyramid at Cairo near Memphis-Saqqarah, within the tomb of the Bull, called "Serapium". The Egyptian government sealed both tunnels because of fears of certain archaeologists who alleged that they "lead too deeply down into the depths of the earth," and because they found the earth to be "honeycombed with passages leading off into other depths," and the possibility of explorers becoming lost. If such labyrinths do exist, then it may explain one story which alleged that men dressed like "ancient Egyptians" have been seen deep in unexplored tunnels near Cairo, as well as possible confirmation of the story which appeared in Nevada Aerial Research's 'LEADING EDGE' Publication to the effect that the U.S.(?) **Government secretly maintains a huge base within a cavern of tremendous size (several miles in diameter) beneath the desert sands of Egypt.** Could this tie in with the vague references to a subterranean society(s) referred to by certain people 'in the know' which is/are known as the 'Phoenix Empire' and/or the 'Gizeh People'?

Articles in the WASHINGTON STAR-NEWS, July 25, 1973 and Aug. 15, 1973, tell of the discovery of an unexplored network of ancient, artificial tunnels during construction of a parking lot in Crofton, Maryland. Subsequent construction covered the tunnel entrances before the system could be completely investigated.

Leon Davidson, in an early issue of 'FLYING SAUCERS' Magazine, spoke of a large network of "underground tunnels in the California desert, at Camp Irwin, near Barstow." This may tie-in with an item related by a Los Angeles municipal water director, as related in an early issue of Richard Toronto's SHAVERTRON letter-zine, stating that this water director knew of 5 large underground rivers which ran beneath the Mojave desert, and that die-traces showed that at least one of these emptied into the Pacific ocean through openings in the continental slopes (One source stated that such a river exited in the Gulf of California. Other sources speak of a "Kokoweef" river-system which is alleged to lie below Kokoweef peak just east of FORT Irwin, which looked--according to it's alleged discoverer, a Mr. Earl Dorr, and a few "Indians" who also claimed to have been in it--like a "Grand Canyon" underground. It allegedly consists of a river chasm generally 500 ft. wide and over a thousand feet high-deep, sided by steep tiered-shelved underground cliffs, huge stalactites and cataracts. Also, the alluvial sands on the 'beaches' along the river, which allegedly hold a large percentage of gold dust, are said to be several feet deep. The entrance to this cavern was allegedly dynamited shut by Mr. Dorr to protect anyone else from getting to "his" gold. There is in fact evidence that Dorr did dynamite shut the lower level of 'Kin Sabe' cave in Kokoweef Peak, and there are present-day

attempts to break through into this underground system. The water of the river allegedly rose and fell with the tides, suggesting that a very large body of water might exist upstream, that is if Dorr's account as well as the accounts of the Indians were not fabricated). The municipal water director, according to the SHAVERTON article, spoke with a man who claimed that he was hired several years ago by the government to look for water sources for Ft. Irwin. He alleged to have explored an old mine in the area and found that deep down, the shaft intersected with an ancient earth fault or chasm-like cave which continued horizontally for a considerable distance. This government employee followed the chasm and allegedly emerged onto the bank of a huge underground river-cave over a quarter of a mile wide! The tremendous water flow--possibly originating from the waters that apparently disappear beneath the Great Basin, the Nevada and Mojave deserts?--could have 'fed' the water needs of all of Southern California.

Paul Doerr (not to be confused with Mr. DORR referred to above), in issue number 6 of his Newsletter 'UNKNOWN', related the tradition concerning a race of human giants which, according to stories in the Carolinas islands and especially Papua, allegedly went underground in ancient times. Once inhabitants of a lost island-continent called "Chamat," they will, according to legend, one day emerge. This legend is wide-spread throughout Malaysia, which incidentally contains the largest "officially recognized" cavern chamber, the "Sarowak Chamber" on the island of Borneo in the Malaysian islands. It is said to be 230 ft. wide by 980 ft. long and nowhere less than 270 ft. high, large enough to easily hold within itself the two previous contenders for the world's largest OFFICIAL chamber - Carlsbad's "Big Room" in New Mexico and the "Salle de la Verna" in the Pierre Saint-Martin caverns in France. Yankee stadium could fit in one end of the Sarowak chamber with room to spare! The same issue of 'UNKNOWN' also reports on the discovery of massive caverns in Toulumne Co., California, by three Oakland miners. The caverns were so extensive that a man would have to "take grub for a week, and plan to explore for a month."

The '**BOOK OF DYZAN**', which has been translated from ancient manuscripts, tells of intellectually sophisticated humans from an ancient earth-born society who abandoned the surface of the earth, "depriving the impure human race of their knowledge," and leaving in flying craft to rejoin their land "of iron and metal."

'FAR OUT' Magazine's April, 1982 issue carried an article titled, 'BOTTOMLESS PIT FOUND ON THE OCEANS FLOOR'. The article tells of a huge man-made opening in the ocean floor between Panama and the Galapagos Islands, which scientists say receives a constant flow of ocean water which is being sucked through the hole and into the crust beneath the ocean floor.

Raymond A. Fowler, in his book '**THE ANDREASSON AFFAIR**' (Prentice-Hall, Englewood Cliffs, New Jersey. 1979) gives an extensive description of an abduction experience of one woman who was taken by the "Gray-type" aliens and later returned to her house. These creatures, according to Fowler and Andreasson, had the ability to travel between stars but her account seems to suggest that their ORIGINAL point of origin is within a cavernous subterranean realm. For instance, here are some quotes given by Betty Andreasson concerning her abduction: "(The aliens had) Large, wraparound... eyes (which) stood in stark contrast to less prominent facial features: holes for noses and ears,

and fixed, scarlike mouths. They wore shiny dark blue, form-fitting uniforms... Their three-digit (reptilian?) hands were GLOVED." The creatures seemed claylike, "...They're scary," Betty said, "I don't see any hair... (their heads were like) an upside-down pear... I didn't even see a nose." She described an "eye slit" and said that the creatures took her from her house and into some type of craft. After a while the craft apparently connected to some type of dock somewhere on or below the earth, beyond which was a tunnel. She was put into an enclosed chair-like transparent container which filled with some kind of fluid, and was then taken through a "...subway tunnel... it's like a track we're going on... walking, gliding--or something." She said that her willpower seemed mesmerized by powerful influences beyond her ken. "We would pass other tunnel openings. I could tell that there were other tunnels there... passed out of the tunnel into a place where the atmosphere was a vibrating red color... like infrared light... there are buildings--square buildings with openings... In the red part... there wasn't any vegetable life... we are coming to where there are some beings! And they've skinny arms and legs and kind of a full body. And their eyes can move every which way, and they can climb just like monkeys. They climb up quickly and swiftly and down and around and in and out of windows. They are all over the place!" Betty and the two alien creatures that abducted her approached a circular membrane and passed through it without resistance into a place with a greenish atmosphere. She looked down upon strange plants, a mist-enshrouded sea, and a distant complex of buildings. The sheer vastness of the alien realm overwhelmed her senses. The place reminded her of "some legendary underground kingdom." She continued, "There's a lot of different stuff I'm seeing... plants are different. It's like, uh--long stems that come out in loops and the different colors. But they are green! Other similar elevated tracks (like the one she was on) criss-crossed the area." They stopped to let something go by. Betty just watched, dumbfounded. Later she found nothing in her vocabulary to describe it... "I don't know what it is! It is something like--I can't ever explain it... I'm seeing a pyramid--it has one big flat side and the others indent, sort of. We are going over it, high in the 'sky'... There were (high buildings) like, you know, a lot of science fiction. Big cities with all these different bridges all around... I don't remember seeing any activity. It was too far away. That was way over to the side there, way over to the side. The pyramid was closer than that... When we reached the destination, we went through the black tunnel (following which she was taken through some type of occult ritual in which she had a vision of a 'Phoenix' bird which was consumed in fire and then emerged from the ashes in the form of a worm which began to grow slowly into the 'bird' shape. Mr. Fowler suggested that this may have been a feigned 'religious experience' orchestrated by the aliens in order to play on her emotions and gain Betty's assistance)... "They seemed long," speaking of the tunnel which she was taken through. After the occult "initiation" or ritual she was taken back the way she came, "It felt like pressure or something on my head," speaking of the strange force which glued her to the escalator-walk contrivance, "My head was hurting and heavy from it, whatever it was... I COULD HAVE BEEN INSIDE THE EARTH... SOMEHOW I BELIEVE WE WERE IN THE CENTER OF THE EARTH." She retraced with the two alien kidnappers the way back through the greenish cavern where the mist-covered sea was located, "the sea was off to the side, and there was mist, and then it had that narrow land and it did finally go onto some kind of surface and was going up... It (the underground sea) seemed very dark, but it was green--very, very dark. It was choppy. After it had cleared, it looked

smooth, sort of smooth glass... I'm going back on that thing (the track), and, ah, I'm stopping..." The two creatures retraced their original path via the 'black' track they had traveled on earlier. Betty began speculating out loud concerning the heaviness that she felt in her legs. It seemed as if the force that kept Betty glued to a position just above the track was also responsible for causing her severe physical discomfort. "I think maybe why my feet are like that--I must be, uh, glued to that thing, because there are no railings and there's nothing holding me in. And I'm just gliding along that thing, and it's not very wide... And that green and blue-colored atmosphere, it's just beautiful (the underground land was very beautiful in some parts, but the alien creatures themselves which had apparently taken control of these areas at some time in the past were described by Betty as being frightening-looking)... The green atmosphere was the sky, and then it was also blue... and green and blue were mixed. It was bright, bright green--emerald green--and then it was like blue... I don't remember any shadows." She also claimed to have seen some crystalline structures, as well as the pyramid structure once again, "there's that pyramid again. Ah, it has the white on the edges. And that (sculptured) head and those bridges, or something or other. I don't know. There was--uh, there was water that was very choppy when I was going, like a big sea. There was land, but it was, if you call it a horizon, it was like there was mist all around... I saw the color of the--fish, bird fish... Off to the side there is some kind of--something like a city or something. I don't know what it is. It is too different than I've ever seen before. I just can't explain it... And we are still going through that red atmosphere. We're coming to the circle again. And it's like a mirror. We're going through something like a mirror." In an instant, they were plunged into darkness. Once again, Betty glided along the dark rock-hewn tunnel, "And we are going along this dark tunnel and, uh, we're just gliding along. And just keep going and going and going, it seems like. We are in there a long time, it feels like... They (the aliens) have powers. **THEY CAN MAKE YOU THINK ONE THING AND YET MEAN ANOTHER. I DON'T LIKE THEM CONTROLLING MY WORDS!**" Betty said during one "regressive hypnosis" session **DURING WHICH** time an alien force began taking control of her mind and spoke through her in a mechanical voice. During this session she said: "They have powers. They can control the wind, the water and even lightning... They are (using me), and I don't know how they're doing it... They travel freely. They travel freely throughout the whole earth." When she was asked by one therapist if they traveled **INSIDE** the earth, Betty replied, "Since the beginning of time... some come from realms where you cannot see their hiding place. Some come from the very earth... there is a place on this very earth that you don't know of." In **'THE ANDREASSON AFFAIR, PHASE II'** (Prentice-Hall, Englewood Cliffs, NJ., 1982., 278 pp. ch. 6-8) Mr. Fowler reveals even more connections between Betty Andreasson's abduction by the "Gray" manipulators and a subterranean cavern region. Apparently, as in the case of many abductees, she was being manipulated by the creatures since a young age. One encounter took place at the age of 12 with a small hominoid creature which emerged from a hole in a mountain near Westminster, England. During another abduction experience later in her life she was allegedly taken to huge caverns in which she saw a crystal "museum" or computer containing records of past events, etc., as well as underground mountains, valleys and enormous "icicles".

Janice Goad, in an article titled 'CAVE LEGENDS OF THE CENTRAL APPALACHIANS' (which appeared in the **TECH TROGLODYTE**, a National

Speleological Society affiliate, Vol. 12, No. 2 issue), revealed several accounts of strange caves and unusual stories surrounding them. Among these accounts are those concerning "Devil's Slide Cave," six miles southwest of Tazewell, VA., and "Stoven's Cave" in Kentucky. From both these caves strange, unusual sounds have been heard to emerge.

Walley George, in his article, 'PILGRIMAGE TO THE DEVIL' (FATE Magazine., Aug. 1957., pp. 38-52) tells of a cave in a mountain 5 miles south of Ojinago, Mexico, which is believed to be the home of "devils". According to the account, many "witches" who have fallen under the control of these creatures make regular pilgrimages to the site.

Virgil T. Godwin, in his book **'BIZARRE SHAVER'** (Published by the author., Salem, OR 1982) tells of Mr. Godwin's contacts with a subterranean race, his experience with "UFO's", etc. The author, of gypsy background, allegedly had connections with UFO occupants, Sasquatch, etc., since he was a child, and has allegedly taken 1000's of photographs of their aerial craft, and has appeared on talk shows and has claimed continuous contact with the UFO occupants. The occupants are said to be a race of about 8 foot tall humans who live in tunnels and underground cities centered below Lincoln County, Oregon., with at least one (probably more) connected subterranean colonies beneath other parts of the Western Hemisphere, one of these being within certain caves in or near a canyon in the central region of Baja, California. They claim to be technically advanced, and warn of their ability to help defend North America in the event it is invaded by a foreign government (and/or by other-planetary entities also?). This underground race allegedly has ties and backgrounds that are connected to old Amerindian civilizations. They are able to speak English, but their dialect is that of 'American Indian'.

Vaughn M. Greene, in a letter which appeared in issue No. 14 of Richard Toronto's SHAVERTRON letter-zine, spoke of a possible 'entrance' to cavern systems near the bottom of the elevator landing in the Hoover dam near Las Vegas, which holds back Lake Mead. Early construction workers allegedly broke into (and probably re-sealed) large caverns while blasting out the cliffs near the base of the dam. In the lower elevator landing, according to Mr. Greene, there was a "wild tile inlay on the floor, with signs of the zodiac and all sorts of stuff suggesting an entrance." He suggests a possible connection between this and the caverns which the workers broke into. Could this tie-in with accounts given by others that an underground base exists beneath Page, Arizona connecting the S-4 underground base in Nevada and the Dulce underground base in New Mexico via tube-line? (the Glen Canyon - Lake Powell Hydroelectric dam in Page 'might' provide a power source for such an underground installation) This is however only supposition, however Navaho dam is alleged to supply some power to the upper human-occupied levels of the Dulce Base, which may suggest that similar bases are at least partially powered by hydroelectric dams.

An early issue of the 'Shaver Mystery Magazine' gave an account of two boys who uncovered a 'thermal bore' in a cave near Pittsburgh, PA. Their dog ran into the tunnel, a few minutes following which they 'heard' a deep, low vibrating sound whereupon the dog in absolute terror darted up from the tunnel, scratched its way past the boys and was later found shivering at home. The cave was subsequently covered up by a road crew.

Howard F. Griffin, in a letter which appeared in the 'SHAVER MYSTERY MAGAZINE', Vol. 1., No. 2., 1947, p. 35., told of vast caverns within the interior of Pike's Peak in Colorado, as evidenced by occasional sounds of subterranean 'rock-falls' which have been heard to emanate from the bowels of the mountain. Other sources have confirmed this phenomena also.

Paxson C. Hayes, in writings of his which appeared in early issues of BSRF's (Borderland Sciences Research Foundation's) publication 'ROUND ROBIN,' referred to the discovery which he claimed to have made of the mummified remains of a race of 7-ft. tall humans who lived in huge caverns 9,000 feet below the surface of North America.

The Vol. 2, No. 1 issue of THE HOLLOW HASSLE Newsletter (formerly published by Tal and Mary LeVesque), told of the discovery of a mysterious stone staircase leading to a network of underground caverns beneath the Caribbean island of Bonaire.

Charles Hillinger, in his article, 'AN UNDERGROUND CATHEDRAL' (Los Angeles Times., Mar. 2., 1975) describes a mysterious maze of underground tunnels and rooms discovered beneath the surface of Eureka, Nevada.

Dana Howard, in her book, '**VESTA, THE EARTH BORN VENUSIAN**' (Essene Press., Corpus Christi, TX. 1950), includes a chapter which tells of a remnant of an ancient civilization still in existence underground, within one of the mountain ranges adjacent to the Imperial Valley area of California.

The I.N.F.O. JOURNAL (Published by the Inter-National Fortean Organization., Arlington, VA), Vol. 2., No. 2, p.7., relates "Prof. Hapgood's" discovery of a stone staircase leading down into the earth at Acambaro in central Mexico, now filled with hard-packed volcanic material. The conclusions are that the stairway is very ancient and must lead somewhere! The site is located on the "Mizquiz" property.

John A. Keel, on p. 145 of his book 'THE MOTHMAN PROPHECIES' (Signet Books., N.Y., 1975.), states: "An engineer Rex Ball swears he came upon a mysterious underground installation in Georgia in 1940, manned by small Oriental-looking men in coveralls and a few American military officers. When he was caught in the tunnels, one of the officers issued the curt command, 'Make him look like a nut!' He woke up in a field, uncertain whether his experience had been real or a dream. That seems to be the battle cry of the phenomena. 'Make him look like a nut!'" And on p. 192 of the same book: "...A man on Long Island (informed Keel that he) was frantically making preparations for the big evacuation. He even traveled to a secret underground flying saucer base, in a black Cadillac with a dashboard festooned with flashing colored lights, where he participated in a 'dry run.' Other normal human beings were present, he said, and manned various kinds of equipment to communicate with the rescue spaceships somewhere overhead. 'Funny thing, John,' he mused, 'all the equipment was manufactured by Western Electric, Hallicrafters, and other U.S. companies.'"

David Klein, in an article titled 'AMATEUR EXPLORER DISCOVERS VAST CAVERN SYSTEM CONTAINING UNDERGROUND RIVER OF GOLD' (NATIONAL ENQUIRER., Feb. 4., 1973 pp. 16-17), related the discovery of a strange

cavern system located some 300 miles northwest of Vancouver, British Columbia, Canada. Within the cavern-system there were allegedly large amounts of gold, huge unidentifiable human or Sasquatch-like footprints, white-albino frogs and perfectly round stones and underground rivers. **These findings, according to the article, were immediately suppressed by the Canadian government** soon after they were discovered.

Tal LeVesque, in an article titled 'UNDERGROUND UFO BASE SUSPECTED BY OFFICIALS IN WASHINGTON', which appeared in the Vol. 2., No. 2., issue of THE HOLLOW HASSLE, described a suspected UFO Base which is believed by some to lie under the Yakima Indian Reservation southeast of Tacoma, Washington.

Abraham Mansfield of 'The Lemurian Foundation - Mt. Shasta' located in Redding, California, published a book in 1970 called **'THE GOLDEN GODDESS OF THE LEMURIANS.'** The book is based on the author's alleged contacts with native tribesmen in the area who revealed to him the secret of the ancient 'Lemurian' treasure caves in the area, allegedly containing gold and treasure from the ancient lost civilization. Chapter One of the volume gives the account of a man who was allegedly led into the bowels of Mt. Shasta and into a subterranean city and gardens producing gigantic vegetables, a mile or so under the surface of the mountain. This seems to confirm what has been written by others concerning an apparent ante-deluvian city, long since re-established and occupied by a "tall, blond race" of humans who are able to travel to other planetary bodies via crystalectromagnetic, mercury, ion and tachyon propelled craft. Their central or capital city is allegedly called "Telos" and lies about a mile under Mt. Shasta, and is said to contain vast underground hydroponic gardens.

The 'MILWAUKEE JOURNAL', Feb. 18, 1983., printed an article titled, 'MANY CAVE DWELLINGS IN CHINA'. The article referred to 4 million Chinese people who are said to live in cavern dwellings, according to THE PEOPLE'S DAILY, a Chinese Newspaper. There are hundreds of miles of inhabited, artificially constructed "national defense" tunnels and chambers beneath Peking alone.

Charles A. Marcoux published in 1981 a book called **'THE HIDDEN CITY OF CHIHUATLAN'**. It described an account of a sealed cave in a certain canyon near old Sonora, Mexico, which is said to lead to the ancient Aztec underworld, or 'The Hidden City of Chihuahatlan.' Marcoux also referred to an entrance to a tunnel in the Franklin Mts. near El Paso, Texas., and an unexplored cave with large stone steps leading deep into the earth near El Moro National Monument northeast of Pie Town, New Mexico. In connection with the possible Aztec "underworld", one source some years ago wrote a manuscript in which he hypothesized that the legendary "Seven Caves" of Aztec tradition might lie beneath mountains adjacent to the "Salton Sea" of southern California. Certain persons have allegedly heard subterranean "rock slides" within a mountain in this area.

In relation to Abraham Mansfield's account mentioned earlier, another man has written a book titled **'LEMURIA - FACT OR FICTION?'** The author, Robert Maxwell, claims to have been taken into the inner colony of Mt. Shasta and shown by one of its inhabitants the city and ancient domain which was once inhabited by a lost race.

Clair Millet, in his article 'LEGEND OF THE TUARTUMS - OF THE VALLEY OF THE SUN' (2-part article appearing in the Spring and Summer 1981 issues of the 'New Atlantean Journal'), tells of the legend of a race of 'little people' or 'Tuar-Tums,' who allegedly live below the Salt River Valley, or Valley of the Sun, in Arizona. Other sources, incidentally, claim that 'little men' have been seen on top of ridges in the nearby Superstition Mts. area, as if they were guarding something (an entrance to an underground system perhaps?).

The book 'THE LIFE OF THE CAVE', by Mohr and Paulson (1966), gives evidence of extended animal migration underground beneath the central-eastern U.S., indicated by troglodytes (animal) found in widely separated caves which are identical with each other, indicating past inter-connections which have become blocked. These caverns are found from time to time during deep drilling operations.

An article in the Feb. 19, 1976 issue of the 'HOUSTON POST', titled 'MOUNTAIN CAVE HAS MYSTERY, MAYBE MONSTER', tells of the discovery by scientists of a cave, "the oldest in the world... with smooth vaulted roofs and level floors," (i.e. artificial) located inside Mt. Autana in the Orinoco jungle, 400 miles south of Caracas, Venezuela, and believed by locals to be the home of a giant human being(s).

The Summer, 1980 issue of the 'NEW ATLANTIAN JOURNAL', p. 48, relates the account of a Mexican by the name of Jose Carmen Garcia, who claims to have met a man who was taken into a subterranean city or tunnels inhabited by tall, fair humans. The beings claimed to be 'extraterrestrials' (could they have been native terrans with interplanetary capabilities as many 'hidden' societies apparently are?), and were encountered beneath an ancient volcano near Irapuato, Mexico. The man who encountered the beings was given a "formula" for growing gigantic vegetables. The man gave the formula to Mr. Garcia, who in turn presented it to the Rosicrucian Order in California. In the article there appeared photographs of giant cabbages grown by Garcia. Could this account have something to do with the Mt. Shasta scenario? Note: Both places are "extinct" or dormant ancient volcanoes; both involve "giant" vegetables grown by the inhabitants; both subterranean groups are "tall"; both are "fair" (blond?); and incidentally the Rosicrucians have somehow been tied to or interested in both places as we can see, even if this connection is peripheral and does not involve actual contact with the inhabitants.

The September 29, 1981, issue of the 'NEW YORK TIMES' (p. 3) reported on Russian drilling experiments which have been conducted at the Kola Peninsula and at Saatly in Azerbaijan, resulting in two unexpected findings. These included the discovery of traces of biological activity of fossil microorganisms at 22,000 ft., and a dramatic increase in temperature at 33,000 ft., instead of a dropping temperature that was expected.

A Mr. John Hall of Utah alleged that several years ago a farmer near Alpine, Utah requested help from some locals to move a large boulder in the midst of a field. They were surprised upon moving it to find an 'staircase' or tunnel that led deep underground. They followed this until they came face to face with a huge snake or serpent that seemed to be 'guarding' the lower entrance, whereupon they fled to the surface terrified and set the boulder back over the opening.

The 'NORWOOD REVIEW OF ENGLAND', May 12, 1884 issue, summarizes the surprising discovery of a warm country in the north by Arctic explorers. If warm land exists there, then conceivably lost civilizations might as well. Quoting from the article, "We do not admit that there is ice up to the pole - once inside THE GREAT ICE BARRIER, a new world breaks upon the explorer, the climate is mild like that of England, and afterward, balmy as the Greek Isles."

David Perkins, in a letter of his which appeared in the Vol. 1, No. 1 issue of 'THE HOLLOW HASSLE', told of a strange "breathing well" that drillers had broken into 17 miles east of Walsenberg, CO. Other strange occurrences had been found on the ranch or farm where the well was located, including unexplained cattle mutilations. Representatives from the Colorado School of Mines came out to investigate the well, which seemed to "breathe" in and out with the rising and falling of the tides, and they excitedly suggested that a tunnel lay below which may have connected with a similar tunnel which the Colorado School of Mines had tracked from the Gulf of Mexico and as far as Oklahoma. In 'possible' connection to this, one source alleged that an "alternative 002" type of underground "city" maintained by a secret society, can be entered via a "lodge" in the Uncompagne Mts., also in southwest Colorado. Also, a large "Masonic Park" exists in this same area (any connection?).

W. B. Seabrook, in his book 'ADVENTURES IN ARABIA' (ch. 15) refers to the secret caverns under the temple-shrine at Sheik-Adi on Mt. Lalesh, near Baadri, Arabia. It is believed to have a subterranean river, this being confirmed by the author, which the Yezidee devil worshippers of the area allege connects with the spring of Zem Zem in Mecca, flowing beneath the entire desert country.

Wayne D. Simpson, in a letter which appeared in the Vol. 1, No. 2 issue of 'THE SHAVER MYSTERY MAGAZINE' (pp. 28-29) tells of his own personal knowledge of the "Spillman Manuscript," written by one C. J. Spillman of Phoenix, Arizona. In 1912 the author of the manuscript and others allegedly discovered an entrance to a cave or tunnel beneath some ancient surface ruins near San Simon, Bolivia. The group allegedly followed the passage to a great depth until emerging into an enormous cavern in which they encountered several identical-looking (cloned?) 8-foot tall human-appearing beings who approached them from a distant "city". These beings alleged that they were connected with other-planetary civilizations, although they lived in an underground city which seemed to have been there for some time. The present whereabouts of the manuscript is unknown.

The April 6, 1982 issue of 'WEEKLY WORLD NEWS' carried an article titled, "SOVIET TESTS REVEAL THE 55-HOUR DAY!" The article records the strange discoveries of Russian speleologists-scientists who spend 71 days in one of the world's deepest known caverns, located in the Abkhazia Mountains in the Soviet Union (i.e. or rather the former Soviet Union). **After entering 8 miles into the cave, scientists reported increased vitality, less fatigue, and a natural change from normal 24-hour working-sleeping cycles to a 55-hour cycle.**

Martha G. Stark, in a letter to "inner earth" researchers, told of an entrance to "Pelleur's Kingdom" near Carlsbad, New Mexico. She did not explain just where she came across

this information. Carlsbad Caverns are located in the Guadalupe mountain range of southeastern New Mexico and northwestern Texas. Aside from the unusual tunnel containing the "smooth marble wall" mentioned earlier in this file, which was allegedly found near the Guadalupe's, other strange paraspeleological phenomena have been described in connection with this area as well. For instance in the 1800's, according to Toronto's 'SHAVERTRON' newsletter, some trappers claimed to have followed a cavern in the Guadalupe's deep underground where they were able to witness from a hidden position a procession of hooded dark-robed figures performing some type of strange ceremony. It was not established whether the 'beings' were sauroid or human. In the Spring of 1992 the television program 'CODE-3' covered the remarkable rescue of a woman--a speleologist who had broken her leg while helping to map the system--from the Lechuguilla cavern-network adjacent to Carlsbad. Ever since the entrance to Lechuguilla was found less than a dozen years previous to the accident it quickly became "the" cave for veteran speleologists and spelunkers in the United States, if not the world, to focus their attention on. In these few years it has established itself as the deepest "officially recognized" cavern in the United States at over 1,565 feet in depth and over 55 miles long with no end in sight! In addition to this, John Lear, Thomas C. and other have identified "Carlsbad, New Mexico" as being the general location of an "underground base" connecting the gigantic subterranean network which converges below Dulce, New Mexico.

Lt. Col. Wendelle C. Stevens, in his book, "**UFO - CONTACT FROM THE PLEIADES**, A PRELIMINARY REPORT" (UFO Photo Archives., Tucson, AZ 1982., p. 79) reports on the alleged sixth face-to-face contact between Eduard 'Billy' Meier and the 'Pleiadean' Semjase. He was told of strange people, unknown to us, who live in the interior of mountains and cave's beneath the earth's surface. They are of various types, some with bluish skin, and others who often come to the surface and blend with surface inhabitants, unknown to their true origin.

Cecil Michael, in his book '**ROUND TRIP TO HELL IN A FLYING SAUCER**' (formerly published by Saucerian Press, later known as Gray Barker Books and still later as the Gray Barker Archives - (304) 624-6512), tells of a UFO encounter of a different sort. Aside from the almost exclusive physical nature of encounters with human occupants, and the often para-physical nature of contacts with the saurians, Mr. Michael claims to have encountered the 'Infernals', entities that make up the third classification of UFO occupants - exclusively supernatural beings, or rather fallen light beings or angels. He tells how he was visited by strange "dead looking" men that materialized in his shop one day, which offered to take him on a trip in their "flying saucer". He responded that he would never physically go with them, at which point they made it known that the "physical" aspect was not necessary. Sometime later, he claimed, he was 'astrally' abducted by the entities, his spirit form being separated from his physical and soul forms, and taken into a saucer-shaped object apparently constructed from some type of etheric matter yet which was empty and absent of any mechanical parts and in fact was allegedly operated by the 'psychic energy' of the beings. From here he was allegedly taken to a realm of tormented souls deep, deep beneath the earth where he saw the souls of discarnate men and women being cast by the beings into an icy sea, after which the

tormented souls drifted away into oblivion. Mr. Michael claimed that the creatures looked humanoid yet were not at all human.

Raymond A. Fowler, in '**THE ANDREASSON AFFAIR**', pp. 202-203, gave his own interpretation of the intentions of the non-human entities who abducted Betty Andreasson to their underworld abode. In reference to a supposed "religious experience" she had during which she thought she observed a huge phoenix-like bird consumed by fire and then rise again from its own ashes, a theme which is tied in with ancient Egyptian lore, Mr. Fowler stated: "...it seems to be the purpose of her travel through the red and green spaces. In reality, the... phenomena may be a combination of advanced technology and theology. A slightly more sinister possibility suggests itself, of course. When researching the life-style of primitive peoples, modern-day anthropologists are careful to respect the beliefs of local tribes, sometimes going so far as to let themselves be 'initiated' into their secret societies. It did occur to the investigator that Quazgaa (the alien-gray commander involved in orchestrating the abduction of Mrs. Andreasson) may have paid lip service to Betty's religious convictions **SIMPLY IN ORDER TO ENSURE HER COMPLIANCE**. Again and again, Betty had been about to **RESIST** the entities' requests, but invariably acquiesced when she was assured (however obliquely) that her abductors were, indeed, on the side of the angels (there are, however, two classifications of 'angels' - the fallen and the unfallen variety - Branton). **AND YET MUCH OF WHAT THESE BEINGS MADE BETTY UNDERGO** (particularly her examination ordeal) **HARDLY SEEMS IN THE SPIRIT OF CHRISTIAN CHARITY**. Indeed, the hypothesis makes a bit more sense of the baffling phoenix episode. Betty assured us that Quazgaa and his associates' sense of time was far different from ours; and the phoenix was apparently a meaningful symbol to members of the early Christian Church. Supposing that these entities went out of their way to stage-manage a religious experience as a 'reward' for Betty, it's not inconceivable that they might have picked a symbol that was obsolete by some 1,500 years!"

Caverns, Dungeons and Labyrinths - Part 3 of 4

In his book '**THE GOLD OF THE GODS**', Erich von Danniken relates some interesting thoughts concerning an ancient tunnel system that had been discovered below the mountains and jungles of Ecuador which allegedly consist of straight 'glazed' tunnels with intermittent 'air shafts' that stretch for hundreds of miles. Although he has come under criticism from many researchers for his tendency to embellish certain accounts, and twist archeological and historical facts in an attempt to support his own pet theories, some of his research is nevertheless interesting and reliable enough to include here. On pp. 59-60 of this particular work, he stated: "...I can refute the objection that the tunnel-builders must have 'betrayed' themselves by the enormous quantities of debris excavated while making the tunnels. As I credit them with an advanced technology, they were presumably equipped with a **THERMAL DRILL** of the kind described in **DER SPIEGAL** for 3 April, 1972, which reported it as the latest discovery. The scientists of the U.S. Laboratory for Atomic Research at Los Alamos spent a year and a half developing the thermal drill. It has nothing in common with ordinary drills. The tip of the drill is made of wolfram and heated by a graphite heating element. There is no longer any waste material from the hole being drilled. **The thermal drill melts the rock through which it bores**

**and presses it against the walls, where it cools down.** As DER SPIEGAL related, the first test-model bored almost soundlessly through blocks of stone 12 ft. thick. At Los Alamos they are now planning the construction of a thermal drill that is powered by a mini atomic reactor and eats into the earth like a mole, in the form of an armored vehicle. This drill is intended to pierce the earth's crust, which is about 25 miles thick (in some places - Branton), and take samples of the molten magma that lies underneath it..."

An analysis of UFO occupant reports prepared for the Center for UFO Studies (AN ANALYSIS OF THE FALL 1973 UFO/HUMANOID WAVE, by Dave Webb. Center for UFO Studies., Evanston, ILL 1976. p. 52) states that twenty-seven "dwarf" cases were reported to CUFOS in 1973. One such case allegedly involved another family's CE-III on October 16, 1973, at Lehi, Utah. Using hypnosis, Dr. James Harder, consultant for the Aerial Phenomena Research Organization (APRO), elicited from one of the witnesses the following description: The beings were slightly over four feet tall, very thin, with large slanted eyes. Their arms were long and their hands GLOVED and CLAWLIKE, with a diminutive thumb. They were wearing what appeared to be glowing clothing with Sam Brown-like belts!

Although this particular 'File' is reserved for reports of subsurface phenomena, we will not exclude these to planet earth alone. There is much evidence that the underground regions of other planets, or possibly even the moons of this and other planets, may play a part in the "Grand Scenario". Frank Edwards, in his '**STRANGE WORLD**' (Lyle Stuart Co., N.Y. 1964. pp. 329-330) gives the following revelations under the heading, "**THE MYSTERIOUS MOONS OF MARS**": "Now that man has tools which will enable him to obtain detailed information by near approaches to Mars, we may expect, within the next few years, to learn whether Mars is inhabited by intelligent beings, and, if so, what they look like and how they live. Among the factors which have focused so much of our time and talent on Mars are the two tiny satellites which orbit the planet--where--prior to 1877--no satellites had ever been seen before (In other words, about the time the canals of Mars were mysteriously starting to "disappear", new satellites began appearing on the scene - Branton). The famous astronomers Herschel and Lasselle had excellent telescopes at their disposal--so good that they used them to DISCOVER THE MOONS OF URANUS. Yet neither these men, nor hundreds of other astronomers who observed the planets, were able to see any satellites around Mars. Then in one week in 1877, Asaph Hall found that Mars had two satellites where none had been seen before. Furthermore, he found that the satellites were tiny but bright...**brighter than the planet itself...as though they were made of some material other than that of Mars.** It is also worth noting that not only do these two Martian satellites sweep around the planet at a very high speed but they travel in different directions...factors which had led to the suspicion that they are artificial. This is the theory advanced by Soviet astronomer I. S. Schklovsky, who points out that the Martian satellite known as Phobos exhibits a strange acceleration in its orbit, *an irregularity which would be expected if the satellite were in reality a huge metal sphere that was hollow.* The same difference in speed, however, would be impossible for a natural astronomical body. **Therefore, says Dr. Schklovsky, at least one of the moons of Mars IS NOT A NATURAL OBJECT, but an artificial satellite placed in orbit around the 'red' planet in 1877, or shortly before that time.** When we stop to think of the discovery of the Martian moons in 1877--and of the mass of

phenomena noted on our moon between 1879 and 1889--the conviction develops that if we discover life on Mars...we may also discover that we are merely returning a visit."

An article in the Dec. 1, 1968 issue of THE PEOPLE (British), titled "Something Quare Down The Tunnel!", reported on a strange, dark, 7 ft. tall creature which was briefly seen by workers during the construction of London's New Victoria tube line.

The MELBOURNE SUN (Melbourne, Victoria, Australia), August 25, 1954 issue, carried an article titled "THE NEW SATELLITES", which stated: "Two meteors (asteroids?) had become satellites of the earth and WERE REVOLVING WITH IT 400 to 600 miles out in space, the latest issue of the American Magazine 'AVIATION WEEK' said yesterday. The magazine said that the discovery of the satellites threw the air force into confusion this summer. Alarm over the sightings ended only after they had been identified as natural rather than manmade." Another possibility may be that they were both 'engineered' natural objects such as hollowed-out asteroids taken from the asteroid belt. The simultaneous arrival of two large asteroids, combined with the fact that both took up a geo-synchronous (synchronized with the revolving of the earth and positioned always over a particular geographical location) orbit, would be an incredible coincidence indeed.

In **'THE KATHA SARIT SAGARA** (THE OCEAN OF STORY)', edited by Bhatta Somadeva., New Delhi, India., 1968., this Ten Volume collection of ancient East Indian lore gives a description of the 7-leveled underworld of 'Patala', which is the traditional abode of the Nagas, or the Serpent Race. Vol. 6, pp. 108-112, gives a legend concerning the journey of a King by the name of Bhunandana to this underworld region. Although most of the story is probably fiction, it is nevertheless a bizarre reflection of the ideas which it's writer or writers, early Hindu's, had concerning this underworld. Take note that some of the legend seems to parallel certain ideas concerning the reptilian netherworld which have appeared in other accounts. Whether this legend has any direct connection with actual alleged scenarios such as that taking place deep below Dulce, New Mexico, remains to be seen. We will let the reader make their own determination. The legend, as it appeared in **'THE OCEAN OF STORY'**, states that: "There are on this earth many openings leading into the lower regions; but there is one great and famous one is Kasmira made by Maya... even now the place is called by the two names Peak of Pradyumna and Hill of Sarika... the king (Bhunandana) entered with... his pupils, and marched along the road to Patala for five days and five nights. And on the sixth day they all crossed the Ganges of the lower regions." The king told his followers, "This is the dwelling of the god Siva (as the reader may recall, Siva or Shiva is an apparently supernatural being that has been identified with the Serpent Race of the 'Nagas', as related in Andrew Tomas' book **'ON THE SHORES OF ENDLESS WORLDS'** and elsewhere - Branton), who inhabits the lower regions in the form of Hatakesvara, and whose praises are sung in the three worlds..." **Could the 'three' worlds be the subterranean, terran and exterran 'worlds'?** In the legend the underworld of Patala gave off the impression of being some kind of underworld paradise, yet the hero's of the story soon learn that such 'beauty' is only superficial, and that inwardly things were just the opposite. One of the king's servants, becoming hungry, eats a fruit from one of the subterranean trees and "...as soon as he had eaten it, he became rigid and motionless." At one point in the journey the king encounters

a being that appeared to him in the form of a woman, and this being takes him to an underground garden and, according to the legend, "...then she sat down with him on the brink of a tank filled with wine, and with the blood and fat of corpses, that hung from trees on its banks, and she offered the king a goblet, full of the fat and wine, to drink, but he would not accept the loathsome compound. And she kept saying earnestly to the king: 'You will not prosper if you reject my beverage.' But he answered: 'I certainly will not drink that undrinkable compound, whatever may happen.'" In apparent response to his refusal, instead of declaring that he had passed some test, 'she' then pours out the grotesque compound over his head and departs, and shortly afterwards he was expelled from Patala, the legendary home of the Nagas or the Serpent Race (this particular legend did not refer to the Naga's as the inhabitants of Patala, as most Hindu legends do, that is of course unless the 'woman' was actually a Naga in disguise. Or could 'she' have been a sorceress who lived in that dark underworld realm? This is assuming of course that there is some seed of truth behind this tale). Whether fantasy or reality, the 'king' should be commended for resisting the bloody 'drink', and may have been fortunate that he himself did not end up as 'food' for these false 'gods' of the underworld. This is, again, assuming that there is a fire of truth behind the 'smoke' of such tales.

Manly P. Hall, who has written numerous books on Freemasonry and other occult themes, in his volume **'MAN, THE GRAND SYMBOL OF THE MYSTERIES'** (Manly P. Hall Pub. Co., Los Angeles, CA, 1932, p. 160) states: "The most secret rituals of ancient initiation were performed in subterranean crypts, which were called 'caverns of the Mysteries.' In the Gothic rites, the final ceremony in which the new initiate was invested with the insignia of his order took place in a high, vaulted, cavernous chamber in the presence of the luminous statue of Balder (a Nordic 'deity')... Here also are the Seven Sleepers of Ephesus and the cave-dwelling Rishis of India--the seven original beings who in the mythology of Central America were the cave-born progenitors of the (Central American) races." (Note: The cave-dwelling Rishis are said to live largely in Ellora, India where there are alleged to be tunnel entrances to an underground system which connects with Elephanta and the Ajunta Caverns - Branton)

One source stated some years ago that the Texas Instruments plant near Dallas, Texas, had discovered a system of ancient tunnels and caverns deep below the T. I. Complex there (discovered via experimental electronic earth-sounding probes? - merely a suggestion), and have secretly been investigating these tunnels for some time. This source revealed the name and address of one woman T.I. worker who allegedly told this source about the underground system. A letter was sent to this woman asking if she would confirm or deny the story, but no response has been forthcoming. These sources alleged that 'small' hominoid beings were discovered in the tunnels, some of which were being held in captivity in 'cage-like' enclosures for research purposes (whether 'they' were humanoid or sauroid was not mentioned, other than that they tended towards a greenish-like skin color). Certain 'inner earth' researchers were allegedly contacted by the company and allowed entrance into these tunnels for the purpose of getting their opinion and views on who or what these beings were. Due to the lack of solid confirming evidence as yet, the reader should take these reports with a grain of salt for now.

Archaeologists have in recent years broken through into vast and ancient labyrinthine underground cities in Turkey. Although several 'cities' have been found, the largest seems to lie beneath Derenkuyu. These underground villages are quite extensive, with many levels, and in some places contain tunnels only 3 or 4 ft. in diameter (apparently constructed this way for defense purpose) that lead to other chambers or other levels. According to tradition, many of these cities were utilized by early Christians escaping persecution. It is not known however whether the Christians built the cities or whether the underground villages are of more ancient origin. According to Kurt Braun, in his article 'Underground Civilization Attacks German Archaeologists', in '**BEYOND REALITY**' (Dec. 1968); some men who were exploring the lower depths of the Derenkuyu labyrinth were at one point 'attacked' by tall, albino-like humans. Since most of the underground 'cities' have not been fully explored it is uncertain just how extensive they are or if they connect lower down.

John A. Keel, in his book, '**THE EIGHTH TOWER**' (Saturday Review Press., N.Y., 1975), pp. 53-54,129, stated: "...A woman in Gaffney, South Carolina, was plagued by eerie hums and strange mechanical sounds in the mid-1960s. She complained to the local police that someone was digging tunnels under her house, but a thorough investigation yielded nothing... During my own investigations into the mountains of northern New Jersey, I wandered uncomfortably through old caves half-filled with water after local residents had told me of hearing sounds of pulsing machines... To the UFO cultists these sounds are supposed to be coming from the marvelous space ships of mysterious extraterrestrial travelers. Another group (and it is a large group) sees these as evidence of the existence of 'Deros'-- detrimental robots--who live in the bowels of the earth and are up to no good... In May 1969 Jose Antonio, a Brazilian soldier, underwent (an) experience when he was kidnapped by a group of tiny humanoids, and transported to a cavernlike room of stone. There his captors offered him a drink from a stone cube with a pyramidal cavity in the center. It was a dark green liquid, with a bitter taste. But he said he felt better after drinking it."

In his book '**ON THE SHORES OF ENDLESS WORLDS**' (Souvenir Press), Andrew Tomas, in his chapter "Labyrinths and Serpents", states: "...According to legend, King Minos of Crete ordered his architect Daedalus to construct the labyrinth, a maze of passages so ingeniously devised that even the builder himself could not find his way without a plan. In the center lived the Minotaur, half bull, half human, to whom the Greeks sent seven youths and seven maidens as a tribute every nine years. The Minotaur was slain by Theseus who was able to find his way out of the labyrinth thanks to a ball of thread given to him by Ariadne. This myth has been interpreted as an historical record of the construction of the palace of Minos in Knossos which contains innumerable galleries and rooms. On the other hand, this myth may have an entirely different interpretation, similar to a cryptogram, which conceals the existence of a secret repository of underground chambers and passages..." Although this might seem to be just a "legend", there are alleged accounts of actual encounters with parapsychical (part supernatural, part physical) "demonic" creatures such as the satyres, centaurs, and Minotaurs, etc. which have been described in Greek mythology. Such encounters often involve parapsychical "poltergeist-like" phenomena and manipulation of mind and matter. According to some sources, a race of beings possessing a combination of humanoid, angelic and animal-like

characteristics pre-dated Adamic civilization and were involved in the original rebellion and conspiracy against the Creator. The creatures mentioned in the 9th chapter of the book of Revelation "may" be this type of demonic or fallen entity. These were apparently distinct from the purely spiritual angelic and fallen angelic beings. Whether the following account describes an encounter with such a fallen race(s) remains to be seen. The letter we quote here appeared in the Winter, 1962 issue of THE HIDDEN WORLD, one of several publications which grew out of the "Shaver Mystery" controversy of the late 1940's:

"Mr. Richard Shaver: Hoping this letter finds you in the best of health. My name is Frank J. Mezta. I live in the County of Imperial Valley, City of Calexico, California.

"Through accident I happened to stumble into your book HIDDEN WORLD issue No. A-1 and just recently A-2. I sometimes wonder if it was luck or deliberate action on the part of a tero. All my life, I have been looking and asking for certain, unsolved and unanswered questions regarding civilization, our ancestors and the beginning of time. I believe your book gave me the best answers. Let me tell you a few of my expeditions.

"Two years ago, we went treasure hunting in the interior of Mexico, which turned out to be a flop. But in that excursion some strange things happened to us, which at the time we wrote off as superstition. We went to this place where we were supposed to enter; but suddenly a fright with chills came over me, something I had never felt before. Something like a sixth sense, like if I knew something was going to happen to me. I didn't go in and neither did anybody else. Next day we approached the cave again, only this time I wasn't afraid and I let the group inside. This cave was tremendous in size, and leading passages everywhere. Some of these passages or chambers, sometimes being 30 ft. high and 100 ft. long (contained) connecting tunnels. We finally gave up, but in retreating we found two leading passages instead of the one we had entered. This startled us, and we set to investigate the second tunnel. It just kept winding and going down so we finally gave up and got out of there.

"When we got back to the village we struck a conversation with two Mexican Indians, and they told us that whatever we did, not to go into the enchanted caves. We got curious and asked them where these so called enchanted caves were. They gave us directions and that was exactly where we had entered a few days ago. We asked them what happened in these caves. They told us that people that went in there, never came out, that while in there, the entrances and tunnels would change, which happened to us, and we didn't know about this till after we had been in there. Then they told us the strangest thing, which at the time we said these people are superstitious, they said that they went with an expedition with 20 or 30 men hired by an American man to look into this cave. This happened about 10 or 15 years ago they said. Four or five of the men had revolvers, they were well equipped with lights and tools. While they were working there all of a sudden in the far end there appeared a half man and bull head like a bull upright. This description fits the one you have on your front cover on issue A-1. And next to him was a naked midget or little boy. They pulled out their revolvers but they wouldn't fire, and their lights went out. There was confusion, and several men were killed in the scramble and nobody returned after that - Frank J. Mezta, 939 Genge, Calexico, Calif."

In recent years, much has been written about the so-called "National Defense" underground facilities, some of which have become public knowledge due to the apparent "fall" of Communism in the former Soviet Union. It is alleged that these facilities do serve or have served as National Defense shelters, yet according to some they "flow in" via tube-shuttles to other subterranean systems which are involved in the secret government "Alternative 002" scenario, underground bio-genetic laboratories, and even subterranean systems involving "alien" scenarios as well. Mt. Weather, near Bluemont, VA., is the site of an actual "underground city" constructed and maintained by the U.S. Government for the purpose of being utilized "by the President" and top governmental officials as a command center in the event of a nuclear war or a similar emergency. It is uncertain whether this installation was entirely excavated by the U.S. government or whether they utilized and added-on to already-existing natural subterranean cavities, but most reports state that the "installation" is enormous. It was virtually unknown to the media until a plane crashed near Mt. Weather in northern Virginia, forcing the government to acknowledge the existence of the underground complex. It allegedly consists of miles upon miles of underground tunnels which connect scores of chambers, offices, recreation centers, cafeterias, etc., all reportedly accessible via a system of 'electric cars'. It is apparently one of the major 'bolt holes' (a code-name for a series of about a hundred, possibly more, such government installations located in America and overseas) which is being utilized by the U.S. government. Witnesses have stated that helicopters have at times been seen landing in a secret port in the side of Mt. Weather. These craft then enter the mountain via enormous metal 'doors' in the side of the mountain. In reference to Mt. Weather, the editor of 'THE MISSING LINK', published by UFOCC (UFO Contact Center International) of Federal Way, Washington, stated:

"A...paper on caves, tunnels, etc. states that there is a tube shuttle from the White House to a super-secret underground complex in case of nuclear attack, under Mt. Weather, Virginia!"

Incidentally, a man in Florida (who will remain anonymous for obvious reasons) who claimed to have been "abducted" by alien entities, also alleged that he had a friend who was a high-level officer in the government, with a very high security clearance. He stated that his friend was involved in interviewing military personnel who had "UFO-type" encounters, and other forms of debriefing and, we can assume, other methods utilized to maintain the cover-up. This government officer had allegedly been to Wright-Patterson Air Force Base near Dayton, Ohio and had personally seen some of the "alien cadavers" which were recovered from disks which had crashed. He was also, he claimed, allowed entrance into a top-secret system of underground tunnels beneath Washington D.C., and had visited a highly classified underground installation which apparently was the 'real' or 'inner' Central Intelligence Agency, and that the one at Langley was merely the 'outer' level of the CIA. This 'installation', he said, was connected to the White House via a TUBE SHUTTLE! Could this Florida man's friend have been referring to Mt. Weather, or a similar installation? Or was he referring to the alleged CIA-NSA-MIB installation deep below Washington D.C. itself, the so-called 'NOD' installation?

In addition to this, there are other sources who claim that the CIA installation at Langley descends at least seven levels, and that some of the (recovered?) disks are housed in these lower levels.

A researcher by the name of Jon Singer, stated the following in an article of his which appeared in 'THE MISSING LINK' (mentioned earlier): "Our nation's capital has its share of Fortean mysteries. There is supposed to be a tunnel complex under the Octagon House at 1741 New York Avenue, NW. Dr. John Thornton, the architect who designed the Capitol Building, built some (but not all) of the tunnels. The course of at least two of the tunnels is known. One is supposed to go to the White House and the other supposedly leads to the Potomac. The tunnels are supposedly blocked up. Jim Brandon, on p. 58 of (his book) 'WEIRD AMERICA' (1978. E.P. Dutton & Co., N.Y.), added that the tunnels built by Dr. Thornton were only part of a much older and larger tunnel network constructed by colonists from Atlantis. Unfortunately his sources were two unidentified psychics, so this must be a fascinating rumor." This would depend upon whether these "revelations" were received by these psychics via "occult" means, in which case they should be viewed with great suspicion, or whether they based their claims on actual physical accounts. However, Richard Toronto, editor of SHAVERTRON, claimed that some years ago as a result of a printed request for information on subterranean anomalies, a scientist contacted him offering a 10-page report on a system of tunnels he had personally investigated beneath Washington D.C. He stated that the tunnels were built by a very ancient race, and that the walls consisted of a diamond-hard, glassy or glaze-like substance. As far as we know, Mr. Toronto never did actually get his hands on the report.

Another incident (or rather a few incidents which should be of interest to us) was related in Eric Norman's book 'THE UNDERPEOPLE' (1969., Award Books., N.Y.). First of all, Norman asks the question: "Who lives in the inner earth?"

"...The Masters live there, a friendly group who watch over the outer world.'

"...Still others tremble at the question. 'The DERO dwells within!' they say. A squat, wiry tribe of lustful demons, the DERO plagues mankind and delights in tormenting those who live on the surface.

"'They (the Under-People) are vegetarians,' claims some researchers.

"'They are cannibals!' swear others. 'Humans are kidnapped and dragged into their dark caverns for pagan feasts.'

"'They are good!'

"'They are evil...'

"'...They are both good and evil. Different races live inside the earth!'

"'...They are more advanced. They are sexless. They reproduce by test tube.'

"'...Nubile young girls are dragged into their nether world and assaulted by an evil tribe of animal-men.'

"The theories are many and, admittedly, the facts are often few. Frequently, we must depend on folklore and ancient scrolls for our research. Many of our ancestors were believers in the diverse tribes of inner earth and there are accurate statements, detailed information and considerable documentation to support their theories...

"Depending on your viewpoint and your bias toward the occult, the pages that follow can be interpreted in many different ways. A psychologically trained individual might feel that these are excellent case studies of individuals with severe psychopathologies. Freudians would find rich symbolism in the hollow earth theory; they might claim it is a manifestation of a desire to recapture the lost security of the womb. Still others may feel the theory is constructed on misinterpretation of natural phenomena...

"It was a cold, blustery, winter evening of December 27, 1666, when Dr. Jophn Frederick Schweitzer entertained his remarkable visitor. Throughout Europe, noblemen and peasants were celebrating Christmas and the good doctor utilized his vacation to conduct a vast number of experiments in his laboratory. Soon, the results of those experiments would be carefully scribbled into a large journal and sent to alchemists throughout Europe. It was Dr. Schweitzer's secret that he was also known as 'Helvetius the Alchemist.'

"'Helvetius' was puttering in his laboratory, cleaning instruments after a long series of experiments, when a loud knock sounded on the door. 'I opened the door and this strange man walked into my workshop,' Helvetius recorded later. 'He was a sturdy, gray-haired man, but there was a slimness to his body and a vigor in his movement. His face was oddly warm and friendly.'

"The stranger walked confidently into the laboratory. He shook the folds of his white robe and snowflakes fell to the floor. He looked directly at Helvetius and asked, 'Do you believe in the Philosopher's Stone?'

"Helvetius suppressed an impulse to ridicule the bizarre costume worn by the stranger. 'The philosopher's stone is a mere figment of alchemical over-imagination,' he said, arrogantly. 'I believe in the oneness of nature. There is a natural pattern to the universe. It is sheer fancy to believe base metals can be transmuted into precious gold. Some alchemists have excluded mysticism from their laboratory. In this room, the reality of the soul and spirit exists with facts.'

"The stranger smiled and took a small package from under his robe. 'Others of your kind are not so skeptical,' he explained. 'They have seen this substance turn lead into gold. Perhaps you would like to try.'

"Helvetius accepted the package from the stranger. Later, he described its contents as 'some form of glass, or a pale sulfurous substance.' The stranger carefully instructed the skeptical alchemist in the relatively simple experiment. Plain, ordinary lead was placed in a crucible and melted to a bubbling mass.

"'Encase the substance in fine yellow wax and toss it into the crucible,' directed the stranger.

"Helvetius followed the instructions and, as steam and vapor disappeared from the container, he watched, incredulous, as the lead seemingly was transformed into the purest of gold.

"'A skeptic becomes a believer,' the stranger remarked, smiling.

"Helvetius looked as if he were about to argue, then turned suddenly and slumped into a chair. 'Is it really gold?' he whispered hoarsely.

"'The purest form of the metal.'

"'Who are you?'

"'A man who directs those who lead their people.'

"'Where are you from?'

"'I am one who dwells within the earth,' the stranger replied. 'When events make it necessary, we must come to the surface.'

"Helvetius stuttered with confusion, his tongue stumbling over the questions racing through his mind as his white robed visitor prepared to leave the laboratory. 'Stay...Wait!...I want to know...' he mumbled.

"'There are others to see,' the stranger said. 'Here is one more package of the substance. It is the real Philosopher's Stone.' Then he opened the door and disappeared into the darkness.

"Helvetius dashed to the open doorway and watched the cloak-shrouded figure disappear into the snow-storm. He shook his head in disbelief and looked again. There was the lane leading down to the town. There were the lights in the church, the houses, the town--and the stranger's tracks in the snow.

"Helvetius conducted his second experiment that night. Again, the lead bubbled with golden fury when the substance was added to the crucible. Forgetting his lack of sleep, Helvetius was waiting at the shop of the goldsmith to the Duke of Orange when the craftsman opened his door. The goldsmith listened to the babbling alchemist and frowned when he heard the phrase 'lead into gold.' But, when the goldsmith examined the precious metal, he said solemnly, 'It is the finest gold I have ever seen.'

"News of the sensational transformation spread throughout Europe and scores of famous men journeyed to Helvetius' laboratory. Baruch Spinoza, the Dutch philosopher, was one of the first visitors. He discussed the transmutation with Helvetius and the goldsmith. 'I checked the laboratory, and, additionally, made a careful examination of the crucible,' Spinoza later recorded. 'Clinging to the sides of the container were flecks of remaining gold!'"

"...Is the transmutation of lead into gold an idle dream of demented and reclusive chemists? Not according to King Henry IV of England. In 1404, His Royal Highness

decreed: **'From now on, no man shall, under the penalty of felony, or death, multiply gold or silver.'**"

Eric Norman described yet another visitor from "within the earth". This fellow however seemed to be more interested in the process involved in transforming grapes into wine, rather than lead into gold. If this doesn't seem to make sense, read on:

"Pepin the Short, the pint-sized father of Emperor Charlemagne, was the founder of the Brunia Monastery in the fabled Trier region of ancient Prussia. In A.D. 1138, a strange series of events culminated in an unusual visitation by a bizarre little man.

"There had been several nocturnal visitations to the monastery's wine cellar and its steward voiced his suspicions to the abbot: 'The monks are slipping into the wine cellar and sampling the casks.'

"The abbot frowned at the thought of a possible scandal and asked, 'When did this begin?'

"It's been going on for several months. I didn't mind it when they only took a cup or two,' explained the embarrassed monk. 'Last night, the culprit tapped a huge cask and forgot to stop the bunghole. A whole keg of wine drained out onto the cellar floor.'

"The abbot hurried to the cellar, inspected the damage, then carefully tapped the bunghole in each of the huge casks. He anointed the cellar with holy water, securely locked the door and placed a saint's relic above the entrance, declaring, 'None of our monks would dare transgress against the power of the Cross.'

"The following morning, a sleepy-eyed abbot unlocked the cellar door and squinted into the dim room. Followed by a group of curious monks, the abbot discovered that another keg of wine had been tapped; the floor was covered with the rich, red liquid. Suddenly, the abbot spotted movement in the dark shadows in the far corner of the cellar. 'There's the thief,' he shouted. 'Grab the transgressor and prepare him for punishment!'

"Two burly monks rushed forward and grabbed the shadowy figure. They carried the struggling thief into the light and the abbot stared in wonder at a dark-skinned dwarf, who glared back in impassive silence.

"Are you a Nubian? How did you get in our wine cellar?' inquired the abbot.

"The strange little man would not speak.

"Do you have parents?' the abbot asked.

"Here! Here! This fellow got in through the wall,' called a monk, pointing to a displaced stone that covered a small tunnel leading down into the earth. The bewildered monks crowded around the secret tunnel as one quaking novice suggested the tunnel must lead to the Devil's lair. An older monk spoke knowingly of subterranean demons who delighted in tormenting those who had taken the vows.

"Despite his crime, the captured dwarf was accepted into the society of holy men. 'He looks human and the least we can do is provide the poor child with a Christian education,'

the abbot said. But, in spite of the kindness showed him by the monks, the dwarf refused to utter a single word. He sat quietly on the bed in a cross-legged position, staring directly ahead and refusing all food and drink. After several weeks of fasting, the monastery dwellers were concerned for the life of their visitor and a visiting bishop was asked for his advice as the dwarf was brought into the great hall and introduced to him.

"Good Lord! You must expel this Devil's child at once!" the alarmed bishop shouted. 'He is a demon and the tool of the devil!'

"Gervase, a monk at Christ Church, Canterbury, England, later inscribed this strange ending to the dwarf's appearance in his manuscript: '...The demon ran in alarm from the holy words. He went to the cellar and returned to his underworld tribe!'

"The monastic scribes produced hundreds of manuscripts with stories of visits from demons, evil apparitions and other 'devils' from the vast subterranean world. They were adamant in their belief that a nether world, an underworld, existed beneath the surface. Many of these manuscripts told of long tunnels and deep caves that led down to the inner world (Note: Although the various accounts of demonology suggest that 'demons' or non-physical malevolent entities are seemingly capable of appearing in para-physical or semi-solid forms temporarily, there is no real proof that the entity just described was such a creature. Since the various accounts suggest that both good and evil beings reside in the 'underworld', he may well have been part of an ancient branch of the human race who disappeared into the cavernous regions below the surface of the earth. Since black pygmies live in abundance in Africa we should not consider this individual to be entirely "alien" from any race now living on the surface - Branton).

"A thirteenth-century historian, Saxo-Gammaticus, wrote down the folklore and myths of Scandinavia. **He recorded the ancient VIKING belief in 'Hadding Land,' a subterranean world where GIANTS, superhumans, TRIBES OF BLACK DWARFS and 'SNAKE PEOPLE' lived.** These strange beings, and even stranger animals, were said to occasionally surface in the outer world and create chaos. The (Roman) church was violently opposed to these beliefs and condemned such theories as 'ignorant superstitions.' Gradually, such tales lost their element of fact and truth and became a part of the folklore of northern Europe.

"In Vol. 1, No. 6 of the NEWSLETTER FOR THE COMMITTEE FOR THE SCIENTIFIC EVALUATION OF PSI, there is a fascinating account of a laborer in Staffordshire, England, who may have glimpsed, for a moment, the mechanical development of the aliens within the inner earth. Researcher Ronald Calais told of a tunnel laborer, digging underground in 1770, who heard a roaring sound behind a large, flat stone. Curious, he pried away the stone with pick and crowbar and was amazed to see a smooth stone stairway leading down into the earth. The laborer's first thought was that he had discovered some type of ancient tomb. Envisioning vast chests of ancient treasures, he cautiously walked down the stairs. Suddenly, the stairway ended and the man was standing in a large stone cavern, filled with gigantic machines. The astonished laborer glanced about the well-lit room, then saw hastening toward him a strangely-clad, hooded figure. The being held a baton-like object in his upraised hand and the terrified laborer scrambled back up the stairway to safety." (Note: Other accounts have referred to

this chamber as the 'Rosicrucian Sepulchre', although the Rosicrucians may not have had a direct connection with it. It is uncertain just what connections the Rosicrucians may have had with the inner world, if any, other than this incident, the Rosicrucian Grandmaster Bulwer Lytton's publication of the subterranean-oriented book 'THE COMING RACE', the preoccupation of the Rosicrucians with the strange stories surrounding Mt. Shasta, and the connection of this secret society with the 'House of the Temple' in Washington D.C. - Branton)

In his book, '**DEPTHS OF THE EARTH** - Caves and Caverns of the United States' - (Harper & Row., N. Y.), William R. Halliday gives some interesting observations on caverns of northern Arizona's Coconino Plateau region:

"...Those who dream of Butler Cave as potentially the world's largest, however, must hasten. The explorers of Mammoth Cave and Flint Ridge--and of Jewel Cave--are not the only teams on the verge of a breakthrough. Missouri-Tennessee--few of our greatest cave areas today can be denied a flickering chance at the title. And for those who dream of long shots indeed, our most magnificent cave area beckons irresistibly: the Grand Canyon.

"Perhaps in the purple shadows of the incomparable canyon there really is no chance for a truly great cave system. So believe some experts. Perhaps our hopes here are gossamer dreams, strung together with wishful thinking. Here I claim no impartial judgment. My mind is hopelessly influenced by the long intimacy with the timeless beauty of that tranquil canyon. I have seen its magic pastels at moonrise over the mile-high rim, suddenly dramatized by the weirdly luminous flutter of bat wings. No caver brushed by such a spell is ever the same again.

"In this strange, magnificent country, much remains to be learned. Sinking streams, an occasional natural shaft, and plateau-top sink-holes tell of much more water vanishing underground than reappears in canyon-bottom springs. Miles to the south, enormous sinks and remnants of a throughway type of cave are evidence of sometime profuse subterranean water flow. Fanning out from both rims of the mile-deep canyon are vast plateaus capped with limestone 500 feet thick. Yet caves seem few and tiny in these vast expanses of plateau-top limestone.

"The other massive limestone's of the incomparable canyon lie 2,000 (feet) below. Above them are 1,500 feet of sandstone and shale which ought to block the downward flow of the water essential for cave development. Yet at this great depth occur the caves of the Grand Canyon. In the blazing, rock-tiered canyon, foot travel is difficult and progress slow. Still, cave after cave is coming to carbide light in the purple-shadowed depths. Some are merely shallow alcoves, important only for archeological content. Others are colossal natural sewers, dwarfed only by their stupendous environs.

"Yet it is this often-scorned limestone of the plateaus which speeds the pulses of American caverns. Just south of the Grand Canyon, fluorescent chemicals introduced into a sucking 'earth crack' of the Coconino Plateau have been traced to a 'breathing well' 24 miles away. Initial calculations somewhat like those of Jewel cave suggest a minimum air volume here of more than 7 BILLION CUBIC FEET. Scientists of the famed RAND

CORPORATION suspect the presence of hundreds of miles of narrow, interconnected caverns fissuring the vast plateau.

"Many a veteran caver may consider such a cavern system impossible. Perhaps it is, but Arizona caverns have already performed the impossible. In Sipapu Cavern, an earth crack near the Rand Corporation study site, they have descended 500 feet toward the massive cavernous limestone deep below. In this locale the surface limestone is only 248 feet thick. Half of their descent was through supposedly non-cavernous sandstone.

"If one of the rare dome-pits of the Kaibab Plateau intersects a washed-out section of a fault zone draining to a North Rim stream cave, a depth record will be within reach. Geologically such a circumstance is hardly more than a pipe dream of an irrepressible caver overcome by the magnificence of the Grand Canyon. But it may happen.

"Perhaps eager caverns plumbing the earth cracks of the Coconino Plateau have little more chance than beneath the Kaibab. But if those caverns can penetrate twice again as deeply as Sipapu Cavern, they will begin to enter the limestone where great sewer caves may lie. If such do exist, they may enlarge away from the great canyon rather than toward it. They may not exist at all. Yet a cavernous network dwarfing that of Mammoth and Flint ridges may be penetrable here. Some day obsessed caverns may break through the Coconino sandstone barrier and the shales which underlie it. If that happens, those who follow in their footsteps may emerge triumphant from obscure orifices deep in the heart of the Grand Canyon.

"Even without such a triumph, even without knowledge of the hundreds of undiscovered caves which must exist hidden in limestone recesses of the mighty terraced depths, the Grand Canyon must be recognized as one of America's great cave areas. To some, that recognition alone would be achievement. Yet sun baked canyon caverns have much in common with their Appalachian fellows. Until every crack is penetrated, every hole plumbed, spelunkers and speleologists alike will remain unsatisfied. Fragile indeed are the spelean threads which weave together Sipapu Cavern and Butler Cave, yet such are caverns' secret dreams."

Brad Steiger, in his book **'STRANGE DISAPPEARANCES'** (Lancer Books., N.Y. 1972) related the following (MIB-related?) incident:

"...at sundown on February 12, 1953, witnesses told police that they had watched an automobile enter the throat of a storm drain near Willowbrook and Greenleaf Avenues in Los Angeles. Officers arrived on the scene within ten minutes, and according to the Los Angeles HERALD AND EXPRESS, they followed the fresh tire-tread marks into the tunnel for seven miles. Other policemen and flood control district workers continued the search for the automobile by dropping through manhole covers.

"The trackdown continued until midnight when, seven miles up the storm drain, THE TRACKS VANISHED. 'HERALD AND EXPRESS' newsmen who had accompanied the police on the incredible search up the tube were witnesses to the fact that: 'In the muddy silt covering the floor of the drain, the tire-tread marks were sharp and fresh. Then no more tracks.'"

From here we will now examine another incident, this one involving a subterranean excavation in southern Idaho. The letter which we quote here was submitted by a George Haycock of Burley, Idaho, and appeared in the Oct. 1947 issue of 'AMAZING STORIES' science fiction/science fact magazine, pp. 174-175:

"Sirs... Perhaps I have delayed over-long to send you my slight contribution to the master code. Why? I was still afraid there might be some slip that would put me in a bad spot. I am a druggist in this town and any trace of nut's talk would ruin my job. I have been waiting for the issue which just hit the newsstand and agree with you completely.

"There is in this area an artifact which seems to prove all you have printed about the cavern dwellers. First I want to ask a question. How are the caverns ventilated? There is no vegetation to purify the air in caves (i.e. small caverns, that is - Branton).

Therefore there must be some connection with the surface. I know where one of the air shafts reach the surface.

"My grandfather was raised with the Indians in this section of the country and has told me of the stories he heard when he was a child. The Indians describe the wind cave as it is called around here as the home of the devils who come forth in the dead of the night to steal their women and food. No Indian will venture within the area inside of five miles of the cave.

"Perhaps a description of the inside will make my meaning more clear. The entrance is just a hole in the rocks, but after getting inside you come into a four-square tunnel about three and one half feet square with a six-inch gutter along the west side, about 10 inches deep. The tunnel is intact for about 100 yards and then opens into what looks like it might have been at one time a completely ROUND or half-round passageway which now looks like the solid lava which it goes through has been chipped and crumbled by extreme heat. It is possible to travel for about half a mile inside before the tunnel becomes obstructed too much for a man to get through.

"I have been trying to get some one who would help me clear this obstruction enough to get through and several have agreed but when we get there and start to work they soon give up and want to get out. Another funny thing is that every time I go back the work done before does not show, yet there is not evidence of fresh falls of rock from the ceiling. At this point the feeling that you're in mortal danger becomes almost overpowering, after battling this feeling for an hour I feel as weak as if I had been sick for weeks and I have made this attempt many times.

"The opening has been dynamited at least four times that I know of. Supposedly to kill rattlesnakes, yet I have never seen one either in the mouth of the cave or inside.

"In fact my experience with snakes leads me to believe they would never brave the cold blast that comes out.

"Still the feeling of distrust and fear clings and none of the natives will consider exploring this artifact which could be made the biggest tourist attraction in this part of the state--if people were just not afraid to go down in there.

"This covers the known facts about this cave: yet since I can remember I have dreamed, thought and considered many of the things Shaver talks about in his stories, mostly those pertaining to mind control...

"Please ignore the mistakes and misspelled words in this letter. Ordinarily I am a good typist and a good speller, but when I try to put these things on paper I cannot hit the key I want to.

"Please notice that the mistakes and misspelled words are mostly where I try to describe the caves and conditions inside them. These happen even when I try to watch every stroke I make. I have recopied this letter three times trying to eliminate the errors and still they crop up in the same sections if not in the same words.

"I am willing to discuss what I know with any one who won't believe I am crazy, and would like to find some one who has the intestinal fortitude to help me clear the obstruction to the major cavern with which it connects which I know extends to the depth of 30,000 feet because it has been drilled into and that much cable let out without hitting anything to drill in and I will show anyone who is interested the entire set up.

"My grandfather is now dead unfortunately so he cannot verify the Indian stories mentioned, but if Mr. Hansen is as familiar with Indian legends as he claims and really desires the truth have him work with the Shoshones and the Blackfeet. Consider their tales of the demons who work this countryside...

"Write me if you're interested in these legends and any knowledge I have is yours.

"George Haycock., c/o Thriftway Drug., Main and Overland., Burley, Idaho."

Raymond Palmer's editorial reply to this letter was as follows: "We're sure that members of the CHMBS (Cave Hunters Mutual Benefit Society) will contact you, and they won't consider you crazy. We hope you can tell them more about this cave, and show it to them. As for the depth of 30,000 feet, letting a cable, or string, down that depth tells nothing, because it might be going down only a few hundred feet, then simply coiling up on the floor, as the weight of the string would make it impossible for you to tell when it had hit the floor... - Ed."

This account as given by Mr. Haycock is strange to say the least, however it may contain an significant piece of the puzzle whereas the overall subterranean scenario is concerned.

Two more postscripts to the George Haycock - Burley, Idaho account have surfaced. The first came from a man by the name of Frank W. Haigler, and a Sgt. Brentlinger who was at the time stationed at Hill Air Force Base near Salt Lake City, Utah. Mr. Haigler had told of his own investigations in connection with Mr. Haycock's letter in 'AMAZING STORIES'. This letter of confirmation, which appeared in the Jan. 1948 (Vol. 22, No. 1) issue, stated:

"Sirs... If you file your correspondence, you will find a letter there from this writer which was written in the early part of this year, advising you of reading my first AMAZING STORIES magazine and of my interest in the mystery of the caves, especially the articles

by Mr. Shaver. I haven't missed a copy of A. S. since then and interest in the mystery of the caves has grown until you may class me as an unofficial member of the CHMBS. In fact, the purpose of this letter is to inform you of a recent expedition to one of the caves for an investigation.

"For you and those interested in the 'air shaft' near Burley, Idaho, reported by Mr. George Haycock, whose letter was published in the October issue of AMAZING STORIES, this is to verify the truth of this cave.

"M/Sgt. Brentlinger (a Shaver fan), stationed at Hill Field, Utah, and myself made a trip to Burley over the weekend of the 17th of August to ascertain the authenticity of both Mr. Haycock and the cave. We had no trouble locating this gentleman and after explaining the purpose of our mission he quite readily agreed to show us to the cave and to guide us through, providing it was still possible to enter. The entrance had been blasted since he was last in the cave, he explained.

"We drove about six miles west of town, then turned off the highway onto a little road leading through the desert sagebrush. Oddly enough, this road was well worn and seemed to be much used although there is no apparent reason for so much traffic. We failed to see any other cars either on the way in or out.

"Even though he had been in the cave many times and to the entrance as recently as three days prior to this trip, Mr. Haycock, strangely, had difficulty in locating the spot and we stopped twice to look before we finally found it about a mile from the highway.

"The entrance was located in the center of a shallow circular depression. The surrounding terrain was nothing but sand and sagebrush but jammed in around the opening were several large boulders. We found there was still a small hole running down through the boulders and Mr. Haycock thought it still possible for us to make entrance. With some violent maneuvering we did manage to squeeze through and we followed Mr. Haycock to the floor of the cavern. Then, crawling, kneeling and sometimes walking, we were led back through the cave for approximately one-quarter of a mile.

"The cavern was cut through what appeared to be lava rock. Walls and ceiling are badly fallen-in in many places but there is enough intact yet to give the general appearance that the cave was at one time square. In certain spots the walls and ceiling are perfectly flat. Then, too, we noticed one small chamber to one side of the main passage that is square-cut except for one end which is cupped out.

"There are numerous small passages leading off to the side of the main path, which Mr. Haycock said lead to dead ends, IN the ones he has explored.

"After seeing enough to convince us of the truth of Mr. Haycock's story, it was decided to turn back and not to continue inward to the impassable obstruction Mr. Haycock mentioned in his letter. To have gone that far more equipment would have been required. We had nothing but two flashlights, both being used continuously. Where we turned back is approximately half-way to the obstruction.

"We failed to feel or hear the icy wind that is said to blow from the shaft most of the time. However, Mr. Haycock explained that it did become quiet occasionally, as we found it that day.

"At present another trip is planned to the cave. This time there will be seven or eight of us and we plan to take the proper equipment and enough provisions to do some serious work at clearing away the obstruction. It is desired by all to learn what, if anything, might lie further on beyond this obstruction. But, if there is nothing but more cave it will at least be an interesting adventure that will be enjoyed and remembered by all!

"Now for the information on two other caves this writer knows of which might merit investigation. The first is in the Smoky mountains of North Carolina in the Nantahalie(?) Gorge. It is called 'The Blowing Springs' and is easily reached from the highway. The cave has an icy blast of air and a cold stream flowing from it continuously, from which it got its name. It is not known by the writer whether anyone has ever entered the cave or if this is possible, but there are many that have been to the entrance to look in.

"The second is called 'The Devil's Well' and is located in the 'Hole-In-Ground' near Pine City, Washington. The cave is very round and approximately five feet in diameter. People are known to be afraid to enter the cave due to the rumor that it is a rattlesnake den. It would be interesting to learn if there is any truth to the rattlesnakes and why it is named 'The Devil's Well,' and by whom!."

"Frank W. Haigler., Box 18, Apt. F-12., Sahara Valley, Utah."

Another postscript to this account appeared in the form of an article which was written by one 'Galahadian' for the ESOTERIC WORLD NEWS in the mid-1980's. 'Galahadian' allegedly knew Mr. Haycock years ago, and revealed that his story had a sad and tragic ending. Haycock, it seemed, had received an unmarked letter or package in his mailbox one day with a message warning him to cease and desist in his investigations of the tunnel. Mr. Haycock had apparently ignored the warning and continued in his investigations, and according to Galahadian a few days afterwards he was found strangled to death in his house. What kind of secret would be so important that it was worth killing a human life in order to hide it? Certainly, this is not the only one who has died mysteriously after investigating underground phenomena. In fact dozens, perhaps hundreds (or more?) have met with the same tragic fate, after getting too close to the "Horrible Truth". We would ask the readers however not to get the impression that EVERY subterranean area is irreparably under the control of the evil one and the powers of darkness. As we will reveal in our next file there are many regions inhabited by human beings who, although they may not have established an absolutely "perfect" society, nevertheless are far safer than the underground lairs of the serpent races. The simple fact that these writings TARGET the reptilian conspiracy as it concerns or as it is taking place in and around this small planet lost among billions of stars in a galaxy which is just one of billions within a seemingly immeasurable universe, might lead one to accept a mistaken and paranoid if not hopeless view of reality. Believe us, this is not the case. The perfect and incorruptible realm of the Almighty is infinitely more vast than the material universe which it surrounds. Good WILL overcome evil in the end, that is not the

question. The question is: how many souls will or will not be saved from the conspiracies of darkness before the ultimate victory comes?

With this in mind, let's return to the disturbing although very real possibility that many have lost their lives because they knew too much about the draconian activities taking place beneath the surface of this planet (and beyond). One contact of ours has informed us that a good friend of hers in Las Vegas, Nevada, had uncovered some very disturbing facts and testimonies concerning construction workers and others who had been involved in the installation of certain equipment within the tunnels beneath the Nevada Military Complex, etc., many of whom later died under bizarre circumstances. This informant, Stacy Borland, was later found dead - along with a brother of hers - in Las Vegas. Someone had apparently entered her place and murdered them in cold blood. We smell a rat in this case (or, should we say A SNAKE?), and in fact our contact is convinced that it was the work of an assassin, and that she was killed because she knew too much.

Since these reptilian or reptilian-controlled powers of evil thrive in the darkness, then the method needed to defeat them, to destroy them and to eventually conquer them (the saurians or the serpent races, that is) would be to shine the 'light' of truth against these lairs of evil, focus that 'light' like a laser beam, and tear apart the very 'darkness' within which these ancient powers thrive. And, possibly most important of all, by God's grace set out to ally ourselves with those societies hidden beyond or below the surface of this world, our ancient human cousins, who have fought and battled this infernal race since ancient times. As the old saying goes: "Together we stand, divided we fall..."

[Back To The Underworlds](#)

<http://www.geocities.com/Area51/Shadowlands/6583/under009.html>